



파그마의 후예

MAYA & MARU GAME FANTASY STORY

박새날 게임 판타지 장편소설



# OVERGEARED

BOOK 03

*Park Saenal*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Overgeared

(템빨)

by

Park Saenal

# Synopsis

---

Shin Youngwoo has had an unfortunate life and is now stuck carrying bricks on construction sites. He even had to do labor in the VR game, Satisfy!

However, luck would soon enter his hapless life. His character, 'Grid', would discover the Northern End Cave for a quest, and in that place, he would find 'Pagma's Rare Book' and become a legendary class player...

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the Rainbow Turtle at [Wuxiaworld](http://Wuxiaworld.com).

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](http://HassenoBlog.com)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 201

---

[You have failed to observe the target's skill.]

She tried a few more times but it was the same result. Euphemina became certain.

“A Saintess is a class that has at least a unique rating.”

“Based on what?”

Lauel made a disbelieving expression, causing Euphemina to explain.

“A Duplicator has a clear limit as an epic class. It's impossible for me to duplicate skills that have a higher rating than myself.

“In other words... You failed to duplicate Ruby's skill?”

“Yes. The only skills that I have failed to duplicate after raising my insight to a certain level belonged to Grid and Agnus... It is an experience I haven't suffered in a long time.”

“Agnus?” The 7th ranked Agnus was known to have an epic class. He was surprised by Euphemina's words. “Agnus is an epic class, so isn't he equivalent to you? So why did your Skill Observation fail?”

“He must have a growth type hidden class.”

“Like Hurent?”

“That’s right. Growth type classes are considered to have a higher rating than epic classes, so I can’t duplicate his skills.”

Agnus was someone thoroughly wrapped in a veil of mystery. He never showed up in public. Traces of him could only be found in the rankings list or from NPCs. He changed his appearance every time, so there were rumors that he was an NPC instead of a user, or a game operator, or so on.

However, Euphemina seemed to be familiar with Agnus, so this was an opportunity for Lauel.

“What exactly is Agnus’ class?”

“At first I thought he was a necromancer type, but considering the various features, it is more appropriate to call him a lich.”

“Lich? You mean an undead?”

Lich were one of the strongest undead. They transcended the concept of life and death, and were known to have infinite magic power. If Agnus was a lich, it was reasonable to assume that he was stronger than Grid.

“On the surface, he doesn’t seem to be an undead, but... It’s a bit

difficult to explain. You'll know if you meet him."

Lauel showed great interest. "Where should I go to meet him?"

"Aren't you being very active? Are you perhaps thinking about trying to get Agnus as Grid's subordinate? I would forget about it. Agnus is a very dangerous and abnormal figure. It isn't possible to have a positive outcome when you get in touch with him."

"... I will listen to you."

Agnus wasn't the important thing right now. Grid's sister had obtained a hidden class that at least had a unique rating.

'Did those siblings receive the blessing of the game gods?'

The older brother was the first legendary class, while the younger sister received a hidden class at level 1. It was clear that Grid and his sister had saved a country in a previous life.

'Anyway, this is good.'

Grid's power was grounded on the basis of being the best after Duplicator Euphemina and then Saintess Ruby joined. This would grow further if the Tzedakah Guild joined. Lauel envisioned a brilliant future, causing his mind to spin faster than before.

'Grid and his sister are fighting well, but it isn't good to drag this



out.’ A stamina system existed for users. Stamina would decrease the longer the battle lasted, so even Grid would face a crisis. ‘The golems are only concentrating on Grid. And the ancient weapons will probably explode every time they die. Then...’

Lauel shouted as he came up with a way to end this battle that lasted nearly 30 minutes.

“Grid! Drive all the golems towards the ancient weapons!”

“Eh?”

The golems were endlessly coming towards him! Grid was enjoying the battle due to Sehee’s strong support, and he saw the golems as chunks of experience. He turned his gaze towards Lauel and then frowned.

“Isn’t this too much? I have to deal with the ancient weapon at the same time. Do you want me to die?”

Grid didn’t understand Lauel’s intent. Unlike his sister, he was stupid, so it couldn’t be helped.

Kuwaaaang!

“Dragon Claws.” Lauel used an earth barrier to block the magic power heading towards Grid and shouted again. “Just do as I say! Focus on defeating the ancient weapon and run away immediately!”

In Satisfy, qi was a different concept of mana. For this reason, there was a separate class called the qigong master. The Anti-magic Shield wasn't immune to skills of a qigong master.

“Dragon's Whispers!”

[The amount of damage the target will receive has increased by 30%.]

Kukukukung!

The ancient weapon was affected by Lauel's skill and started to twitch. Grid confirmed this and reached out to Jude.

“Jude, let me borrow your sword for a bit.”

“I'll willingly do it.”

Float.

Grid put the +8 Dainsleif in his inventory and used Fly. Sehee used Hope on him once again and Huroi cast a buff skill.

“Thank you.”

He had full health. The strongest buff skill was nestled in his

body. The best. An invincible feeling. There was nothing to fear in this world. It was just...

‘The kan jajang would’ve already become soggy.’

Won’t the food become tasteless? It was quite annoying, but he still felt good. His dear sister and companions. Now that they were enjoying Satisfy and relying on each other, Grid was truly happy. He had lived a lonely life without any friends, so this experience was truly precious to him.

Ssik!

Grid smiled with satisfaction and flew towards the ancient weapon that received the debuff from Lauel. He was like an eagle flying towards his prey.

Kiyaaak!

The old golems and soul dolls ignored the others, only chasing after Grid. Grid was annoyed by them, but recalled Lauel’s words and ignored them.

Kuoooh!

The ancient weapon remained silent as Grid approached, then launched its magic power. It was evidence that the golems were intelligent.

“Che!”

Grid judged that it was too close to avoid and wore Doran’s Ring.

[You have suffered 23,900 damage.]

[Healing effects will be reduced.]

[You have resisted.]

[The options of Doran’s Ring and the Holy Light Armor have been applied to restore 35,850 health.]

‘Healing effect reduction?’

That hadn’t existed before. Grid became convinced. The ancient weapons were steadily evolving during the battle. They were optimizing themselves to kill Grid.

‘It’s great, but useless.’

The moon and stars were covered by a dark cloud of darkness. The ‘20% increase in damage in dark places’ effect was applied, making Failure more powerful.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship!”

A dazzling sword dance unfolded continuously.

“Kill!”

“Link!”

“Transcend!”

There was a storm of blue-white energy blades as the skills were connected. The power was lacking compared to Linked Kill and Transcended Link, so the ancient weapon wasn't destroyed immediately. However, it was enough to release the Anti-magic Shield.

Gruruk!

Then Grid swapped weapons. He used Dainsleif instead of Failure. Dainsleif gained additional attack power in proportion to the number of enemies, so it was just as good as Failure right now.

Chaaeng!

He used a skill straight after equipping it.

“Golden Flash!”

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

A ray of gold crossed the night sky like the sun.

Kuaaaaah!

The ancient weapon screamed as the ray penetrated through it.

Kiik! Kiiik!

The 800 golems following Grid were enraged. They watched the collapsing ancient weapon and howled like children losing their parents. In the midst of this turmoil, Euphemina yelled.

“Exploit! Thunder Storm! Light Sword! Blizzard!”

It was a feast of A-grade magic. She didn’t go through the process of chanting the spell, so the powerful magic perfectly hit the ancient weapon.

[You have destroyed an ancient weapon.]

[3,342,000 experience has been distributed.]

“Avoid it!”

Lauel shouted the moment the notification window popped up,

and Grid responded by disappearing at full speed.

Kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa!

It was a close call. Immediately after Grid escaped from the range of the explosion, a strong explosion occurred around the body of the ancient weapon. Most of the 800 golems following Grid were swept away by the explosion and turned to ashes.

“Wow... This was what you intended.” Grid was full of admiration as he saw the result and recognized Lael’s intentions. He got goosebumps. “Lael, aren’t you really smart? The best.”

Lael bowed gracefully towards Grid, who was looking at him with envy.

“You are the one who is the best. I’m just your bridesmaid.”

‘...My hands and feet are shrivelling.’

Grid was suffering from Lael’s cheesy words when someone appeared in front of them. Euphemina had figured out the number of surviving golems.

“There are 43 old golems, 11 soul dolls and 9 ancient weapons remaining. This battle, let’s finish it.”

“Good.”

Grid handed Dainsleif back to Jude and gave a command.

“The golems are only focused on me. You don’t have to protect Ruby and Sexy Schoolgirl anymore. Attack the ones after me.”

“Yes.”

Jude was better than Huroi and Lael when it came to simple combat ability. He was an idiot who couldn’t be assigned important missions, but Jude was a very dependable person on the battlefield. Once his rampage started, the surviving old golems and soul dolls were overwhelmed. They were beaten and became mere pieces of stone.

『 Jude... I’ve never heard of him, but he must be a named NPC. To obtain NPCs as knights, at a minimum, an S-grade quest needs to be cleared and affinity built up... Grid is truly amazing. 』

As the world was impressed by Jude, Grid was taking care of the remaining ancient weapons with Huroi, Lael and Euphemina. The old golems and soul dolls were no longer obstructing them, so their speed at destroying the ancient golems was faster than before.



# Chapter 202

---

“Amazing! Amazing!”

The directors and PDs of the broadcasting stations relaying the Reinhardt war were excited. Grid’s companions played an active role against the golems and audience ratings were high, so it was natural to feel excited.

‘Grid is a genuine star!’

This golem army had smashed the 700 Giant Guild members led by the 3rd ranked Chris, whose battle power was evaluated as over the Tzedakah Guild in Satisfy. Indeed, Grid was a legend. Whenever he appeared in public, he overwhelmed the audience with his power, causing the audience ratings to rise every time he appeared. He created the buzzword ‘Praise God Grid.’

“It would be nice if he summoned Noe...”

However, human greed was endless!

The station PDs were hoping for the appearance of Noe, who was just as popular as Grid. If the cute Noe emerged, the audience ratings would clearly rise because the hearts of the children and female viewers would be captured.

On the other hand, the hosts’ mouths were dry from praising Grid’s group.

『 The orator's buffs and debuffs are only applied once, but they are extremely effective. If they are used well, an orator can play a more active role than existing buffing classes. It's a class that deserves to be reevaluated. 』

『 Reevaluated? Don't you know about orators? Orators are a class that had been treated as top rankers by the nobles since the beginning. But they are difficult to find because they're a difficult class to level up. 』

『 The advantage of an orator isn't only the buffs and debuffs. A orator is basically a speech-giving class. They are politically useful. It is natural for the top rankers to be jealous of Grid for acquiring the 1st ranked orator. 』

『 Lauel is truly worthy of his fame. He fully understands the qigong master class. Rather than acting aggressively, he serves as a supporter and assists Grid. 』

『 In fact, qigong masters are more suitable to be rear damage dealers rather than supporters. But since Grid is in the party, there's enough attack power. Therefore, his role in the group is changed. Lauel's flexible mindset is great. 』

『 Above all, the best one is the user called Euphemina. She can cast all types of spells without chanting? It's obvious that she has a hidden class, and she might be stronger than Grid. Perhaps she is a legendary grade magician? 』

『 If you look at the fact that she doesn't show many S-grade magic, it's hard to imagine her as a legendary magician. It is more likely that she's a unique rated magician. Anyway, I am certain that she is better than Yura and Bondre. 』

『 I'm focused on the girl called Ruby. She is a complete beginner when looking at her clothing, but isn't she supporting her colleagues with tremendous amounts of healing? 』

『 Sometimes, there are people with unique tastes. There are many high level users who deliberately look like beginners... 』

『 Didn't the rare class Skin Creator recently appeared? The Skin Creator can freely change the appearance of items, right? Maybe the clothes she's wearing now are actually really dazzling. 』

『 Is that rough-looking wooden staff actually a unique-rated weapon? Hahaha, in any case, Grid is really great. He has the named NPC Jude, the 1st ranked orator, the 1st ranked qigong master as well as the best magicians and priest as his companions... It's clear that he has a great personality. 』

『 I agree with you 100 times over. He must be charming to attract such excellent people. Grid has to be a generous, charismatic, wise, and good man. 』

As the misunderstanding about Grid deepened, Grid's group was defeating the sixth ancient weapon. The remaining six ancient weapons were upgraded based on the information gathered from the destroyed ancient weapons.

[It is necessary to become tolerant to spiteful words.]

[Delete language comprehension feature.]

“This is pretty hard.”

It was hard for Grid to look relaxed. The ancient weapons became noticeably stronger every time one was destroyed. That’s why their combat power rose from 26,000 to 32,000. It was around the same level of the Awakened Guardian of the Forest. Grid’s party faced difficulties the moment the sixth ancient weapon was killed.

“Spiteful Tongue isn’t working.”

“The resistance to qi has increased, so my skills aren’t being applied properly.”

“The durability of the Anti-magic Shield has risen.”

“Kuk.”

Grid could feel the physical defense of the ancient weapons rising. He trembled.

“The golems grow as we fight. What type of freak made these monsters?”

They might be able to destroy some more, but it was difficult to predict how strong the remaining ancient weapon would be.

“There’s no chance of victory. We should retreat. Didn’t we do enough?”

“But if we retreat, Reinhardt will eventually collapse. The kingdom contribution that we earned will become useless.”

A skeptical mood began to form. Grid’s only method was to rely on Lael.

“Is there a solution?”

“The solution is simple. Destroy the remaining six ancient weapons simultaneously.”

“...”

It was an impossible task. Assuming that Grid alone could handle an ancient weapon, the rest of the group couldn’t take care of even one ancient weapon. It was impossible to kill six ancient weapons at the same time, even if all of the 100,000 watching users joined.

However, Earl Steim noticed the situation and directly commanded the army.

“The only solution is to destroy those large golems at the same time. Winston’s army! Everyone join forces to help my son-in-law defend this kingdom!”

“Ohhh!”

Earl Steim raised the morale of the army by appealing to the fact that his son-in-law was a legendary warrior! He was a seasoned leader and reorganized the army with the strongest knights of each region at the forefront, advancing them towards the six ancient weapons. His fighting spirit caught the aggro of the ancient weapons.

Jeeeok!

The ancient weapons concentrated their magic power rays at Earl Steim.

“Father-in-law!”

Grid had a quest called ‘Save Earl Steim.’ The damage caused by the quest failure was a problem, but he also didn’t want to see Irene sad.

“Damn bastards!”

He tried to fly at full speed to protect Earl Steim, but it was useless. The magic power rays far exceeded Grid’s speed.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

The six rays of magic energy struck Earl Steim and caused a powerful explosion. The soldiers near him flew away and became rags. Earl Steim at the center of the explosion must be reduced to ashes.

“Father-in-law...!”

Grid was shaken. She had the most beautiful smile, but he was pained at the thought of his Irene crying for a while.

Then a familiar woman’s voice was heard. “I’m sorry I’m late.”

“...?”

Grid closed his eyes because he was afraid to confirm the death of Earl Steim. He slowly opened his eyes. Then he saw it.

“You struggled to fight without us.”

The Tzedakah Guild. Armed with epic, unique and legendary items that had G engraved on them, Vantner and Toban protected Earl Steim while Jishuka and the others surrounded them.

“Everyone...!”

Jishuka spoke to the thrilled Grid. “Please give us a command, Captain.”

It was the moment when the Tzedakah Guild expressed their intention to go under Grid.

Lauel shouted, “First of all, establish the guild!”

A minimum of 15 people were required to establish a guild. The golem army invasion had another quest for guilds, so this was a perfect opportunity to raise the guild experience. Grid grasped Lauel’s intention and acted quickly.

“Establish Guild.”

[To establish a guild, you need to get approval from the association.]

[You can set up the guild without an approval procedure because you are a high-ranking noble.]

[Please decide the name of the guild.]

“The guild name...”

Lauel prompted Grid.



“The guild name is a very important symbol for the guild. It should be a meaningful and cool name. Personally, I recommend Darkfire Masters, Blood Ice Makers, The Blessed of the Gods, Silver Dragons, etc.”

“ ... ”

Grid had called himself overgeared since the time of the Neberius raid. It was a wordplay based on the templar knights. (TL: In Korean, not English.)

Grid really liked the word. The word was moved around his mouth. The guild name...

“Overgeared Knights is more extravagant than necessary... Let’s just stick to the simple Overgeared.”

“W-What?” Lael was shocked. His face turned white and anger filled his eyes. “Overgeared, are you thinking properly? It’s completely childish! Elementary school students will laugh at the name! Please be joking!”

“Blood Ice Makers? I think Overgeared is a lot better than that.”

“What about Blood Ice Makers? It’s cool! On the contrary, what is Overgeared? This guild name will stick with us for the rest of all lives, so it needs to be better!”

Lauel was extremely opposed, but the reaction of the Tzedakah Guild members were unexpectedly positive.

“Overgeared... It clearly expresses the characteristics of the guild.”

“The names of the other guilds are too extravagant and childish. This is simple and clear.”

“Overgeared people belong to the Overgeared Guild! Kukuk, it’s simple and entertaining!”

“T-These crazy people...!”

Lauel felt like he was in a nightmare. He sent a look of help towards Huroi and Euphemina, but it was useless. Huroi only followed Grid’s will and Euphemina didn’t care about the name of the guild.

In the end.

[‘Grid’ and 27 companions have established the Overgeared Guild.]

Guild Name: Overgeared

Level: 1 (0/100,000)

Reputation: 0

Master: Grid

Capacity: 28/30

Affiliation: The Eternal Kingdom

Alliances: North of the Eternal Kingdom.

Hostile Relationships: None

Inclination: An unconditionally favorable relationship with Winston.

Territory: None

“T-This is ridiculous... The guild name is Overgeared...? I am an overgeared!”

Lauel seemed like he received a really big shock. In fact, the name ‘Overgeared’ was favored by the public, so Lauel was the only one who didn’t like it. A new quest window appeared in front of Grid.

[Defense War II]

Difficulty Level: SS

The golem army was much more powerful than anyone expected.

The kingdom's strongest guilds and armies couldn't prevent the golems from advancing.

The most powerful golems called the ancient weapons have plunged the Eternal Kingdom into a crisis.

Defend the Eternal Kingdom by defeating them.

Only you are the last hope of the Eternal Kingdom. The anxious King Wiesbaden can only rely on you.

Quest Clear Conditions: Defeat the ancient weapons (0/6)

Quest Clear Rewards: One big city. 50,000 contribution to the kingdom. The guild level will rise by 2. Five million gold will be obtained.

Quest Failure: The likely collapse of the Eternal Kingdom.

It was clearly an opportunity. Grid ordered everyone, including the frustrated Lauel.

“Defeat the six ancient weapons at the same time. Huroi! Toban! Buffs!”

It was the first time that the legendary Overgeared group left their footsteps in history.

# Chapter 203

---

“Overgeared! Let’s show the world the emergence of the Overgeared Guild and elevate our lord!”

[Your morale has increased.]

[Your attack power and magic attack power will significantly rise for the next attack.]

[The next attack will be a critical hit!]

The strongest buff skill of the 1st ranked orator, Morale Boost was applied to all guild members. The Tzedakah Guild members murmured about the overwhelming effect.

“Wow, the effect is really great.”

“It’s a buff that makes a deadly strike possible...”

Jishuka spoke to rile up Toban. “Shouldn’t the 1st ranked paladin prove that he isn’t lacking in comparison?”

Compared to the other guild members, his level was relatively low, but Toban was now level 280. He was at least 10 levels higher than Grid. He used a buff skill that could be called the ultimate skill of the second advancement paladin.

“God Judar’s Blessing!”

[All stats will increase by 20% for 5 minutes.]

[Your health and defense will increase by 30% for 10 minutes.]

“...!”

Lauel finally recovered from his shock of Grid calling the guild Overgeared.

‘This is the best skill of the first ranked Judar paladin that I’ve only heard about!’

It was a great buff that was completely different from Huroi’s buff. All members of the Tzedakah Guild were truly monsters. Lauel was feeling admiration while Jishuka loaded a Super-special Jaffa Arrow.

“Then shall we begin?”

Grid made the unique rated ‘Salamander’s Horn’ for her, and it could be called the most powerful bow currently in existence. The disadvantage was its slow firing speed, but the attack power was ruthlessly high. It also increased the attack power of the fire attribute, so the compatibility with Jishuka was very good.

“Firecrackers.”

The woman called an expert archer, her bow skills had reached the realm of a god. It was the moment when the 1st ranked archer entered the battle.

Syuok! Syu syu syu syu syuk!

The only drawback of the Salamander's Horn was its slow speed, and this was overcome with her rapid-fire speed skills, as she shot seven arrows with barely any time lapses between them. The arrows were aimed at the ancient weapon 2,300m ahead of her.

Pepepepeong!

It was amazing. The arrows flying alone exploded. Then like a firecracker, flames appeared at the end and added acceleration.

Kuoooh!

The ancient weapon felt danger. In order to counter the arrows, it opened its mouth and tried to launch the magic energy. Instead white magic power started to gather around the mouth. But Jishuka's arrows didn't give it time to charge its magic power. It struck the ancient weapon and caused another explosion.

Kurururung.

The massive body of the ancient weapon made a strange sound.



Then a notification window appeared in front of Jishuka.

[The target's mana core has been shocked.]

[The target's magic power flow has been blocked.]

[The target can't use magic for three seconds.]

The effect of Firecracker worked properly. The Anti-magic Shield of the ancient weapon was temporarily released. The first ranked mixed magician Laella and the second ranked wind magician Zednos acted.

“Demon King's Tail Fire.”

“Tyrant's Hammer!”

Jishuka used her strongest skill.

“Phoenix Arrow!”

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

Everything in a straight line was swallowed up by the flames. The ancient weapon that Jishuka target was hit by black flames, a giant hammer and a mighty phoenix. Its eyes turned red as it looked around. It was asking its fellow golems for help.

But there was no one who could help it. The other five ancient weapons were in the same situation as him. All the ancient weapons were being beaten by the Overgeared members who had divided into several groups.

In particular, the ancient weapon being attacked by Regas was suffering the most.

Pepeng!

[The 5th combo has been achieved!]

[The effect of the 'Lightning Duke's Knuckles' has been activated, causing additional physical damage to the target.]

Pepepeng!

[The 6th combo has been achieved!]

[The effect of the 'Lightning Duke's Knuckles' has been activated, causing additional lightning damage to the target.]

Kwang kwang kwang!

[The 8th combo has been achieved!]

[The effect of the ‘Lightning Duke’s Knuckles’ has been activated, causing additional physical and lightning damage to the target.]

Jjejejeok! Kwang!

[The 10th combo has been achieved!]

[The effect of the ‘Lightning Duke’s Knuckles’ has been activated, causing Thunder Chariot to be triggered.]

Kurururung!

Was this person descended from the realm of the gods? A thunderous chariot fell from the sky and forced the ancient weapon on its knees. Then an eagle flew over its head and suddenly transformed into a human.

Beasts of Prey Toon. He wore silver wristblades with the G engraved on them and he shouted like a lion.

[Weaken all nearby enemies.]

“Kukuk! Kuhahat! Now I will slice you up!”

Toon transformed into a werewolf and his greatly improved wristblades flashed. The ancient weapon had its whole body electrocuted so it couldn’t cope and suffered great damage. On the other hand, the ancient weapon in front of the south wall

stagged under the combined attacks of Pon and Vantner.

“Hap!”

Jjejeong! Jjeejeeong!

“Ura! Ura! Urahh~!

Kwa kwang! Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

Kuoooooh!

The ancient weapon was unable to endure anymore and swung its arms. The agile spearman Pon moved away, while Guardian Knight Vantner defended himself with his shield.

“Uh...”

It was a terrible damage. Vantner failed to completely absorb the damage and stiffened from the aftermath. The ancient weapon was about to fire its magic power at him. Vantner realized this and screamed.

“Hey! Help me, Pon!”

“Are you stiffened right now? Just hold it.”

Instead of helping Vantner, Pon jumped forward using Vantner's shoulder. Then he aimed a skill towards the ancient weapon.

“Mach Spear!”

Peeeeeeong!

It was an unbeatable attack. The sonic spear passed through the thick head of the ancient weapon.

“Okay!”

Half of the head was broken and the ancient weapon staggered. Pon landed on the ground and cheered. Vantner glared at him angrily, “You jerk...! How dare you use a companion as a sacrifice? Eh? Did you feel good?”

Vantner had turned charcoal after being hit by the magic ray. He was truly angry, but Pon just shrugged.

“It's called teamwork.”

“Shit! What is this teamwork?”

Vantner's face turned red. He seemed like a boiled octopus, causing Pon to laugh. In the end, Vantner couldn't bear it and swung his axe at Pon.

“Today I will kill you!”

“Try it if you can, bald bastard.”

“...”

The ancient weapon thought it was ridiculous. Fighting each other in front of it? This was an opportunity. It swung its arms at the fighting Pon and Vantner. But Pon once again easily avoided the attack, while Vantner defended with his shield.

The same pattern was repeated. The ancient weapon had only one choice. It ignored the fast Pon and tried to launch a magic ray towards the rigid Vantner. Vantner once again contemplated.

“Hey Pon! This time you should really help me! I will die this time! Yes?”

“Use your Invincible skill~”

Vantner had been putting points in stamina since the Malacus raid. Now his survival ability was as excellent as a cockroach's. Pon knew this better than anyone else, so he once again one-sidedly used Vantner as a tanker.

“True Illusion!”

Kwaaaaah!

The ancient weapon fired magic power at Vantner, and at the same time, it was stabbed dozens of times. Pon made a satisfied noise as he saw it.

“My skills are indeed perfect.”

An axe flew at him.

“Those two are still acting like that.”

The city. Faker smiled as he watched Pon and Vantner in the distance. Faker told them, “Pay attention to the opponent in front of you. There was no room for cockiness.”

The 1st ranked assassin didn't participate in the National Competition. When the top rankers spent time at the National Competition, he focused solely on leveling up. As a result, he was now level 293 and 17th on the unified ranking.

He showed the result of his training.

Papat! Pa pa pa pat!

He created 20 clones and climbed the ancient weapons from all sides. The ancient weapon was in the middle of the city, so it was covered with the blood of many people. The humans were so weak that the golem disregarded them.

However.

“...!”

The ancient weapon was astonished. This was because the 20 daggers stabbed in its body caused it great damage. Holes were made in its solid body.

Kwaaaaah!

These humans were unlike anyone the ancient weapon had encountered before, so it swung its arms like windmills to somehow shake them off. Faker didn't try to defend himself. Instead, he just moved forward. He moved in an incredibly agile manner and avoided the attack of the ancient weapon, rushing at its neck.

Kyak!

The confused ancient weapon opened its mouth to launch magic power.

“Thank you.”

Faker threw five daggers into the mouth of the ancient weapon. The daggers exploded.



Pepepepeok!

Then another ancient weapon flopped to the ground. But its commitment was great. In the midst of its collapse, it swung its arm and attacked Faker. Faker was unable to freely move during the descent and was in a crisis. An assassin's health and defense was extremely low, so he could die from this attack.

‘It is failure at a critical moment.’

The moment that Faker frowned, a lightning bolt struck from the sky. The lightning bolt was powerful enough to completely shift the orbit of the gigantic arm heading towards Faker. Faker shifted his gaze towards the person who prevented his death. Then he saw a beautiful blonde girl.

Faker cried out, “That girl...!”

“Euphemina...!”

Euphemina had completely shattered Faker's group in the past. Due to that, she climbed onto the Tzedakah Guild's kill list. However, that was in the past. The Tzedakah Guild didn't exist anymore. In the future, she would be a colleague.

Faker forgot about the past and thanked her.

“I owe you a debt.”

Euphemina smiled awkwardly.

Among all the guild members, Ibellin wasn't shining as brightly.

“Lauel, can you bind the ancient weapon with Dragon's Wings?”

“I can only bind it for one second.”

“That will be enough.”

Lauel was known as the strongest among the 10 Rookies and Ibelline was the second strongest. Once they joined forces, they showed amazing results.

“Wind Dragon's Wings!”

[The target's movements have been bound.]

“Laceration!”

[Laceration]

The target's body will be brutally torn open by Thorn. The target will receive fixed damage equal to 60% of their current health.

Skill Mana Cost: 500

Skill Usage Condition: Target must be in a bound state.

Chwachachachak!

The Thorn of Deep Grievance ripped through the ancient weapon with no mercy. The ancient weapon was severely damaged by a single strike and fell into a stunned state.

“ ... ”

It was an incredible sight. The powerful ancient weapon lost 60% of its health in one shot? The attack power that Ibellin showed was within Grid's level, so Lael was incredible confused. He was alarmed because this guy showed better skills than he thought. But he pretended to be unconcerned.

“I guess even slugs have a talent for rolling around on the ground.”

Ibellin shouted angrily, “Who are you calling a slug? Dammit! I will soon be able to surpass you!”

Lael snorted. “This is just the power of items.”

Lael was also an overgeared person. On the other hand, Grid was confronting an ancient weapon in front of the inner wall.

“Have strength!”

King Wiesbaden desperately encouraged Grid from the walls. After a while, a satisfied smile appeared on Grid’s face.

“Transcended Link. Linked Kill.”

Subtle emotions crossed the faces of King Wiesbaden and the nobles. The 100,000 users in Reinhardt and the millions of viewers watched as two of the best skills were used in succession.

Flash!

A white light got rid of the darkness. Earl Steim watched the artificial white sky and shouted excitedly, “My son-in-law is a legend!”

# Chapter 204

---

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

20 blue-white energy blades flooded towards the ancient weapons.

『 It has come! The strongest skill! 』

The broadcast host shouted in a loud voice. The viewers' hands became sweaty. Reinhardt's 100,000 users was thrilled.

Grid felt joy.

[The fusion skill 'Transcended Link' has increased a level.]

[Transcended Link Lv. 2]

You will temporarily be in a transcended linked state.

A total of 20 strikes will be launched, dealing 180% attack power with each hit.

Every time a target is hit, they will be stiff for 0.1 seconds.

\* This skill doesn't share a cooldown with Transcend and Link.

Skill Mana Cost: 1,600

Skill Cooldown Time: 15 minutes.

There was an exhilarating feeling the moment the skill level rose. He immediately felt stronger. The storm leapt from Grid towards the stiffened ancient weapon. Then there was one rotation of Kill.

Jeeeong!

[Critical!]

[Failure's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[The Holy Light Gloves's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[You have dealt 12,140,700 damage to the target.]

Using repulsive force, there was another rotation and a second blow.

Jjejeong!

[The Holy Light Gloves's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[You have dealt 2,612,000 damage to the target.]

The third blow.

Jjejejeok!

[Critical!]

[You have dealt 1,205,800 damage to the target.]

The fourth blow.

Jjeejeeong!

[You have dealt 500,300 damage to the target.]

The fifth blow.

Jjeejeeong!

[Failure's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[The Holy Light Gloves's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[You have dealt 5,579,000 damage to the target.]

Grid's basic stats were high and Toban's buff also played a huge role. The stats that had risen dramatically, the strongest skill and the absolute power of his weapon, this trinity proved to be extremely powerful. Grid felt extreme pleasure at dealing more than 10 million damage in one blow.

Tak.

Grid landed on the ground the moment that Transcended Link was finished.

Kukukukukung...

The ancient weapon became a complete rag. Shouts echoed from Reinhardt.

“Waaahhhhhhhh!”

“Grid! Grid! Grid!”

Hundreds of thousands of NPCs chanted Grid's name. If it wasn't for Grid, the king and royal family would've died and perhaps their kingdom would've been lost. For them, Grid was the hero of their kingdom.



King Wiesbaden was thrilled to tears. “Thanks to the great hero, the 400 year history of the kingdom has been preserved...!”

The nobles were convinced as they saw it.

‘Earl Steim will surely gain the title of duke.’

‘His son-in-law will at least be an earl...’

The key person of the kingdom was now destined to become Earl Steim. The politically complicated nobles felt a grudge towards Grid.

『 Truly God Grid! He’s on a different dimension! 』

The broadcasting anchors were very excited.

『 Today, we have learned one fact! Grid is the strongest! There is no doubt about it! This talent in the National Competition wasn’t just a bubble! 』

『 In fact, it isn’t just Grid’s power. Grid absorbed the power of the Tzedakah Guild while everyone was watching. Today is an important day where the power dynamics of Satisfy will rapidly change. 』

『 From Bairan Village to the present day... Grid is really becoming a legend. 』

『 He will be the first user to become an earl. How much power will he have as an earl? I'm already curious and excited. 』

『 Will it stop at just getting the title of an earl? In my opinion, it's different... 』

All six ancient weapons were humiliated. Soon, the golem invasion would end. Everyone believed it.

Lauel spoke, "Grid, give us a signal so that we can finish the ancient weapon at the same time."

The ancient weapons had to be killed simultaneously. It would be seriously troublesome if the survivors evolved in real time. Grid nodded and shouted, "I will count to three. One! Two!"

"..."

The guild members concentrated their power. They were prepared to kill the ancient weapons the moment Grid countered to three.

"Three!"

Finally, the moment that Grid counted to three! Each guild team made their final strikes against the ancient weapons. Pon and Vantner were the problem.

“I will finish it!”

“No, me!”

The two people’s argument eventually caused an accident. The two people’s silly pride meant they struggled over who would deal the final blow, and eventually couldn’t finish off the ancient weapon.

[High fire and lightning resistance are necessary.]

[Minerals that have high conductivity must be excluded from the body.]

[The body will become smaller by abandoning the massive minerals. It will restore the lost agility.]

[The firing rate of magic power should be increased.]

[Instead of lowering the power of the mana, rebuild the magic circles so that it is dispersed better.]

[Tolerance to edged tools should be increased.]

[Tolerance to explosions should be increased.]

[It is determined that flying ability should be acquired.]

Clink! Clink clink.

The ancient weapon was only partially destroyed by Mach Spear. It started rebuilding its body based on the information left behind by the deaths of the other five ancient weapons. It was like a cube. The 8m tall body was repeatedly folded and stretched. Then light flashed and it had a new appearance.

Grrr.

The transformed ancient weapon looked like a soul doll. It had a height of 2m. The body resembled that of a human. At first glance, it seemed weaker, but that was only the outer appearance. The presence felt from it was unusual.

“Are you crazy?”

“No, are your brains working? What are you doing?”

The guild members scolded Pon and Vantner. The situation became like this because of their futile pride, so the atmosphere cooled. Pon and Vantner thought they had to make up for their mistakes.

“We will handle this.”

“I will clean up my shit!”

The two people cooperated for the first time in ages. They held their weapons in a serious manner and rushed to the evolved ancient weapon. But it was useless.

“Eh?”

“Why has its defense increased so much when its size is smaller?”

Pon and Vantner’s spear and axe didn’t do much damage to the evolved ancient weapon. The ancient weapon seemed to laugh at the two people and raised a finger.

“...?”

What did this mean? The two people were dumbfounded by the actions of the ancient weapon. Then two rays of magic power were fired at their hearts.

[You have suffered 18,010 damage.]

[Healing effects will be reduced.]

“Cough!”

Vantner lost 30% of his health despite his legendary rated armor.

Then what about Pon, who was a damage dealer?

[You have suffered serious damage!]

[You can't regain your mental state.]

[Healing effects will be reduced.]

Pon lost 60% of his health at once and became stunned. The evolved ancient weapon was approaching him.

“What...?”

Pon turned pale. The ancient weapon head-butted him.

“Hope!”

Sehee urgently used her healing skill, but the healing effect was reduced due to the debuff. He was on the verge of dying. The guild members came out to save him. Toban stood in front of him and used a defense skill, while Jishuka, Laella and Zednos attacked from the rear. The damage dealers, led by Regas and Faker, immediately cast their ultimate skills.

But.

Peeeeeeong!

The evolved ancient weapon exerted overwhelming power. The Anti-magic Shield it unfolded defeated all magic while avoiding Jishuka's arrows at the same time. Then it dealt great damage to Regas and Faker. Finally, the magic power rays were fired everywhere and casualties followed.

“...It's the end.”

Vantner thought it was over. He felt guilty when watching his colleagues be hurt because of him. Someone placed a hand on his shoulder. It was a large, powerful and trustworthy hand. It was full of calluses, like the hand of a warrior or a blacksmith. It was Grid's hand.

“Sorry...!” Vantner couldn't lift his head. He didn't blame Grid for resenting him. But Grid was smiling.

“Didn't I tell you? I will be your strength.”

The day he asked the Tzedakah Guild to come under him. Grid had asked them to be his strength. He also vowed to be their strength. Grid was prepared to defend that promise now.

‘He has changed again.’

Vantner and the guild members were very shocked. It was surprising that Grid, who normally hated any losses, had matured even further. As everyone watched, Grid summoned the worst pet.

“Nyang!”

It was the best demonic beast of hell. He appeared with shining eyes.

“Will you give me something delicious today? Nyang!”

“Perhaps. It might be the most delicious prey you’ve ever eaten.”

The reason that Grid hadn’t summoned Noe during the battle was because of jealousy.

Noe had far more fans than him. So if Noe played an important role in public, Grid was afraid that his popularity would be completely overshadowed. Therefore, Grid was determined to end this battle with his own strength. But he was unable to measure the combat strength of the evolved ancient weapon. Grid predicted it was at the same level as Hell Gao who had been weakened twice.

Grid had just used Transcended Link and Linked Kill, so it wasn’t an enemy he could face right now. He was forced to depend on Noe.

“The fan cafe numbers will go up again...”

Grid swallowed his regret.



“Swallow it.”

“Nyaang!”

Noe flew away immediately. Then he opened his mouth and swallowed the evolved ancient weapon.

[The memphis has taken part of the target’s soul.]

[There will be a 50% decline in the target’s main stats for 3 seconds.]

[The stats taken from the target will be transferred to the master.]

[Stamina has increased by 2,133.]

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship! Kill!”

It was lucky. A critical, as well as the option effects of Failure and the Holy Light Gloves were applied. The ancient weapon’s health and defense was greatly reduced, so it was forced to suffer great damage. The guild members unleashed their offensive towards it.

In particular, Euphemina used the S-grade magic that she saved.

Kwaaaaah!

The ancient weapon resisted as much as it could. But the minimum level of the Overgeared Guild members was 270. The one with the lowest level was Grid. The evolved ancient weapon continued to be swallowed by Noe and couldn't endure their onslaught for long.

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

Sehee's level kept rising continuously while using the wide-area heal. It was great for Grid. Then the ancient weapon finally died. As it died, it dropped an item called 'Braham's Message.'

'Braham...! Is he the cause of this?'

Grid wanted to read the message right away. But he had to put it off for a while. King Wiesbaden himself was running over.

"Thank you! Thank you!"

The king grabbed Grid's hands and shouted. He reigned as the absolute person since his birth, so it was amazing to see him bow his head.

Now only the rewards were left. Grid headed to the palace with the Overgeared Guild. The reporters tried to follow to relay the

situation, but they were stopped by the guards.

Lauel gave Grid advice. “Grid, you should ask the king to allow them to come. We need to inform the world about how much you and the Overgeared Guild has grown from today’s achievement. This is an opportunity to make everyone look up to us.”

Lauel was Grid’s adviser. Grid had never once suffered damage from his words. Thus, he accepted Lauel’s advice.

After that.

King’s Wiesbaden gratitude to Grid’s group was relayed to the world in real time. Grid’s reputation skyrocketed.

It was the first time that Director Yoon Sangmin of the S.A. Group reacted positively to him.

“Yes, this is like a legendary class.”

The activities of a unique existence that caused a positive influence. He was delighted that many users would want to be Grid and would play Satisfy even harder.

# Chapter 205

---

In this ‘Golem Army Invasion’ episode, the army of the Eternal Kingdom was helpless.

Not only did 1,000 golems advance to the capital, but the hundreds of thousands of troops couldn’t eradicate them.

On the Internet, the netizens laughed at the fact that the Eternal Kingdom couldn’t do anything. They ridiculed King Wiesbaden and the nobles, stating that they were raising dogs instead of recruiting soldiers.

‘They don’t know.’

The Eternal Kingdom wasn’t weak. Rather, they were strong. The evidence was that the Eternal Kingdom had maintained its position of neutrality for many years.

‘But this time, their opponents were too bad.’

The golem army was unreasonably strong. In fact, the Giant Guild and 100,000 users weren’t able to compete with the golems.

‘Even I was barely able to destroy a soul doll, but the people of Grid’s group are monsters...’

Huroi, Lauel, Euphemina and Grid. Grid already had powerful

users and he absorbed the Tzedakah Guild while the world was watching. It was obvious that Grid's power would become stronger than the Giant Guild or Snake Guild in the future.

‘Overgeared... Should I apply? My life will be set if I could join.’

Reinhardt was busy with recovery efforts.

“Can you help me?”

“I need a hand.”

The soldiers and residents gave quests to join the restoration work. However, the 304th ranked Happy ignored them and headed towards the royal palace.

‘There are more people than I thought.’

Thousands of users were gathered in a huge training ground. They were people who made great achievements in the ‘Fight the Golems’ quest. It was a small number considering that 100,000 users gathered in Reinhardt.

The administrators gave them their rewards in turn.

“You are the 16 member squad that destroyed an old golem? It was hard. I want to thank you on behalf of the kingdom. You will be awarded with 300 gold and 100 kingdom contribution.”

300 gold was worth 360,000 won. The users were quite satisfied. Sometimes, they looked with envy as a party that killed more than two old golems appeared.

“Ohh! Sir Happy!” Once Happy’s turn came, the administrator was very enthusiastic. “Many soldiers and people witnessed you becoming active on the battlefield. You took on an old golem and soul doll alone? You will be awarded with 1,900 gold and 800 kingdom contribution. I am grateful for your defense of the kingdom.”

The users made a fuss.

“Wow, amazing. He defeated an old golem and soul doll alone?”

“1,900 gold... I’m envious...”

“But isn’t Happy a ranker?”

“That’s right. He’s in the 300s or 400s?”

“Kyah~ as expected from a ranker.”

Happy snorted at the users’ envious gazes.

‘They shouldn’t be envious of me.’

Happy's gaze turned towards the golden group in the distance. At this moment, the king was paying direct attention to Grid. How much would Grid's group be rewarded? Happy was restless. He wanted to log out and watch the awards ceremony on TV.

\*\*\*

‘The legendary great magician...’

Grid hadn't thought that Braham was such a great person. A person who had already died for hundreds of years had moved golems that caused a kingdom to fall into crisis. Braham's ability was mind-boggling. But why did he invade the Eternal Kingdom?

‘Whatever the reason, I don't like it.’

Due to that damn crazy magician, Sehee and his father-in-law almost died. Grid wanted to check what was contained in Braham's Message.

‘However, I have to receive this first.’

The brilliant golden awards ceremony.

“Glory to Viscount Grid!”

Cheek!

The soldiers saluted as soon as Grid's party entered. It was unbelievable that they had just suffered from an invasion and lost family and friends. Grid was impressed by how strong their minds were.

‘I remember my days as a soldier.’

Grid's military service wasn't good, but now he glorified those memories. Grid was proud of the soldiers who did their duty. At this moment, he felt a sense of gratitude to the Korean soldiers who were suffering to defend the country. It was sad that the world still wasn't united.

‘Aren't North Korean women pretty as well? I wish we could be unified.’

Thump, thump.

Grid walked straight through with an upright posture. He had great physical strength and concentration due to his stats, so dignity radiated from him. The king seated on the throne and the nobles gulped.

‘Indeed, this is the appearance of a legendary warrior. There are no chinks.’

‘He has a deep look in his eyes. It's like the ocean.’



‘I am envious of that firm waist and broad shoulders... I would be able to love more women if I had that body in my youth...’

When armed with the Holy Light Crown, Grid’s dignity exceeded 850 points. This was a figure that surpassed those of the major nobles of one kingdom, so it had a tremendous effect. The nobles forgot that Grid was a commoner and gazed at him with envy.

“Thank you, once again.”

Wiesbaden expressed his gratitude again from his throne. He couldn’t imagine that the cause of this incident was Grid, so he just considered Grid as his savior. But the important thing was that Grid also didn’t know he was the culprit.

Grid showed a wait-and-see attitude.

“If it wasn’t for you, this kingdom might’ve disappeared from history.”

Grid currently had the upper hand. He judged that there was no need for him to show humility.

“I hope that Your Majesty will show me your sincerity.”

It was a rude comment to the king of a nation. If Grid was a normal person, the king would’ve been very unhappy and the nobles would’ve resented him. However, Grid had high dignity and was the hero of the kingdom. No one questioned Grid’s words. To

them, Grid just looked like a charming figure. Grid would be praised as manly even if he took off his pants.

“Earl Aden.”

The king called the person in charge of finances. Then an old nobleman came forward and said, “First of all, I will reward the achievements of Baroness Jishuka and the other 21 people who joined the battlefield later.”

The Tzedakah Guild stepped forward as they were called.

Earl Aden conveyed King Wiesbaden’s will.

“Baroness Jishuka and 21 others have saved Earl Steim and defended their kingdom, helping Viscount Grid defeat six of the ancient weapons. You will be awarded 20,000 gold and 10,000 kingdom contribution. In addition, they will be given the title of Viscount for their loyalty to their kingdom.”

“We are much obliged.”

The compensation was as they expected. The Tzedakah Guild members were completely satisfied. The media were excited.

『 The experts speculate that there should be 20 users who became nobles in Satisfy. Among them, the only viscounts are Grid, Zibal and Chris. 』

『 But now, 22 more viscounts are born. In addition, all 22 people are Grid's subordinates. They can appoint three knights each, so the result is that Grid has around 70 knights. This is a truly tremendous power. 』

The earl continued.

“Huroi, Lauel, Euphemina, Ruby and Sexy Schoolgirl. You joined forces with Grid to defeat 733 old golems, 187 soul dolls and 12 ancient weapons. If you hadn't acted, this country would be in a great crisis. You will be honored as a hero of the kingdom, receive 442,900 gold and 184,800 kingdom contribution, as well as the title of Earl.”

Numerous notification windows popped up in front of the five people.

[The title 'Kingdom's Hero' has been obtained.]

[The title 'First Earl' has been obtained.]

[You have become an earl of the Eternal Kingdom.]

[In accordance with the laws of the Eternal Kingdom, an earl can have 10,000 soldiers and five knights, and can have up to three spouses. You will receive a monthly salary of 3,000 gold.]

[Kingdom's Hero]

A hero who saved the Eternal Kingdom from a crisis.

\* All stats +120.

\* The highest reputation throughout the Eternal Kingdom.

[First Earl]

A user has become an earl for the first time.

\* Dignity +200

\* Charm +500.

\* If you have more than 500 charm, people of both sexes will show great favor towards you.

『 Earl...? 』

The reporters of each broadcasting station were astonished.

『 It's amazing. Didn't the kingdom originally have a limit on the number of senior nobles? To appoint five earls in one day... 』

『 It means they are big enough to make the Eternal Kingdom endure the financial bleeding. 』

『 If they are earls, then... Grid should become at least a marquis. 』

『 Grid is truly amazing. He's writing a new legend every time. 』

『 ... Sexy Schoolgirl didn't do anything during the battle, but she was still counted? 』

『 ... 』

Five earls were born, and all of them were Grid's subordinates. The world became frenzied at the breaking news. Huroi, Lauel and Euphemina were pleased at gaining more rewards than expected.

But Sehee and Yerim didn't care.

“Is an earl good?”

“Perhaps?”

“Is 442,900 gold a lot?”

“Well, I don't know.”

“ ... ”

Lauel sighed as he looked at the two girls. People who were born with gold spoons couldn't perceive how good they had it.

‘I wish I had a brother or sister like Grid too...’

As Lauel was feeling jealousy, Grid was receiving his rewards.

“Viscount Grid, you led your knights and colleagues to defeat 733 old golems, 187 soul dolls and 12 ancient weapons. Your achievements can't be denied. You will be praised as the country's hero...”

“The next part will be a burden for Earl Aden.”

King Wiesbaden got up from the throne. Then he congratulated Grid instead of Earl Aden.

“Viscount Grid will be given 500,000 gold, an infinite amount of kingdom contribution and the large city Reidan. In addition, you will be awarded the title of duke and your statue will be set up in the Hall of Fame, keeping you alive to the next generation.”

[The title ‘Kingdom's Hero’ has been obtained.]

[The title ‘First Duke’ has been obtained.]

[You have become a duke of the Eternal Kingdom.]

[Depending on the historical background of the continent, a duke has no limit on their expansion of power. The royal family won't be able to openly bind you.]

[Please note that there will be repercussions if you expand your power to the extent that it infringes on the royal family's authority.]

[If a statue is made in the Hall of Fame, special effects will occur.]

[First Duke]

A user has become a duke for the first time.

\* Dignity +600

\* Charm +800.

[As a prominent figure, your reputation across the continent has risen by 10,000.]

“I want you to pledge eternal loyalty to the royal family.”

“I, Grid...”

Grid was about to pledge to Wiesbaden when Lauel urgently sent him a whisper.

–Only swear allegiance to King Wiesbaden, not the royal family.

Grid didn't understand. But he did as Lauel said.

“I, Grid, swear eternal loyalty to Your Majesty.”

“ ... ”

Some nobles frowned. In particular, the princes' faces filled with anger. However, King Wiesbaden was over 70 years old and in a state of considerable decline. He didn't find any issue with Grid's remark and smiled.

On this day.

New articles praising Grid were spread all over the Internet. The number of fan cafes for Grid increased exponentially. But since the number of Noe's fan clubs increased more, Grid was struck with a sense of defeat.



# Chapter 206

---

After Grid became a duke.

“Thank you. Thanks to you, the kingdom was protected and my position rose. It was the luck of a lifetime that I could get you as a son-in-law.”

Earl Steim became a marquis. It was appreciated that he dispatched more troops than anyone else and that Grid was his son-in-law. A marquis had a son-in-law that was a duke. Earl Steim’s faction now became the largest in the kingdom. All of Marquis Steim’s authority would be inherited by Irene, so this was a good thing for Grid.

“I will ask you to continue looking after my daughter, Duke Grid.”

“I understand, Marquis Steim.”

“But when will you give me a granddaughter? Duke Grid.”

“We are working on it, Marquis Steim.”

“I should prepare some healthy food for you! Hahahat!”

“It is only once a month...”

“Huh? Once a month?”

“I’m just talking to myself. Ignore it. Hahaha!”

The two people were so excited that they didn’t notice the media focusing on them.

『 Earl Steim... No, doesn’t the relationship between Marquis Steim and Grid seem really good? 』

『 That’s right. Based on the contents of the conversation, it seems like a father and son-in-law relationship. 』

『 Did Marquis Steim have a daughter? 』

『 He has only one. The lady of Winston, Irene 』

『 Heok...! That beauty? 』

『 She is a beauty among beauties. She is a person who always occupies the top ranks in NPC popularity polls. A big uproar occurred when it was announced that she was married. To think that her marriage partner is a user instead of an NPC, and that he was Grid... 』

『 Hah! 』

The broadcasters sighed. They were envious of Grid to the point that their stomachs hurt. Among the viewers, the men were throwing their remote controls and there was also a fuss on the Internet.

-He married Irene, but still has Yura and Jishuka?

-A married couple can sleep together once a month...

-Hasn't the marriage lasted eight months in Satisfy time? So at least eight times...

-Damn! My Irene was defiled!

-Most important, Irene is the sole successor of Marquis Steim. If Marquis Steim dies, Grid will inherit.

-Crazy ⇨ ⇨ ⇨ ⇨

-By the way. In the midst of this, don't you think that Euphemina, Ruby and Sexy Schoolgirl are pretty?

-○ ○ They are in the same class as Yura and Jishuka.

-So many beautiful women are around Grid... Furthermore, how much of Marquis Steim's power will Grid take on later? Hah... I'm really envious of God Grid.

As more curses than praise about Grid started to spread on the Internet, Grid was looking at several notification windows.

[The quest 'Save Earl Steim' has been completed.]

[Affinity with Marquis Steim has risen to the maximum. Marquis Steim will even jump into a fire for you.]

[The quest 'Defense War II' has been completed.]

[The kingdom contribution of the Overgeared Guild has increased by 50,000.]

[The level of the Overgeared Guild has increased by 2.]

[5 million gold has been acquired.]

[You have acquired the big city Reidan.]

Apart from the 500,000 gold he received from the king, Grid was able to acquire another 5 million gold from the quest reward. 5.5 million gold. It was equivalent to 6.6 billion won. It was the first time Grid made such a huge amount of money at once.

'The quest reward is much higher than the price of a legendary item...'

Considering the contents of the quest, it was a satisfactory amount. But there was also a sense of dissatisfaction. He thought it would be more profitable to go around clearing quests than working hard at making items.

‘The problem is how often quests like this will occur.’

Of course, it wasn’t often. The probability of such large quests happening was very low. Grid thought about Braham’s soul, scattered in labyrinths across the continent.

‘I hope that he continues to invade the kingdom in the future.’

Wouldn’t he become a tycoon if he defended the kingdom every time Braham attacked? Lael approached the giggling Grid and spoke, “Your expression is too sneaky. Perhaps, are you thinking of the 5 million gold earned by completing the guild quest as your personal property?”

“If it isn’t my property, than whose is it?”

Lael sighed with a look of deep disappointment and explained to Grid. “Of course, it is the guild’s property. The rewards earned by clearing the guild quest will obviously be invested in the guild.”

“What? I have to do that?”

“It is possible for you to swallow it up alone. The problem is the credit. Do you want to disappoint the guild members?”

“ ... ”

Grid turned pale. He even broke out into a sweat. He was a person who only acted for the purpose of money.

Lauel soothed him, “Have a broader perspective. If you invest that 5 million gold into our development, you will receive bigger profits in the future. Please think wisely and shake off this small regret.”

Grid listened to him. Grid was aiming for the position of king, rather than being a duke. He was determined to make a fortune by becoming the king of a kingdom. Investing in order to reach that goal wasn't a waste.

At that time, King Wiesbaden yelled out.

“I will hold a banquet for Duke Grid and the Overgeared Guild!”

“Thank you for Your Majesty's grace.”

Lauel thanked him and the quick-witted members did the same. However, the important Grid was standing at a distance.

“What are you doing?” Lauel asked.

Then Grid spoke with embarrassment.

“I have to eat my kan jajang.”

Due to its nature, the speed at which the kan jajang became soggy was slower than ordinary jajangmyeon. So Grid was hoping that it wasn't completely wasted yet.

Lauel frowned, “Don't say strange things and please attend the banquet.”

Lauel also tasted the food called jajangmyeon when he visited South Korea. He thought it was a delicious, salty food. But it wasn't good enough to postpone the king's banquet. In the end, Grid was too embarrassed to log out.

‘My 7,000 won...’

Grid tried to soothe his mind as his stomach hurt.

\*\*\*

Reinhardt Palace where the king resided was luxurious and spectacular. There was nothing missing.

“This garden is seven times as big as Winston Castle's garden.”

“There are six training grounds behind the barracks. I could build some buildings on how big the land here is.”

“I can see gold and jewels every time I turn my head. Amazing.”

The live broadcast to the world was finished. Grid and the Overgeared members got to look around the palace while the banquet was being prepared. Grid was the only one grumbling while everyone else was fascinated by the scale and beauty of the palace.

“My kan jajang...”

“Why do you keep saying that? Is the state not good?”

“What is kan jajang? Is it the name of an item?”

The guild members were curious while Sehee and Yerim were freaked out.

“500,000 million...?”

“5-5-5-500 million?”

Huroi held a calculator in his hand and nodded. “When comparing the Korean won and the gold exchange rate, it is exactly 531,480 million.

It was the value of the 442,900 gold they received as the quest reward. Sehee and Yerim were stunned. The two girls’ mouths



dropped open for a while before they said something completely frustrating.

“Was it originally this easy to make money?”

It was a misunderstanding. The two girls had only been playing Satisfy for a few hours. They mistook Satisfy for a great game that made everyone rich. Lauel was frustrated and explained it to the two girls.

“Ordinary people can’t earn a huge sum from Satisfy, even if they invest all their time. The two of you could achieve this great luck due to Grid.”

Sehee and Yerim’s eyes shone.

‘My brother was a bigger man than I thought.’

‘Youngwoo oppa is first-rate husband material.’

Jishuka frowned as she watched the two girls from afar.

“Sexy Schoolgirl? Who is this child? Is she looking at Grid?”

Jishuka had spent a few days at Grid’s house. So she was friendly with Sehee, but unfamiliar with Yerim. Vantner didn’t notice she was annoyed and said,

“Ruby’s friend, isn’t she pretty? She will be as sexy as you in 2~3 years.”

Another guild member disagreed.

“Right now is good enough.”

“Um... Ruby and Sexy Schoolgirl are both very beautiful. I don’t like Yura or Jishuka.”

“I’m going to vote for Euphemina.”

“Shut up, you lolicon.”

The fired up Jishuka met the eyes of Sexy Schoolgirl. At that moment.

Pisik.

It was obvious ridicule. Sexy Schoolgirl was laughing at Jishuka.

‘I am better than the old one.’

She seemed to be saying.

“This girl with the perverted ID...!”

In the end, Jishuka exploded. She was about to run towards Yerim when Jude intervened.

“Ruby. Sexy Schoolgirl. Jude will protect them.”

“You idiot, won’t you go away?”

“Jude. He isn’t stupid. I heard that Grid is stupider.”

“That idiot is more than an idiot! You fool!”

“I’m not an idiot. Idiot.”

“The banquet is ready.”

The timing was good.

A situation was about to break out when a low ranking noble ran over and led the party to the banquet hall. There was no armed conflict, but the strange air between Jishuka and Yerim continued throughout the banquet.

“Oppa~ ahh~ please.” Yerim spoke in her natural coquettish manner.

“I will give this to you.” Jishuka acted awkwardly.

The two women sat with Grid between them and tried to force feed him. They shoved so many foods into his mouth that he had no room to enjoy the taste.

“Kekek.”

Marquis Steim laughed as he watched Grid choking.

“Ah! Heroes are always surrounded by beauties! Hahaha! It’s like looking at my younger days! Hahahahat!”

Marquis Steim had only one wife. But he wasn’t going to force his son-in-law to that. Lauel clicked his tongue.

‘I feel sorry for Lady Irene.’

The situation was ridiculous. It was worse than the Korean morning dramas he watched while staying in South Korea for the National Competition. On the other hand, Sehee was filled with displeasure. She looked at her brother surrounded by women and cut her steak with a knife.

“An enemy!”

Jude sensed a strong killing intent and pulled out his sword, causing confusion. Thus, the atmosphere of the banquet gradually progressed in a strange direction.

\*\*\*

Yubadakan Castle in Haken Kingdom.

“It’s lucky. His subordinates acquired titles, but he was the only one granted a territory. Aren’t they just nobles in name?”

Box, one of the Snake Guild’s 13 executives, said.

Then Zibal frowned. “Lucky? Lucky? You fool, the fact that they got the titles is what matters.”

The fact that they received a title meant they were eligible to be lords.

“In the future, Grid will expand his territory with no restrictions as a lord, then he will give it to one of his subordinates. Grid’s power will keep expanding. Imagine how great his authority will be with dozens of lords.”

“...It’s terrible.”

Box realized that the situation was more severe than he realized. Then Zibal made his decision.

“We need to put aside our differences. I must contact the leaders of the seven guilds.”

# Chapter 207

---

After the banquet ended. Grid and the Overgeared Guild returned to the north.

“What? All your stats have risen by 120?”

The Tzedakah Guild admired the effect of the Kingdom’s Hero title. In the case of rankers, they had at least seven different types of stats. Assuming that all stats +120 were applied to all seven, it was similar to gaining 84 levels.

“Wow, it’s almost a legendary title.”

“A hero of a kingdom would naturally be recorded in history, and they will eventually become a legend.”

“Aww... I wish we had joined the war a little sooner.”

“I’m envious. It’s amazing.”

The former Tzedakah Guild members regretted that they didn’t get the title because they arrived late to the battlefield. They never even imagined it. The fact that the legendary class Grid currently had 13 types of stats.

‘I want to boast about it.’

Grid was stiff. He wanted to brag to the about members about gaining ‘1,560 stat points!’

But.

‘I have to be careful.’

Grid was determined not to act childish in the future. It was the right judgment as the leader of the Overgeared Guild.

‘I don’t want to make the guild members feel bad.’

Grid learned how to care for others the more mature he became. He barely suppressed his childish nature and changed the topic.

“Sehee, what happened to you?”

She had just started Satisfy, so he was curious about how she obtained the Saintess class.

“It is...”

Sehee was sulky for some reason, so Yerim explained on behalf of her. Grid listened to the story before laughing.

“It’s just like you.”

Sacrificing herself to save others without any benefit? It was difficult for Grid to understand Sehee. He was worried that someone would take advantage of her good nature. But he was proud of Sehee. His sister could be as kind as she wanted.

Grid was smiling warmly when Yerim asked him a question.

“By the way Oppa. I also got the hidden class called Saintess’ Knight? How do I change to it?”

“...Eh?”

Grid and the other guild members were shocked. Both Sehee and Yerim got a hidden class at level 1?

‘What is this good luck?’

‘If I stay with Grid, I might open the good luck stat in reality...’

‘It was good that I bought land next to Grid’s building... I should move to South Korea as soon as possible.’

Lauel’s complexion rapidly brightened as the guild members gossiped.

‘Sexy Schoolgirl seemed useless, but that was a mistake. Great.’



Laeul came forward. “Let me explain. The conditions are different for each class change but generally...”

With Laeul’s help, Yerim was able to change to the Saintess’ Knight class.

“Is this good?”

A Saintess’ Knights had lower base abilities compared to other epic classes. The performance of the newly opened stats were moderate to low, and the power and function of the active skills were too plain.

However, the passive skills were admirable. If she was in a party with the Saintess, the performance of all skills rose by 20%, stats rose by 30% and her resistance increased by 50%. In addition, her defense increased by 40% of the Saintess’ defense. It seemed to be an upgraded version of Huroi’s second class, Apostle of Justice’s Partner.

“Both of you should stick together in the game.”

Satisfy would deepen the friendship between the two girls. Grid was very proud that Sehee had such a good best friend. It was because he recently became aware of how important the existence of friends was.

Before they knew it, the party reached the junction between Winston and Bairan.

Lauel pointed out Jishuka. “Jishuka, you should say goodbye here. Please rule Bairan as you have been doing so far.”

Jishuka responded in a frustrated manner.

“Shouldn’t I be near Grid to help him? Can’t I leave Bairan to someone else and go with him to Reidan?”

“Do you think there are any guild members who can rule a city like Bairan as well as you?”

Jishuka was the only guild member who had proven their ability to manage a territory. They had to depend on Jishuka, who was an experienced person.

“The guild members will begin to rule over small villages and gain experience as a lord. Then your successor can be decided, so please endure until then.”

“...Yes.”

“Don’t forget to accumulate minerals in the guild’s warehouse while steadily doing the Guardian of the Forest raid.”

“I understand...”

Jishuka elected three guild members to help her and was about to

leave with a bleak expression. Then Lauel offered something that interested her. “Do you want to swear a knight’s oath to Grid before leaving? Then Grid can summon you anytime he needs you.”

“I-Is that so?”

She could fly to Grid’s side no matter how far away she was. Jishuka was enthusiastic and pledged to Grid without any hesitation.

[You have become the knight of Duke Grid of the Eternal Kingdom.]

[Grid can summon you to his side at any time, assuming that you agree.]

“Hehe, then I’ll be going.”

Jishuka finally regained her energy and headed towards Bairan with the three guild members.

Lauel added something. “In addition, keep searching for talent in Bairan. Please gather three great knights each. In addition, don’t neglect the recruitment of soldiers.”

The knights and soldiers would become Grid’s power. Jishuka remembered this point and nodded while leaving. Then the rest of the guild members headed to Winston with Grid.

\*\*\*

“Dear husband!” Irene met Grid’s group as they arrived in Winston. She didn’t care about other people’s eyes as she fell into Grid’s arms. “Thank you for being safe! Thank you for helping my father! Thank you for protecting the kingdom! I’m so proud that you have become a duke!”

Irene’s face was filled with love as she buried it into his chest without hesitation. Grid stroked her silver hair with a gentle expression before looking back.

Sehee and Yerim were staring at him.

‘Why do they look so angry?’

Grid wondered as he introduced Irene to Sehee and Yerim.

“This is my wife.”

“ ... ”

Sehee and Yerim already knew that Grid was a married man in Satisfy. It was natural since his father-in-law was Marquis Steim. But they felt strange and uncomfortable when they directly saw the woman who was Grid’s wife.

‘Our parents are unaware that he is a married man... He’s a completely bad person.’

‘I want to win Youngwoo oppa first.’

Irene confirmed that the girls were looking at her with hostility and spoke with an uneasy expression. “Dear husband, have you obtained concubines as soon as you became a duke? My heart hurts...”

“It isn’t like that. They are...”

There was no time for Grid to explain. Sehee and Yerim cried out.

“W-Who is Oppa’s concubine?”

“I’m not Youngwoo oppa’s concubine. I will be his legal wife!”

It was quite a big disturbance. Sehee was confused about what was happening, while Yerim blatantly spoke Irene.

“Well, this is a game world, not reality. So Oppa and I can get married. I don’t want that, but if Oppa asks me... Uh.”

“You are Youngwoo oppa’s wife with that body? Bah, did you use magic?”

“Oh my, oh my. What nonsense is this fox speaking?”

‘I’m tired.’

Grid sighed and suddenly checked the time. It was 7 p.m. in reality. It had been 6 hours in reality and 18 hours in Satisfy time since the kan jajang arrived. Grid separated the two girls from Irene and said.

“You guys should log out. Even if it’s Saturday, your parents will worry if you go home late.”

“Ah...!”

Many events had occurred since connecting to the game. There was the battle with the golem army, the banquet, the journey, etc. Due to that, the girls hadn’t been paying attention to the time.

“It’s already this time?”

The girls belatedly realized the situation and prepared to log out. But before they logged out.

“Today’s money, I’ll give it to Oppa.”

“Me too.”

Sehee and Yerim were only 18 years old this year. For them, 500,000 gold was a huge sum of money. Then what about 500 million won? It was an amount they couldn't handle. It made them scared.

Grid understood their minds and received the 442,900 gold that Sehee received from the 'Fight the Golems' quest. However, he refused Yerim's money.

"I'll take care of Sehee's money and return it when she is an adult. But Yerim, this is your money. If you want, then I'll exchange it for cash and give it to your parents."

Yerim stuck out her tongue. "Oppa, why are you acting like this? Please take my money. Then at a later time, make me an item with that money. I heard from the guild members that the items you make are expensive."

Lauel prompted the hesitant Grid. "Take it. Please manage Ruby and Sexy Schoolgirl's capital for a while until they level up. Then make them items. It's also good for the guild."

Eventually, Grid nodded. Sehee and Yerim confirmed it and logged out. The mood finally stabilized.

"Irene, I will need to go away for a while."

Irene looked sad.

“... Are you leaving for Reidan straight away?”

Tears filled her beautiful eyes. She didn't want to be separated from him. Grid ached as he watched Irene, who was like a wet puppy in the rain, but it couldn't be helped.

“Someday we will be able to travel together.”

“ ... ”

Irene wanted to tell Grid not to leave. Or she wanted to follow him. But she had a role to play as the heir of a marquis, and Grid was in a difficult position because he just became a duke. Things might change in the future.

“Before you leave, let me feel your love for the last time.” Irene held Grid tightly. She didn't care about the eyes of the soldiers, knights and guild members as she kissed Grid and declared. “I want to conceive a child with you today.”

“ ... ”

Speaking such an explicit remark in public? The embarrassed Grid blushed while everyone else shifted their gaze as they coughed or whistled. But Irene's eyes didn't shake at all. She was serious. Grid was spellbound by her heart and beauty.

“I understand. I will do my best today.”



After that. The two people headed to the bedroom and shared a hot and precious time. Grid's large and thick fingers moved over Irene's silky skin...

The details will be omitted.

"Ahh, dear husband..."

Grid went deeper than ever...

Omitted.

\*\*\*

"Then I will move."

As Grid and Irene were busy, Lauel headed towards the dungeon. Shay's party was contained there. Lauel made a suggestion to the people who had already been trapped in prison for three days.

"Give me the most expensive item you have. Then I'll guarantee your freedom and safety."

Shay snorted. "We will be released after three hours, so why should we?"

Huroi's situation in the past was a special case. Normally, no matter how big the crime, a user couldn't be locked up in prison for more than three days. Shay's group knew this better than anyone, so they laughed at Lauel's suggestion.

Lauel looked at them coldly. "I will make it easier for you to understand. I will kill you if you don't pass me an item. If you have eyes and ears, you should already know that I have that power."

"What...?"

PK users like Shay's party had a high probability of dropping items when they died. Lauel looked at their frightened expression and pulled out a list. It was the list that Irene gave him.

"This is a list of items that you currently own. Give me your most expensive and precious item. Then I will spare your lives."

"T-This...!"

Shay's party thought it was ridiculous. This young man called Lauel, he was as evil as them, who had threatened so many people? Once again, Shay's party vowed not to mess with Grid.

On the other hand, Grid spent precious time with Irene before calling for Euphemina.

"Do you remember Rabbit?"

# Chapter 208

---

“Do you remember Rabbit?”

“It’s a dear name.”

Euphemina met Grid due to Rabbit’s quest. Rabbit asked Euphemina to participate in the item making game against Grid, then he asked her to rescue Grid from prison. He had a smarter, more flexible mindset than most humans, so she couldn’t forget him.

“I remember. He was the brains of the Mero Company.”

“You remembered pretty quickly. What do you think about inviting him to the guild?”

“...”

Did Grid really share his affection with Irene? He was soaked with sweat. His upper body was somewhat revealed by the robe he loosely wore, revealing a masculine appearance. It was appropriate to call him sexy.

It was the effect of the charm stat. Grid’s charm had sharply rising after becoming the first duke, so most people would feel favorable towards him. It was the reason why Euphemina was enchanted. But Grid wasn’t yet aware of this fact.

“Euphemina?”

Euphemina regained her spirit and asked, “Ah, what did you say just now?”

Grid repeated. “What do you think about inviting Rabbit to the guild?”

Euphemina’s opinion was positive.

“I want to invite him. Wasn’t he the one who drove the Mero Company to the top in the north? If you take into consideration his outstanding brain and experiences, his talent as a merchant and his ability to discern your value, he must be a named-grade NPC.”

Their encounter with Rabbit was short, but intense. It was a common feeling for both Grid and Euphemina.

“He is probably a named NPC... I agree.”

The current Grid was sure that Rabbit was an NPC with a much higher rating than Jude or Minor. He would be a great help if he was invited. But there was one problem. Rabbit was the hero who helped Grid and Euphemina save the people of Winston, but it couldn’t be denied that he was the number two of the Mero Company. Thanks to that, Marquis Steim sentenced him to 10 years in prison.

“Isn’t Rabbit still trapped in Frontier’s prison? Can you invite a

prisoner to the guild? I can't figure out how to get him out of prison."

"Why can't I get him out?"

Grid opened his inventory. Then he pulled out an item he got along with Reidan.

[Great Lord's Sword]

Durability: 220/220 Attack Power: 220

\* Dignity +150

\* Insight +150

\* Leadership +150

\* Skill 'Character Observation' will be generated.

\* Skill 'Talent Search' will be generated.

A rare sword only given to the best lords.

You can observe the soldiers and residents more closely and efficiently command them.

Weight: 200

It was an upgraded version of the Ruler's Sword.

Grid handed it to Euphemina.

"I am a duke. With my authority, I can pardon a sinner sentenced by a marquis. Probably."

"...Probably." Grid shrugged at Euphemina's questioning gaze. "Will he refuse the request of his son-in-law who's a duke? He became a marquis thanks to me, so he should listen to this small request. Isn't that right?"

"Ah, that's right. I understand. I will go to Frontier and invite Rabbit to the guild. But I don't need this sword."

"We don't know. Don't you want to examine Rabbit with the sword first in order to determine if he is worth it?"

"The Character Observation skill was created on its own once my insight reached 1,600. So I don't need that item's help."

"1,600...?"

Grid currently only had 1,100 insight, even if the effect of Kingdom's Hero was applied. However, Euphemina was a

Duplicator and her main stat was insight, so it exceeded 1,600 points.

‘I’m envious.’

Character Observation was a skill to check the NPC’s stat information, skills information and potential. It would be much more comfortable if he could use this useful skill without relying on an item.

Euphemina asked Grid. “Should I come back to Winston with Rabbit?”

Grid shook his head. “No, go to Reidan. We will be departing for Reidan soon.”

“I understand.”

Euphemina said goodbye and left the office. Grid was left alone and he started thinking as he looked at the Great Lord’s Sword.

‘Is there a hidden talent in Winston?’ Grid wanted to take care of everything before leaving Winston. ‘I should explore with Talent Search.’

Grid was about to head into the city with the Great Lord’s Sword when he suddenly stopped.

“That reminds me of Kesan Canyon...”

It happened when Grid entered Kesan Canyon to acquire Pagma's Swordsmanship. The NPC who called himself the captain of the Saharan Empire's knights had tried to give him a quest.

‘Was his name Piero? He was incredibly strong.’

He had never seen such a strong NPC since Doran. Who was stronger between him and Jude? Jude wasn't a match, even armed with the +8 Dainsleif.

‘I have to invite him.’

Grid worried for a while before quickly making a decision.

“I will attempt it once.”

He had nothing to lose if the invitation failed. This was because the NPC had a quest related to the Saharan Empire.

“Reidan is near the border of Saharan, so that's a plus.”

Grid determined his goal and gathered the guild members.

“Take Khan and head to Reidan first. Join forces and organize the place until I arrive. Oh, don't forget to take Minor along as



well. I'm worried that he'll escape if he isn't under someone's eyes."

Vantner was puzzled.

"You aren't coming with us?"

"I have a place I need to stop by first."

Lauel had just taken the items away from Shay's party and he admonished Grid. "You're the leader of the guild. When you are doing your personal activities, you are obliged to explain the situation to the guild members in more detail. So that we don't worry."

Grid briefly explained. "I am going to pick up a treasure before heading to Reidan."

Treasure? The guild members were expectant after seeing Grid's attitude. Then they left for Reindan. Reidan was located to the west of the kingdom, so it would be a long journey.

"Then I'm going."

Grid separated from the guild, had a gratifying farewell with Irene, and ended up alone. He opened Braham's Message as he flew towards Kesan Canyon.

[Are you sure you want to open Braham's Message?]

[There is unidentified magic power. You need to be careful.]

Grid flinched. He recalled the time when he opened Braham's treasure box in the Golem's Labyrinth. He only opened the message after he fully armed himself with items and the pavranium.

[The unidentified magic power has formed someone's voice.]

Braham's voice was directly transmitted to his brain.

[Pagma's Descendant, the fact that you received this message means that you've defeated my golem army? This is a simple warning. Gain the four blessings of the gods and make the Vessel of the Soul! Then resurrect my body! If you keep delaying, then you will suffer a disaster!]

"He invaded the kingdom just to intimidate me?"

This crazy bastard. He killed thousands of people just for that reason?

'He is beyond selfish.'

Grid called up the information of the quest he had been postponing.

## [Great Magician's Resurrection]

Rating: Second Class Quest.

The legendary great magician Braham was a genius. He reigned as the best magician ever since he started learning magic. There was a myth that he survived against the fire dragon Trauka without dying.

As he grew old, he started mourning the fact that he was a mortal. Mentally and physically, he had already transcended humanity. Therefore, he wanted to become immortal.

After much research, he designed the 'Vessel of the Soul' that will regenerate his mortal soul into an immortal soul.

But the Vessel of the Soul is an object that doesn't exist in this world and is impossible to create.

He searched for an entirely new mineral that could be used as a material for the Vessel of the Soul and learned that his old friend Pagma was trying to create a mineral that wasn't part of this world. He went to Pagma and assisted in the work.

The two combined their power and created the mineral called pavranium.

Braham had no doubts that pavranium could be used to make the Vessel of the Soul.

But the only blacksmith who could smelt pavranium was Pagma, who unfortunately died of old age.

In the end, Braham didn't achieve his wish!

He looked forward to the day that Pagma's Descendant would be born to create the Vessel of the Soul, creating 28 mines and setting up mazes all over the place before he died.

Each labyrinth is full of minerals, and he believed that it would be enough to lure Pagma's Descendant.

Now 300 years have passed.

Out of 28 pieces of Braham's soul that were sealed in 28 labyrinths, one has finally encountered you.

Braham wants you to make the Vessel of the Soul. Through the Vessel of the Soul, he will be resurrected with the soul and body of an immortal.

\* Second Class Quest Clear Condition: Create the Vessel of the Soul.

Second Class Quest Clear Reward: A large amount of pavranium.

In order to create the Vessel of the Soul, the pavranium needed to obtain four blessings. But Grid had a hostile relationship with the Yatan Church, so it was close to impossible to receive their blessing.

‘No matter how much Braham threatens, it’s currently an impossible quest. There’s something strange.’

Legend had it that Pagma died 100 years ago. But when reading the details of this quest, Braham’s time of death was 300 years ago. From this perspective, Braham’s story about the pavranium seemed to be full of mistakes. The past Grid wasn’t cautious and didn’t recognize this mistake, but now he was different.

‘There’s something fishy about Braham.’

In fact, he could obtain the quest rewards with just Minor. Hadn’t Grid already found seven pieces of pavranium in the north thanks to Minor?

“Great Magician’s Resurrection? Damn, I can’t complete this quest. If you want to warn me, then warn me. I don’t like this attitude. Damn bastard.”

Obviously, he had an obligation to complete the class quest. He had to clear the class quest in order to fully understand the story about Pagma and to complete his class. But Grid wasn’t nervous. If all of the pavranium was recovered, it was assumed that the story would develop without Braham’s help. It was a wisdom he

naturally acquired while clearing various types of difficult quests.

[Braham's Message has been destroyed.]

Grid removed the ridiculous message and his flight speed increased. Then after two hours, he arrived at Kesan Canyon.

“It was around this place?”

Loran Falls was one of the most sacred places for the people of the Eternal Kingdom.

Grid shouted, “Come out! Piero!”

His powerful voice echoed through the canyon. After a while.

“My name is Piaro, not Piero.”

The middle-aged man showed up in front of Grid. Grid was completely different from the past, so Piaro didn't recognize him.

“Who are you? Were you sent by Asmophel?” In the past, Piaro thought highly of Grid's development. However, the current Piaro recognized Grid as strong and was very alert. “Based on your skills... It seems like you can handle the current Asmophel?”

An endless sense of dignity could be seen. This was the current

Grid. Piaro was extremely nervous while Grid cut to the chase.

“You, won’t you become my knight?”

Grid observed Piaro’s details using the Great Lord’s Sword and was more stimulated than when he made a legendary item.

# Chapter 209

---

Name: Piaro

Age: 39 Gender: Male

Class: Swordsman/ Hermit

Title: Great Swordsman

\* The closest person to becoming a sword saint in this age.

\* When a blade type weapon is equipped, attack power will increase by 40% and attack speed by 10%. This effect is applied separately from the Sword Mastery skill effect.

Level: 367

Strength: 2,038 Stamina: 1,380

Agility: 1,910 Intelligence: 530

Leadership: 812 Indomitable: 824

Skills: Trap Installation (C+), Empire's Swordsmanship (B), Overwhelming (A), Empire's Military Tactics (A+), Great Swordsman's Enlightenment (S+), Supreme Swordsmanship (SS),



Fated to Perish (??).

A descendant of a prestigious bloodline in the Saharan Empire, he was born with a natural talent for swordsmanship and military tactics. He joined the knights at a young age and became a captain in only 12 years.

In the following 5 years, he succeeded in winning a lot of achievements. However, 2 years ago, he witnessed the liaison between Asmophel and Empress Marie.

He was wrongfully branded as an imperial traitor and forced to flee.

\* Currently, this person is suffering from a severe sickness of the heart. He has lost his original nature and all stats are reduced by 20% from those shown in the status window.

[Trap Installation]

Piario can install simple traps. It's a skill acquired to beat his pursuers.

[Empire's Swordsmanship]

The basic swordsmanship passed down to the knights of the Saharan Empire. It is made of five forms and is easy to learn, but the power is relatively good.

Piario has reconstructed this swordsmanship and raised it to a higher level.

[Overwhelming]

Piario can overwhelm a target that has a much lower level than you. The overwhelmed target will feel fear.

[Empire's Military Tactics]

High level military tactics that the Saharan commanders learn. Piario personally studied these tactics and raised it to another level.

He can seamlessly command thousands of troops.

[Great Swordsman's Enlightenment]

Pairo developed aura after achieving enlightenment as a swordsman. Be cautious, since the forming the aura will take some time.

Now that he has become one with the sword, his aura has become intangible and more powerful.

His sword techniques have gone beyond the limits of a human.

## [Supreme Swordsmanship]

The swordsmanship that was passed through Piaro's family for generations. Piaro was able to become a great swordsman by mastering this swordsmanship that hasn't been mastered by anyone in his family for hundreds of years.

There is a theory that this swordsmanship originated on the Eastern Continent.

## [Fated to Perish]

Piaro's unique technique. The sword will attack one point on the target. The target hit by the sword must die.

Piaro is deserving to be a legend just from this technique alone.

Skill Mana Consumption: 40% of the maximum mana.

Skill Cooldown Time: 1 hour.

\* This skill can't be applied in quests and raids.

‘It is beyond my expectations.’

Piaro's passive skill was comparable to Pagma's Swordsmanship

(Lv. 2), which increased physical attack by 30%, critical hit rate by 20%, and critical damage by 10%. Moreover, his active skills were brilliant.

‘In particular, the Fated to Perish skill is terrifying. A skill that will 100% kill a person?’

It was a technique that made him eligible to become a legend. It was safe to call this a legendary rated skill. But Grid admired something else about Piaro.

‘There is no limit on his stats increase.’

So far, all NPCs that Grid observed had a limit on their stats. It was the same with higher rated NPCs like Jude and Minor. Piaro’s name might be marked with gold, but there were no limits on his stats, so he could grow infinitely like a user.

‘Yes, this is truly a named-grade NPC.’

Grid was thrilled. “You, won’t you become my knight?”

“What?” Piaro frowned. “There are several things to point out. First of all, who are you?”

Grid introduced himself in a confident manner.

“I’m Grid, Pagma’s Descendant and a duke of the Eternal

Kingdom.”

The Saharan Empire was the peak nation on the continent, so they dismissed the Eternal Kingdom. In fact, the Eternal Kingdom offered a tribute to the empire, just like other kingdoms. Piaro was a noble of the Saharan Empire, so the duke of a small kingdom didn't seem great at all.

Just, “Pagma’s Descendant?”

Piario couldn't stand still. Blacksmith Pagma, he had earned the reputation as the best swordsman since Sword Saint Muller. It was natural that Piario was interested in a legend's descendant.

“Is this the truth?”

Piario quickly showed a combat posture. It was his instincts as a swordsman.

Grid smiled awkwardly. “Why do you suddenly look like that? Do you want to fight? I don't want to do that.”

Piario pointed his sword at Grid. “You are the one who rambled first. Suddenly asking me to become your knight? I should first check to see if you are qualified.”

Piario could accurately guess the level of Pagma's Descendant. Then he could gauge his gap with Sword Saint Muller. Piario decided and rushed towards Grid. Grid thought it was ridiculous as

the distance between them was narrowed in an instant.

‘Is he seriously brandishing a sword at me? Is he crazy about fighting?’

Grid had wanted to avoid the fight. His weak self in the past would’ve run away, but now he was strong. He pulled out the +9 Failure.

Jeeeong!

Piario admired the blue shark-shaped greatsword.

“That’s a great sword.”

Grid identified Piario’s sword and scoffed.

“Your sword is unimpressive. Well, if it’s repaired, then it will improve.”

“Weapons aren’t important.”

Kkirik!

Piario rotated the sword in his hand that had collided with Failure. Then Grid felt a tremendous pressure and almost let go of Failure. He had to tighten his grip in order to not lose it.

‘I have more strength, but why am I being pushed in a power struggle? Is this technique?’

At this time, all of Grid’s strength was concentrated on his upper body. Piaro kicked Grid’s ankle.

“Eh?”

Grid stumbled. Piaro’s foot aimed at his face while he was leaning sideways.

“Kuk!”

Grid raised his knee to defend against the kick. This time, his strength was concentrated on his lower body.

Chukak.

Piaro rotated his sword again and struck Failure. Blood spurted from Grid’s chest. Piaro expressed his thoughts. “Poor techniques. Your claim about being Pagma’s Descendant is false. Or was Pagma’s skill this low in the first place?”

“Poor techniques? It doesn’t matter if you disrespect Pagma, but don’t humiliate me!”

“ ... ”

Grid became serious. His pride was dented so he triggered Pagma's Swordsmanship, Link. 21 blue-white blades were generated and covered Piaro at a fearsome speed.

However.

Chaeeeeeng!

Piaro defended against all 21 strikes by moving his sword with minimal movements. His stats might've fallen by 20%, but this was possible because his agility was twice as high as Grid's. In the meantime, Grid had only been investing his points in strength and stamina. But now he gained enlightenment.

'Speed is really important in swordsmanship. I need to invest in agility in the future.'

"Is this your best technique?"

Piaro was disappointed and looked at Grid with derision.

"No way!"

Grid used a combo skill that he developed over his many combat experiences. Theoretically, it was a combo guaranteed to win.

"Pagma's Swordsmanship, Restraint!"



Grid first restrained Piaro's actions. Rather than linking with Kill which might kill Piaro, he struck three times. Then once Restraint was almost over, he used Wave to slow down Piaro's movements and used Link again.

Piaro's high agility and passive skill meant he defended against most of the attacks, but he eventually allowed two attacks and coughed out blood.

Then he dropped his sword.

"What? Is this the end?" Grid was immersed in the duel, so he couldn't help asking Piaro with a frown.

"Doesn't it seem like you're holding back? I admit defeat."

In fact, Piaro also hadn't used all his strength. He didn't use Fated to Perish. But even if he used it, Grid had his invincible passive skill. Grid didn't doubt his victory, so his expression brightened.

"Okay. Now that I've won, will you become my knight?"

Piaro shook his head. "I just said I would see if you are qualified. I never promised to become your knight. I'm sorry, but I promised to never swear allegiance to anyone again. I can't accept your request."

“Are you traumatized because of your experience of being abandoned by your master?”

“What...?”

Grid spoke honestly to the baffled Piaro. “I’m well aware of your situation. Weren’t you framed by a colleague and became a fugitive? The fact that the emperor didn’t help you meant that he also doubted your loyalty... Now you’re determined to completely isolate yourself from the world after being betrayed by your colleagues?”

Piario showed killing intent for the first time.

“The empire is the only one who should know that story. It isn’t something that can be discovered through rumors. Did Asmophel tell you?”

“No? I heard this story directly from you.”

What was this nonsense? Piario still looked puzzled, so Grid pointed to his face.

“Look closely. Aren’t I somehow familiar?”

“Come to think of it...?” Piario finally remembered. “Are you the person from that time?”

A year and a half ago. There was one person who entered Kesan Canyon, a place where powerful monsters were found, by himself. At the time, he was weak, but he seemed like he would grow quickly. So Piaro asked him to act on Piaro's behalf.

“Amazing. Your skills, atmosphere and appearance have changed. I didn't think you would be the ugly person from that time.”

“No matter how ugly I was, saying that...”

Grid was shocked and frustrated by Piaro's blunt words.

After a short silence.

Grid barely managed to regain his mind and proposed.

“I will get revenge for you. Instead, come with me. Isn't it too unfair for you to live away from the world just because of a traitor?”

Piaro questioned him. “I don't know why you need me. Isn't the Eternal Kingdom guaranteed peace as a neutral kingdom? Why do you need my help?”

“I want you to escort me when I go to find minerals...”

“What nonsense...”

In fact, Grid's intentions didn't matter.

'If I can achieve my revenge...'

Piario lost everything due to Asmophel. His colleagues loyal to him were killed. Revenge was Piario's last desire.

'If I can achieve my revenge, I'm even willing to sell my soul to the devil.'

But the problem was after his revenge was achieved. Was he willing to pledge the rest of his life to someone?

As Piario hesitated, Grid stabbed right to his core.

"You wanted a duel as soon as you heard that I am Pagma's Descendant, so aren't you still longing for strength? Don't you want to become a sword saint? Among my companions, there are many strong people. Don't you want to live and train with them?"

"... But I doubt that I can be loyal to you."

"You don't have to force yourself to be loyal. You don't have to pledge to be a knight if you're unwilling. Stay as my guest. You can decide for yourself if you want to follow me."

Grid didn't want to miss Piario, so he eventually took a step back.

Therefore, Piaro had no choice but to accept Grid's proposal.

On that day, Grid left the city where he lived for a year and eight months after he became Pagma's Descendant. It was the moment when the legend shifted to a new stage.

# Chapter 210

---

Most of the magic formulas used by magicians today were established by Braham. Thanks to Braham, the science of magic was able to develop and the authority of magicians rose. For magicians, Braham was a teacher and object of respect.

But what was the truth? Braham's achievements that people knew about actually belonged to Mumud. The person who simplified complicated magic formulas, made it easier for training, and spread it into the world was Mumud, not Braham.

Then why was Mumud unknown, and Braham praised by the world? Braham was the only one who knew.

The Golem's Labyrinths.

[You ignored my warning. Pagma's Descendant, you are the first person to make me so angry after Mumud.]

Braham was furious at Grid, who didn't respond to his message. His 28 souls twisted like they were flames in front of the wind.

[I will make you regret it.]

In the past, Mumud was Braham's best disciple. Mumud's talents grew day by day and would eventually transcend him. Braham couldn't tolerate it. He couldn't let his top position be taken by his disciple, so he monitored Mumud's every move.

That's how the 'Eyes of Surveillance' magic was attached to Mumud's Orb.

[I will find out your weakness.]

Grid had reproduced Mumud's Orb for Euphemina, allowing him to be watched. The day would come when Grid would eventually move according to Braham's will.

\*\*\*

Deep in the forest.

"You're finally here."

A man with matted hair was waiting when Grid logged in. It was Great Swordsman Piaro. He was seated in front of a campfire and Grid greeted him.

"Good morning. Have you eaten?"

Grid's attitude towards Piaro was very friendly. It was much more favorable than when he dealt with beautiful people like Yura and Jishuka. But Piaro was unfriendly.

"I ate. Let's go."

“Yes.”

Grid's smile didn't go away. He was happy at the thought of having the strongest swordsman as his colleague.

‘If Piaro becomes a sword saint...’

He would have unsurpassed power. He didn't need to be afraid of demons like Hell Gao anymore. Maybe he could try raiding a dragon.

‘It is enough for now.’

Strength, stamina, agility. If these three combat related stats were combined, Piaro had higher stats than Grid. Piaro also had the strongest skills as well. It was very reassuring to Grid. But there was one drawback.

‘His appearance is deplorable.’

It might be due to his sickness of the heart. Piaro looked so old that it was hard to believe he was 29 years old. It was more believable if he was 50 years old.

‘It's a matter of style.’

His shabby attire and shaggy hair made him look like a homeless



person. He had a scruffy beard and he stank.

‘Appearance is important.’

Grid once had the worst appearance, so he knew the importance of appearance better than anyone else. Wasn’t he despised by other people just because he was ugly or because of his clothes? Grid determined that it wasn’t good to leave Piaro as he was and pulled clothes out of his inventory. It was noble clothing that he received from Irene. Grid was hesitant because it was an item worth 50 gold, but he closed his eyes and handed it to Piaro.

“Put this on. And why don’t you cut or tie your hair up?”

Piaro refused. “I don’t care about my appearance.”

“I’m embarrassed to go around with you.”

It was something his sister often said to him. Grid felt a flash of understanding.

‘This is how Sehee felt.’

Grid smiled bitterly as Piaro responded bluntly.

“You have to endure it if you want me to come with you.”

“Ah...”

Piario’s nerves were sharp. Anger was the only thing that could be seen in both eyes. It was because he was obsessed with revenge. As stated in the status window, Piario was currently suffering from a sickness of the heart and lost his original nature.

Grid felt the need to take care of him. Rather than forcing or persuading him, Grid would let him do as he wanted. It was the best and smartest choice for Grid, who had little experience with building up relationships with people.

Grrr.

A pair of twin ogres appeared in front of the two people who had been walking for half a day. They were powerful level 260 monsters, but they were nothing more than puppies in front of the legendary Grid and Great Swordsman Piario.

Seokeok!

It only took Piario a matter of seconds.

Peeeeek!

Grid took around one minute to destroy his twin ogre.

Piario asked him.

“I felt it when we fought the other day, but your basics are terrible. You can implement Pagma’s wonderful techniques, but you haven’t mastered the sword.”

Grid had been using a greatsword as a weapon since Satisfy began. He might not be the best, but he was confident that he knew the basics. However, considering his experience and level, it was true that he lacked skill.

Grid became aware of it because of Piaro and gave an excuse. “I don’t care about swordsmanship. Anyway, I am armed with excellent weapons and armor. If I rely on my equipment, I can overpower my opponent.”

“That is wrong for warriors. Moreover, it’s bad to just rely on equipment if your equipment isn’t suitable.” Piaro pointed to Braham’s Boots. “If you really want to rely on equipment, you should change those shoes first.”

“Why?”

The defense of Braham’s Boots were outstanding considering they had a level 240 limit. Moreover, it was light and comfortable to wear, speeding up movement speed. It was nothing compared to Failure or the Holy Light set, but it was a worthy item because Fly was attached to it.

Grid sent him a glance stating ‘you don’t know anything,’ so Piaro explained.

“The greatsword emphasizes power over swiftness. In order to put as much weight as possible behind your strikes, you should wear sturdy shoes that can withstand the weight.

‘What is this?’

Grid wasn’t smart. If he heard an explanation when he wasn’t prepared in advance, he was slow to understand. Piaro gave him a more direct explanation.

“If you wear heavy boots, it is easier to concentrate your weight and you can gain more power behind your strikes. So I recommend heavy boots.”

‘So... Wearing heavy boots will increase the attack power of the greatsword?’ Grid was delighted after successfully interpreting it. ‘I found a hidden system!’

Grid was thrilled about finding a hidden system that most people didn’t know about. Named NPCs could give all sorts of specific advice. His liking towards Piaro increased.

‘I will be able to get ahead of others.’

Grid didn’t know.

If a heavy weapon user was armed with heavy boots, the system

would given additional attack power. This was already common sense to most users. It showed that Grid was still ignorant when it came to overall game knowledge.

\*\*\*

“Is this Patrian?”

“Yes.”

After a three day journey, Grid and Piaro arrived at Patrian. The fortified city, Patrian. It was a strategic point at the border of the Gauss Kingdom, while also establishing the boundary that separated the western and northern parts of the Eternal Kingdom.

In addition, it was Grid’s starting city.

‘I lived here for nearly a year...’

Grid not only hunted countless orcs and goblins around Patrian, he also cleared all types of quests. Thanks to that, he was able to maximize his affinity with all the residents of Patrian, and received Earl Ashur’s quest, where he eventually became Pagma’s Descendant.

“That bastard Ashur...”

Grid gritted his teeth as he once again recalled Earl Ashur. He

was forced to become Pagma's Descendant due to Earl Ashur, and he trembled as he recalled his days as a minus level.

‘...I vowed that I would get revenge once I became stronger.’

Grid had been filled with fury towards Earl Ashur for a while. But that was the past. Due to his relationship with Earl Ashur, he ended up benefiting.

“We will stay here today and leave tomorrow.”

At this speed, they could arrive in Reidan in four days. The relaxed Grid entered Patrian with Piaro. At that moment, Earl Ashur's magic detected Grid's presence. He checked Grid's identity through the magic spheres he installed throughout Patrian and rose to his feet.

“He isn't afraid of this place...!”

Earl Ashur had dreamt about getting revenge on Grid, after losing Pagma's Rare Book in front of his eyes. He immediately summoned his knights.

“We're going hunting.”

It was a great opportunity to repay the grudge. Earl Ashur was overcome with joy, despite being aware of Grid's importance. He knew that Grid had become a duke, but he didn't care.

\*\*\*

“This meal tastes terrible.”

Patrian was a fortified city, not a tourist one. Therefore, it didn't have a system designed to care for outsiders. The accommodations they found didn't have proper facilities. Piaro looked at Grid, who was complaining about the cheap inn's poor meal, and asked.

“Why are you hiding your identity?”

Grid said he was a duke of the kingdom. If this was true, he should be treated with great hospitality by the owner of the city. Yet Grid hid his identity with a hat before entering the city. It was like he was a wanted person, rather than a duke.

Grid explained to the suspicious Piaro. “We are only staying overnight, and I don't want to be bothered.”

“Hmmm...”

Well, Grid's actions didn't matter. Piaro only cared about his revenge. Piaro thought so and tilted his glass. It was cheap alcohol, but this was the first time he could drink in two years. On the other hand, the users were looking at Grid and Piaro with strange expressions.

“It’s a strange combination.”

“Why are those two together?”

Grid was dressed in his beginners clothing to conceal his identity, while Piaro seemed like a beggar. People recognized Grid as a beginner, and Piaro as a beggar NPC. They were puzzled about why an NPC would be with a beginner.

“No matter how cheap the food here is, it would be somewhat burdensome for a beginner to afford... How can he buy drinks as well?”

“The smell is too much.”

“Really annoying. What is that?”

The female users found the odor coming from Piaro annoying. The male users saw the female users’ reactions and came forward.

“Hey, Beggar. I don’t know why a poor person is trying to get drunk, but can you stop disturbing the other guests with your rancid smell?”

“The ladies have lost their appetite because of you. Get lost.”

In the first place, users didn’t care about NPCs. It was natural for the treatment to be worse when the NPC was a beggar. Piaro



ignored them. Grid didn't care. The two men weren't worth dealing with, so he just enjoyed his food and drink.

“The steamed lizardmen tails are good to eat. They're similar to pig trotters.”

“What are pig trotters? I've tasted all types of delicacies in the empire, but I've never heard of such a dish.

“It is delicious pig's feet.”

“Hah~ the beggar is ignoring us.”

The level 109 Coke became angry at being ignored by the beggar and eventually committed a mistake. His hand moved like he was about to do something. Piaro didn't allow it. He spat out the bone of the lizardman tail that he was eating.

“Eek.”

[You have suffered 3,190 damage.]

Coke's eyes widened as he screamed. It was because he was hit in the forehead by a bone and lost more than a third of his health.

# Chapter 211

---

Coke was confused.

‘What is this?’

He lost more than a third of his health when hit by a bone thrown by a beggar?

‘A bug?’

It was a reasonable guess. A bug made more sense than a high level user like him being so damaged by a bone.

Who was he?

Less than half a year after starting Satisfy, he reached level 109 and was one of the best known players in Patrian. He also had a chance to hunt one of the most notorious monsters near Patrian, the orc captain, alone.

‘I will be a god in the future, so I can’t be hurt by a bone...!’

Coke’s goal was Grid. It was his desire to be called God Coke on the world stage, just like Grid. He had such a lofty goal that today’s experience was even more humiliating.

“You hit me so, I’ll hit you back!”

Coke rolled up his sleeves. Then he swung his hand at Piaro's head.

“Keok.”

[You have suffered 3,140 damage.]

This time, it was a bean. It wasn't even a big kidney bean, but a small pea. He was shocked as a pea flew out and hit him.

‘Unbelievable! It wasn't a bug?’

Jeurereuk.

Blood poured from Coke's mouth as he finally figured out the situation. He was able to realize that Piaro wasn't a beggar, but a tremendously high level NPC.

‘I didn't understand the subject!’

Satisfy was famous for never having a bug since it opened. It was rumored that the creator, Lim Cheolho, was a god. Coke belatedly tried to change his attitude. He attempted to avoid a situation by apologizing to Piaro. But it was still a crisis because the other users didn't understand the atmosphere.

“That guy is throwing food! Coke! Smash him!”

“Teach that beginner and NPC a lesson!”

The users didn't know that Coke was already half dead!

“Coke! Coke! Coke!”

“Get rid of that beggar!”

Coke was upset because of their cheers and fighting atmosphere.

‘Please figure out the atmosphere!’

He didn't want to be killed by bones and peas in front of Patrian's users, who looked up to him. Coke nervously looked at Piaro, but Piaro had no interest in him. He dismissed Coke at the level of a flying insect.

Grid felt admiration.

“What did you just do? It looks like you dealt big damage with the bone and pea?”

The user with the ID of Coke, based on the items he wore, he had a minimum level of 100. In addition, his armor had at least a rare rating. It was amazing that Coke coughed up blood after being hit by a bean.

Piario explained to Grid. “I used qi. I can maximize my power by injecting qi into an object. In my hands, even a feather can become a sharp sword.”

“It is like a wuxia master.”

“Wuxia? What is that?”

“Strong people like you who transform the world.”

Grid and Piario didn’t care about the other people making a fuss. The users became increasingly furious.

“That beggar is ignoring us until the end...!”

Coke didn’t take action, so the level 78th monk called Pitu and the level 85 berserker Dais rose from their seats. As they were approaching Piario, the door of the inn suddenly opened.

“Sir Dio is coming!”

Dozens of soldiers rushed into the narrow inn. They stood and saluted as a white armored knight entered. The young man had particularly noticeable blonde eyelashes. He looked around the inn with narrowed eyes.

“It stinks. Are people eating worse than pigs? It’s incredibly

stinky.” Dio held a blue rose in one hand and raised it to his nose. He smelled it and asked. “Has anyone here seen Duke Grid?”

“Duke Grid?”

“Is he talking about God Grid?”

There were no high level monsters near Patrian. It was because the knights and soldiers of Patrian used the monsters to train.

“Why would they be looking for a high level user in Patrian?”

“No. Why would God Grid come to this type of place?”

“You really don’t know.” In the end, Dio started to examine the users’ faces for Grid. “You’re not it. You also aren’t it. You as well. Um...?”

Dio’s gaze went to a corner. There was a beginner adventurer sitting next to a beggar.

“Take your hat off. Heok?”

Dio approached Grid and commanded, only to become terrified. It was because of an enormous stench that spread.

“Dirty guy...!”

Dio was a noble and a knight, so he had an unusually obsessive temperament about being clean. He became furious at Piaro, who hadn't taken a bath for at least a month.

“How dare you go around in such a disgusting manner! What a shameless bastard! My nose will become paralyzed because of you! Don't make me nauseous and go away!”

“Ohh!”

The users annoyed by Piaro thought this was a cool remark.

“Let's go.”

Grid rose from his seat. He judged that it would be better to leave because Earl Ashur seemed to have noticed him.

‘I don't want to delay the time.’

The big city Reidan. He had tremendous expectations about his city. He wanted to arrive quickly and check how much taxes he would get. Dio caught up with Grid who was trying to leave.

“Didn't I tell you to take off your hat?”

“...The boat might've already sailed.” Grid grinned at Dio and asked. “Do you really think that I am Duke Grid?”

Dio bluntly replied.

“That’s right. I received a tip that Duke Grid was here.”

Grid’s face distorted. “Then why are you speaking like that?”

“Uh...?”

An enormous pressure was released. Dio, the soldiers and the users in the inn were overwhelmed by the pressure and hesitated. It was because Grid’s dignity stat was comparable to the king of a nation. He threw off his hat.

“G-Grid...!”

“God Grid!”

Dio was astonished, while the other users cried out. Grid pressed his finger to Dio’s forehead. “If you knew I was Duke Grid, why did you speak without using honorifics? Eh? What did you originally say? Did you call me a bastard? Eh? Are we friends?”

Grid had bad feelings towards Earl Ashur’s knights as well. The one who killed Grid when he acquired Pagma’s Rare Book wasn’t Earl Ashur, but Earl Ashur’s knights. And Dio was one of them.

“I tried to endure it, but this bastard is too arrogant.”



Grid couldn't suppress his rage and slapped Dio. It was a terrible experience for Dio, who had never even been scolded by his parents.

“Y-You hit me...!”

He bit his lips as Grid hit Dio's cheeks again.

“You didn't even apologize for not bowing! This rude bastard!”

Grid had matured after several incidents, but the roots of a human didn't easily change. Grid's natural tendencies weren't good. Grid slapped Dio in front of all these people, without considering Dio's position at all.

Slap! Slap! Slap!

Dio's handsome face quickly swelled up like a toad. In the end, Dio's string of reason snapped. He grabbed his sword, forgetting Earl Ashur's order to 'graciously' bring Grid to him.

“Such humiliation...!”

“What? Do you dare to show disrespect to a duke? You want to be like this until the end?” Grid's eyes shone. It was the same as when he was called the Psychopath Butcher. “You are sentenced to death.”

Jeeeong!

He swung Failure. Dio couldn't cope with a single strike and was thrown back into the wall.

"Cough! Cough!"

The soldiers panicked as they watched Dio coughing up blood. Should they protect their leader? But wasn't that considered a rebellion against the duke? As the soldiers were troubled, the cool blade was held to Dio's jaw.

"Do you remember that day?"

"That day...?"

"The day that I found Pagma's Rare Book."

"I clearly remember."

Dio couldn't forget, since it was the day that Earl Ashur's anger pierced the sky. Grid gritted his teeth, "On that day, I was killed by your swords. I will give you a chance to experience the same pain."

Unlike a user who would resurrect if they died, the life of a NPC was finite. In Satisfy, killing an NPC was equivalent to murder in reality. Grid was unwilling to harm an NPC. It was even more so

after forming a relationship with Khan. Due to that, he didn't intend to kill Dio and was just planning to terrify him.

However, Dio became honestly scared and pissed himself. He started foaming at the mouth and lost consciousness. It was an event that would become a lifelong trauma for Dio, who had been an elite since childhood.

\*\*\*

"It seems strange if you're the duke of the kingdom." Piaro remarked.

Grid shrugged. "This was a dirty case. I have a bad chemistry with this place."

"So that's why you hid your identity."

The two people left the inn and were moving to exit Patrian. Coke rushed after them.

"Grid! Grid!"

Grid frowned. "Can't you see that I am moving in secret? Why are you calling out the name of a person without thinking?"

"I-I'm really sorry. I was so excited that I wasn't thinking..." Coke took out a piece of paper and asked Grid. "Please sign this!"

“...Sign?” Grid’s distorted expression disappeared. “Are you my fan?”

“You’re my idol! I want to be just like you!”

“Hmm hmm.”

He was an idol. Grid had been ignored by others for his whole life, so he had to be thrilled. He signed Coke’s piece of paper.

“Thank you.”

It was the moment when Coke, who would be included in the next 10 Rookies, became Grid’s real fan.

Meanwhile, Earl Ashur received the news about Dio.

“I can’t leave this alone.”

The embarrassment of his subordinate was the embarrassment of the owner! Earl Ashur became more furious at Grid and grasped his exact position with the magic spheres. Then he used Mass Teleport on him and his knights.

Grid stopped as he was leaving Patrian. He saw the light from the sky and Ashur appeared in front of him.

“In the end, you came here. Do you really want to die? Are you crazy?” Earl Ashur angrily asked Grid.

“I’m not like I was in the past. I’m no longer to be trifled with. Can you afford to go against me?” Grid asked arrogantly, and Earl Ashur scoffed.

“I’m the only great magician in the Eternal Kingdom, and one of the 10 great magicians on the continent.”

It wasn’t an exaggeration. Earl Ashur was the strongest man in the kingdom. That’s why he was appointed to the strategic point of Patrian.

“I’m not afraid of Pagma’s power. You aren’t Pagma. I have enough skills to get rid of you... Heok?”

Earl Ashur suddenly became shocked. It was because an overwhelming amount of energy was being emitted.

“I would like to compete with one of the 10 great magicians of the continent.”

It was the moment when Piaro’s competitive spirit was triggered.

“W-Who are you?”

Earl Ashur could no longer worry about Grid due to the unexpected emergence of a monster. It was putting the cart before the horse.

# Chapter 212

---

The Eternal Kingdom and Gauss Kingdom didn't have a good relationship. Over the past decades, there had been countless disputes and frequent bloodshed. The Eternal Kingdom used the guise of being a neutral kingdom to monopolize some of the Gauss Kingdom's products.

But the Gauss Kingdom wasn't able to induce conflict with the Eternal Kingdom. It was because the great magician Ashur was present at the border. Earl Ashur's power was like a nuclear warhead in modern society, so it was enough to suppress any conflicts.

But Piaro was more than that.

“W-Who are you?”

In the beginning, Earl Ashur had no interest in the beggar. No, he hadn't even noticed. He only paid attention to Grid. Now the beggar was emitting an energy that could reverse the situation. At this moment, Earl Ashur's five senses were only concentrated on the beggar. His original purpose of taking care of Grid disappeared.

‘Is this fear I'm feeling?’ Goosebumps covered his entire body. ‘There was a monster like this hiding in the kingdom?’

Earl Ashur gulped as Piaro asked for a duel.

“I want to experience the skills of one of the continent’s 10 great magicians.”

“I refuse. I have no reason to fight you, nor do I want to fight.”

Earl Ashur was adamant. But Piaro just pulled out his sword.

He was still obsessed with revenge, but he was also thirsty to fight against the strong. He was filled with a desire to become a sword saint. In particular, he was obsessed with Earl Ashur, because he had no experience fighting great magicians.

“You have no choice.”

‘Crazy bastard!’

This was his only chance to get revenge on Grid, who stole Pagma’s Rare Book, as well as his son’s crush. Once Grid arrived at Reidan and solidified his position as a duke, Earl Ashur would no longer be able to act against him. Later, he would be forced to bow before Duke Grid.

But at this critical junction, someone interfered. Earl Ashur’s anger soared.

“Who the hell are you?”

Earl Ashur knew about the group with the strange name of



Overgeared who were working with Grid. But there was no information about this beggar being part of Overgeared.

Where did this guy suddenly pop out from?

“Why are you with Grid? Are you his protector?”

“Protector? You’re mistaken. I don’t have anything to do with Duke Grid. This is my personal interest.”

In the first place, did Grid need his protection? It was clear that this person called Ashur didn’t know much about Grid.

“Anyway, you aren’t Duke Grid’s opponent. It is better for you to compete against me. Right now, I am in an incomplete condition.”

“This person!”

Earl Ashur sounded resentful towards Piaro, but his head was calm.

‘I must be calm. I shouldn’t turn him into my enemy.’

The rumors might be exaggerated, but Grid’s strength that he showed in Reinhardt wasn’t negligible. Grid was praised as the kingdom’s hero, so Earl Ashur had to fight seriously. After fighting with a much stronger opponent, could he take care of Grid?

‘It is impossible.’

The wisest choice was to let Grid go. But.

‘I can’t miss the chance for revenge that will never come again.’ Earl Ashur made a decision. ‘Create a space where Grid and I can fight.’

In other words, create a three dimensional space. Space magic was different from other magic, so the consumption of magic power was very extreme. Even Earl Ashur had to consume half of his magic power to create a space ward. But he was willing to do this to handle Grid.

“Buy me some time.”

An earl was only supposed to have five knights, but Earl Ashur had dozens of knights as a commander of a fortified city. He not only had great individual power, but his forces surpassed that of his title.

The elite knights got into formation at once. In that gap, Earl Ashur chanted a spell.

“Shake hands.”

Elite knights? They were nothing compared to the knights of the Saharan Empire, the strongest nation on the continent. Furthermore, Piaro was the captain of the Red Knights.

“It’s a waste of manpower.”

Piario’s missing sword shot straight ahead. A knight defended by raising his shield, but Piario predicted this.

“Supreme Swordsmanship 3rd style.”

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

It was comparable with the skill of a martial artist. Piario’s sword collided with the shield. The owner of the shield became a rag, while the other knights standing behind him spurted blood. It was the moment when the knights that Earl Ashur was proud of were knocked down by a single blow.

“Heok?”

“Defense is useless?”

The knights freaked out as it felt like they were hit by a tornado. Piario leapt lightly. He didn’t give the knights time to reform their formation.

“Kuaaaaak!”

He really was like a god. Piario defied the laws of gravity as he stood in the air and wielded his sword. The vulnerable knights

were unable to respond as the sword techniques fell from the sky. They couldn't use the advantage of numbers to threaten Piaro, so they could only defend.

However, Piaro's sword accelerated so quickly that it was difficult to chase with the eyes, making it virtually impossible to defend.

“Ugh!”

Jacks, the leader of the knights, swung his halberd and tried to counterattack in the gap when his men were being attacked. But it was difficult to hit, because Piaro rotated his body in the air at a dizzying speed.

“This monster!”

It was unbelievable. He completely avoided the large and wide attack of the halberd in the air? Was this old man a rumored assassin? Jacks continuously wielded his halberd. The opponent avoided it until the end. Then there was an unforgettable experience.

“What?”

The halberd started to be sucked into the rotating Piaro, as if it was attracted by a magnet. Jacks tried to withstand it with all his strength, but it was useless. He let go of the halberd.

Jjejejeok!

The halberd lost its master and shattered in the air.

“Keok.”

The falling fragments of the halberd aimed precisely at the knights on the ground. They were wearing expensive armor, but whether it was coincidence of Piaro’s intentions, the fragments only aimed at the gaps on the armor. The armor was useless and the knights instantly collapsed.

“M-Monster...!”

Jacks couldn’t close his mouth. Earl Ashur was even more surprised.

‘They couldn’t last?’

One minute. That was the amount of time required to generate the ward. The 23 knights couldn’t withstand that short amount of time.

Cheok.

At last, Piaro landed on the ground and stepped forward, ignoring Jacks. He neared Earl Ashur.

“In the end, we have to fight?” Earl Ashur screamed at Piaro. “That’s right! Okay! Let’s try it once!”

It seemed he couldn’t avoid the fight. Earl Ashur pulled out a staff that was 50 cm in length. Most magicians used orbs due to the versatility of the orb that could store magic. However, Earl Ashur was fast in magic casting, so he used a staff that amplified magic.

“Haste!”

One of the most important elements in a magic battle was speed. The opponent must hit before the magician finished casting a spell, and the magician must finish casting a spell before allowing an attack. Earl Ashur quickly increased his movement speed with Haste and widened the distance with Piaro.

He already finished casting the next spell.

“Orion’s Illusion!”

It was an illusion technique. Earl Ashur created five clones of himself and once again opened up the distance while Piaro was searching for the real body. Next was debuff magic.

“Soul Weakness!”

Piaro’s body became as sticky as oil and unpleasant magic power suppressed him.

“Disgusting.”

Piario's body lost its swiftness, but he bent like a bow and shot forward like a thunderbolt. He maximized his body's ability to increase speed, offsetting the effect of the debuff.

‘Did he resist? My magic? No, it's impossible.’

Earl Ashur's eyes widened as he faced Piario. But he tried to remain calm and finished casting the magic spell.

“Ice Tornado!”

It was a mixture of two A-grade spells with different attributes, and exerted more power than an A-grade spell. It was still significantly less powerful than S-grade magic, so why did he use it?

Even a great magician couldn't cast S-grade spells in an instant. Using S-grade magic without precautionary measures against a person like Piario was close to suicide.

Jjejejejeok!

Piario's body froze as he approached Earl Ashur. Earl Ashur's magic power exceeded common sense, so there was no one who wouldn't be frozen.

‘This guy won’t die like this.’

Earl Ashur believed that Piaro would recover within five seconds and started to chant a S-grade spell in that gap. However, he underestimated Piaro.

Chaaeng!

“...!”

Earl Ashur was shocked. An intangible energy was felt from the frost and it shattered before even a few words could be chanted?

“You’ve already recovered?”

It was too fast to use S-grade magic. He had to quickly accumulate more damage using A-grade spells. He belatedly responded to Piaro’s sword that was flying.

“Shield!”

It was the manifestation of basic defensive magic that even beginners could use.

“Great magic power.”



Piario admired Ashur, who absorbed most of the damage with his shield. However, he continued to wield his sword. Earl Ashur stood firm. He tried to avoid as much damage as possible by relying on the previously activated Haste, while minimizing the actual damage using Shield.

Despite the continuous wounds he kept receiving, he used Shield while chanting S-grade magic in his head. Earl Ashur's concentration was truly worthy of respect.

“Yes!”

Piario was swinging his sword when he suddenly felt alarmed. He detected a strong magic power and used the Supreme Swordsmanship 5th style, a defense technique.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

Something intangible shot out of Earl Ashur the moment the spell was completed.

“Fluid Escape.”

Fluid Escape was a spell that separated the soul and body of the caster for three seconds. The caster could control the soul that emerged from the body, while the body became immune to all damage.

Jeeeong!

Earl Ashur's body wasn't damaged at all despite being hit.

'This is the power of Fluid Escape!'

Earl Ashur's soul passed through Piaro's body and dealt damage in proportion to his magic power.

"Kuk!"

Blood poured from Piaro.

"I can't tangle with this monster forever."

Earl Ashur's soul headed towards Grid, who was watching the battle with folded arms. He didn't give up on his original goal of aiming for Grid.

"Die!"

Kwaaaang!

Earl Ashur's soul went through the grid.

[You have suffered 40,985 damage.]

[You have received catastrophic damage all at once, and your spirit can't endure it.]

[You have resisted.]

Grid was unprepared for the damage and suffered. The soul's movement speed was so remarkable that the pavranium responded late. It was virtually impossible for a human to perceive it. Ashur's soul returned to his body.

“You deceived me!”

Piario suffered great damage to his pride and wielded his sword, but there was a powerful shockwave as soon as the soul returned to the body. Piario knew this fact, but he was confident that he could neutralize it with his blade.

However, Earl Ashur's magic power couldn't be pierced by the sword.

Peeng!

“This...!”

Piario was pushed back by the shockwave. While he was upset, Earl Ashur aimed at Grid.

“This is the end!”

Finally, his grudge would be repaid. Earl Ashur was determined to kill Grid while Grid was suffering from great damage and not in the right mindset. But what was this? Grid moved smoothly and Earl Ashur's vision was covered with blue-white light.

“Kuaaaaak!”

Earl Ashur screamed at the unexpected attack. He suffered cumulative damage when reciting the S-grade magic, so he easily fell down.

Grid pointed Failure at him and said, “Beg me, Duke Grid, for your life.”

“W-What...!”

Grid's sword damage was as powerful as Piaro's. No, maybe even more than that. Earl Ashur thought it was ridiculous.

# Chapter 213

---

‘He’s this strong?’

Earl Ashur was exposed to news about Grid’s actions in Reinhardt. The strongest golem army, that hundreds of thousands of troops couldn’t go against, was cut like carrots. But weren’t rumors always exaggerated?

During Grid’s novice adventurer days. Earl Ashur remembered that he had no talent and was a fool, so he had no choice but to laugh at the rumors. Grid might have the ability of a legend, but it was dulled because he couldn’t use it properly. The nobles must’ve intentionally inflated the rumors in order to boost the morale of the people.

But that wasn’t it. Now Grid was the hero in the rumors. At that moment, Earl Ashur’s memories of the beginner Grid were completely blown away. His narrow perception disappeared and he started to perceive the current Grid correctly.

‘Indeed, this is an absolute presence.’

The two eyes reminiscent of rotten fish. The mean eyes when facing the weak now shone as they contemplated the world in a much stronger face. The weak body that always shrank back. The pathetic flesh that ran away when hunting orcs and was killed by the orc captain, it was now standing firmly like a mountain.

That disgusting face. He didn’t care about how he looked and was

always jealous of others. That horrible face now emitted a dignity that charmed all the people of the kingdom.

‘Is it possible for a person to change this way...?’

“You want me to beg for my life?”

Earl Ashur quietly observed Grid and the blue sword in his hand. The sword gleaming with a white light was something that could only be seen in legends. Earl Ashur felt a fear of death. His instincts were shouting at him to succumb to Grid.

This was the effect of Grid’s high dignity stat. However, Earl Ashur had the highest pride as the strongest person in the Eternal Kingdom and a great magician, so he didn’t give in easily.

“I’d rather die.”

He hadn’t been sure Pagma’s Rare Book actually existed.

Earl Ashur decided to use Grid, who was easy to take advantage of. However, he gave reasonable compensation and didn’t put a time limit on the quest. It was a quest he seriously entrusted to Grid, because he believed in Grid’s inherent tenacity. Did he give a novice adventurer the quest in an attempt to trick him?

No, it was Grid who abandoned the faith first. Grid was blinded by greed after discovering Pagma’s Rare Book and broke the promise, trying to take the book for himself.

‘That wasn’t all.’

His precious son Bland had been in love with Irene for many years. The woman who seemed likely to marry Bland had been taken away by Grid. It was better to choose death than to submit to Grid, who wasn’t just his enemy, but his son’s enemy as well.

Grid was baffled as he watched Earl Ashur tightly close his eyes.

‘He really wants me to kill him?’

Grid had hated Earl Ashur since he was killed. But it was his choice to quickly find Pagma’s Rare Book without understanding the subject. He wasn’t forced by Earl Ashur. Nevertheless, whenever he suffered a trial, he blamed everything on Earl Ashur.

His habit of blaming others was the problem. Strictly speaking, there was no reason for Grid to resent Earl Ashur. If Pagma’s Rare Book hadn’t existed, Grid wouldn’t have found it or turned into Pagma’s Descendant.

As a result, Earl Ashur was Grid’s benefactor. Of course, that was just the result, and there was no need for Grid to feel gratitude. It was through Grid’s willpower that he found Pagma’s Rare Book and became Pagma’s Descendant. It was due to Grid’s own efforts that he could grow until now, and it wasn’t thanks to Earl Ashur.

Anyway, this was the conclusion.

‘I have overwhelmed him but... Looking at this, I don’t need to kill him.’

Grid still didn’t like Earl Ashur. In fact, he had the experience of being murdered by Earl Ashur’s knights, and he had been directly threatened with death by Earl Ashur, so it wasn’t easy to feel forgiveness.

But it wasn’t enough to feel the urge to murder him. His conscience didn’t allow him to.

“Sigh, okay. Forget it.”

“...?” Earl Ashur was confused as Grid sighed and took back his sword. “I tried to kill you. But you will spare me?”

Earl Ashur’s strength transcended his title, but he was still an earl. Grid was a duke, but Earl Ashur treated him badly and even tried to kill him because of a grudge of the past. Now that he discovered that Grid was really qualified to be a duke, Earl Ashur was aware that he committed a crime. He thought it was natural to be executed, so he couldn’t accept this.

“Is there something you will demand separately of me?”

Earl Ashur eyed Grid warily.



‘I had mercy on him, yet he’s still doubting me?’ Grid’s heart beat faster. The Grid of the past would’ve been swept away by his emotions and spoken nonsense. ‘It’s better to ask for something in exchange for saving him.’

Grid had learned to take advantage of certain situations. He had learned it by watching Lael for three months. What could he get from Earl Ashur?

Grid thought about it.

‘Money? Jewelry? Land? Items?’

He was greedy. As Grid was deeply troubled about what he should ask for, Lael sent him a whisper.

–Grid, everyone has arrived in Reidan except for Euphemina. When are you going to arrive?

–I think it will take three more days.

–Three days? What is taking so long? Can’t you come quickly if you use Fly? Come quickly. There is a mountain of work to do.

–I have a companion. But my companion doesn’t want to ride a carriage, so we’re walking. Just handle things for a few days.

–Companion...? Who are you talking about?

–You’ll see when you meet him. It is good that you got in touch with me. I actually...

Grid briefly explained to Lauel about the relationship between him and Earl Ashur, as well as the current situation.

–...In these circumstances, what should I ask from Earl Ashur?

–Earl Ashur...

As one of the 10 great magicians on the continent, Earl Ashur was a huge celebrity. Lauel already knew about him, so he thought carefully before asking.

–There is a story I’ve heard from Vantner. I heard he caused a disturbance along with Earl Ashur’s son on the day of your wedding to Irene?

–Really? I didn’t know. I couldn’t pay attention to anything else on that day.

–Pay attention to him. Ask Earl Ashur to give you his son.

–Eh? What are you saying?

Lauel clearly predicted that Grid wouldn’t understand and added a detailed explanation.

–Earl Ashur is famous for his love for his son. If you keep his son, he won't be able to go against you again and he will have to move according to your will. Earl Ashur's mighty power will surely help one day.

‘What a great guy.’

Lauel looked at benefits rather than money, so Grid thought he was truly great. One day he would become smart like Lauel. A wicked smile appeared on Grid's face and Earl Ashur's anxiety was heightened.

Then Grid demanded, “Give me your son.”

“What...?” It was like a bolt out of the blue to Earl Ashur. He absolutely couldn't accept it. “You mean to take my son hostage!”

The 48 year old Earl Ashur was still young and beautiful. His appearance was like the protagonist of a manhwa, and he had been very popular since childhood. When he was a young man and still active among the social circles, dozens of women clung to him.

But Earl Ashur only loved one woman. She wasn't beautiful, but Earl Ashur fell for her warm-heartedness. Their marriage was successful. They had two sons and lived happily.

It was a short moment of happiness.

Unfortunately, Earl Ashur's wife suffered from a terminal illness and died at a young age. Earl Ashur tasted the pain of his heart breaking. However, he didn't have time to mourn. He had an obligation to defend the kingdom and had to take care of his two young sons.

Earl Ashur was faithful to his duties and raised his sons at the same time. His first son became a royal mage, and his second son became a magic swordsman because he showed talent in both magic and swordsmanship. Earl Ashur was able to fill the blank spot left by his wife with his pride for his two sons.

But the heavens were too harsh on Earl Ashur.

Just two years ago. His first son went on a monster conquest and died. After that, Earl Ashur's nature became somewhat strange. His gentleness disappeared. However, he still cared about his remaining son. Bland was his only blood, and Earl Ashur cherished him more than his own life.

"My flesh and soul might burn, but I will never sell my son. Just kill me."

'Stubborn...'

What should he do? Grid wasn't smart, so the only method he could come up with was to use force. But this problem didn't need to be resolved with force.

“I will follow you.”

A blond man appeared while Grid was feeling confused. The person was Bland.

“Why are you...!?”

Bland ignored the panicked Earl Ashur and bowed before Grid. “I, Bland de Ian, son of Earl Ashur, greet Duke Grid, the great hero of this kingdom.”

Bland and Grid had dueled once over Irene. But in the end, Bland was defeated and kicked out from the wedding. After that, he lived in pain for a while, but now he was determined.

“I will go to Reidan according to Duke Grid’s will.”

It was the only way to save his father. Earl Ashur’s face turned white.

“Bland! Why are you deciding this by yourself?”

Grid was the rival who deprived Bland of his beloved. Earl Ashur couldn’t tolerate his son being Grid’s hostage. He started to gather magic power in his pained body.

“I will kill you and give your soul to God Yatan if you touch one hair on my son!”

Bland came forward before Grid could frown. He fell to his knees.

“Duke Grid, my father lost his temper because he cares too much about me. Please show mercy one more time.”

“B-Bland...”

He was begging to his rival because of his father! Earl Ashur was shocked by causing more humiliation to his son and fell silent. Then Bland reassured him. “Father, I will go and study under Duke Grid. Please trust in your son and wait for me to return. Don’t skip any meals.”

“Ugh...”

Earl Ashur was frustrated. His eyes had been clouded by his grudge, and now his son was taken as a hostage. Grid placed a hand on his shoulder.

“Earl Ashur, don’t worry. I will look after your son.”

Ssik.

Wasn’t he a demon? He could smile brightly and enjoy the pain and sorrows of others. To Earl Ashur, Grid didn’t look like a human. However, Grid was obviously a human.

‘Please don’t overdo it. I won’t eat your son.’

Grid inwardly spoke before glancing at Piaro and Bland.

“Let’s go.”

After a few moments. The only thing left was a disastrous scene where Earl Ashur looked completely insane and the wounded knights looked wretched.

# Chapter 214

---

Grid and Piaro walked alongside each other, while Bland awkwardly followed behind. Grid looked at Piaro to verify.

“How was it? The skills of one of the 10 great magicians on the continent?”

“It was more than I expected. He was mentally strong enough to withstand my oppression. If he used an orb as a weapon, it would’ve been a close fight.”

For magicians, the staff was a weapon with the concept of high risk and high return. There was no magic storage function, so its stability was poor, but the magic amplification rate was so high that it was possible to use a powerful one-shot.

Most magicians were burdened by the high risk and turned away from the staff, but Earl Ashur had overpowering magic casting speed. Unlike regular magicians, he used a staff as a weapon, and that was a weakness when dealing with someone strong like Piaro today. He was defeated before he could use magic in front of Piaro.

‘Ashur is really strong.’

Grid didn’t show it, but he was terrified when hit by Ashur’s Fluid Escape.

He wore the Armor of Holy Light made out of the god mineral



adamantium by the legendary blacksmith Pagma. The legendary item had the effect of ‘50% reduction in magic damage,’ so he was surprised that he suffered 40,000 damage from a single strike.

‘Ashur showed a more powerful damage than the other boss monsters I have come against...’

It was overwhelming. Grid received so much damage, while Piaro survived Earl Ashur’s attack without any damage.

‘Did he temporarily raise his defense through the operation of qi?’

Grid was reminded of body protection qi from martial arts.

“How strong is Asmophel that you can’t get revenge by yourself?”

Piario grimaced as he heard the dirty name. “It’s difficult to reach him, rather than him being strong. There is nobody who doesn’t know my face in the empire. If I step foot in the empire, I will die immediately.”

“Stop complaining. Who can kill you so easily? Even if you’re besieged, can’t you use Fated to Perish to knock them down? You don’t have to worry if you fought like you did against Ashur.”

“If it was so simple, would I be hiding for the past two years? You have no idea of the power of the empire.”

Piaro suddenly stopped.

“What’s going on?”

“A monster.”

“Monster?”

After escaping from the thick forest, Grid turned his gaze in the direction Piaro was indicating. An endless expanse of desert stretched out before them.

“I don’t even see an ant, let alone a monster?”

Piaro spoke briefly towards Grid, who was trying to see what was visible.

“Below.”

“Eh?”

There was a subtle vibration from the ground. Grid checked the sand and moved as he realized his mistake.

Kwaang!

In the place where Grid were just standing, a huge elongated creature came up. It was a centipede. An extra large centipede that had lived for thousands of years.

Kiyaaak!

“Ugh.”

The length of the body was well over 10m, and the hundreds of legs were as big as human limbs. They wriggled in a disgusting manner. Grid felt disgusted by the creature that had a yellow liquid pouring from it and blocked his nose.

“You’re squeamish like a girl.”

“What does being a man or woman have to do with anything? Dammit.”

This was an insect. It was the first time he saw such a big one. It was much bigger than the spiders in Kesan Canyon. Grid jumped and cut down at the centipede. The surface of the centipede was very hard. It wasn’t easily destroyed by the +9 Failure, an absolute weapon. It was a defense comparable to the ancient weapon.

‘Is it a monster that specializes in defense?’

The determined Grid didn’t consider a counterattack and kept striking. However, the centipede was surprisingly agile. It quickly moved its massive body and attacked.

[You have suffered 6,300 damage.]

“What?”

It was safe to say that this was the first time Grid suffered so much damage from a normal monster after wearing the Holy Light set, the strongest armor currently in existence. A very surprised Grid corrected his posture. He finally took the battle seriously.

But the desert terrain hindered him.

“Che.”

Grid’s stride was off due to the thick sand, leading to a weakening of his grip. A normal person would’ve suffered a great setback, but this was Grid.

“Fly!”

He used the magic possessed by Braham’s Boots to fly into the sky and strike the centipede’s head. However, the counterattack wasn’t formidable enough. Grid was pushed back and winced. In the meantime, another centipede emerged from the ground and Grid was pincer attacked by two enemies.

Piario tried to help, but suddenly stopped. He carefully observed and advised Grid.

“When attacking in any situation, place weight on the end of your sword. It is the basics even when flying through the air. Mobilize not just your limbs, but the muscles in your neck, and then transfer your weight to the end of your sword. You are too distracted to do the basic movements. Organic movements are needed to get the most out of your power. But before that, fix the habit of your head first...”

‘What is he saying?’

Grid was disturbed by Piaro while fighting the two centipedes. It was impossible for him to understand what Piaro was talking about, so he was confused.

‘I’m playing right now, so why is he acting like this is a sword dojo?’

In the first place, he didn’t need it. He ignored the words of the best swordsman pouring into his ears and leaned on his skills, as he always did.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship, Link!”

The dozens of blue-white energy blades fell and shattered the two centipedes.

[The giant worm has been destroyed.]

[2,330,900 experience has been acquired.]

[The giant worm has been destroyed.]

[2,340,100 experience has been acquired.]

[The giant worm's leg has been acquired.]

The giant worms gave a huge amount of experience. Grid was surprised and confirmed the details of the giant worm.

[Giant Worm]

Level: 330

A worm that lives in the western part of the Eternal Kingdom. It dwells deep in the earth, and once it detects the presence of creatures, it will emerge through the ground and attack. It is a very common species in the western desert.

Some scholars speculate that they can be used as medicines, but in fact, they have no nutritional value.

‘Level 330? A monster of this level is a common worm?’

There were such strong monsters in the western part of the Eternal Kingdom, but very few users knew about it. Most users

weren't able to advance to the west because they couldn't break through the habitat of the twin ogres, so information was scarce.

‘The western part is the most difficult area in the Eternal Kingdom. So when creating a character, there are no starting villages in the west.

This was good news. Wasn't Reidan located at the end of the western area? There was a possibility that it was inhabited by level 400 monsters. Grid and the Overgeared Guild could hunt the strongest monsters, which meant they could grow quickly.

But if he thought about it.

‘No, wait. Then isn't it impossible for beginner or mid level users to come to Reidan?’

If there was no influx of users in Reidan, Grid would have to grow the economy solely based on NPCs. It was the worst. There was a setback in his plan to get rich from hundreds of thousands of people.

“Dammit...” Grid frowned and cursed. Then another giant worm popped up. “Ah, I don't know.”

Grid didn't panic. He carelessly thought that Lael would take care of everything and concentrated on the monsters in front of him.

‘This is an opportunity to raise my level.’

After the reunion with Euphemina, Grid hadn’t been able to hunt for a while due to large and small incidents. His level was stagnant at 270, so he was delighted to raise it by hunting these chunks of experience.

“I will begin in earnest.”

Grid checked his status window. At the time of the National Competition, he was level 253 and had 230 stat points. Now he was level 270 and had 400 stat points.

“Invest all points in agility.”

He referenced Piaro’s stats.

[Agility has permanently increased by 400.]

His agility rose by 400. In other words, Grid had elevated his agility by 40 levels and his body felt completely lighter. He started to hunt the giant worms at a quick pace compared to the past.

Piario remained on the ground and constantly advised Grid in the sky.

“If you concentrate more strength in your thighs and buttocks, then your upper body’s forward speed will increase. This means



that the speed of your sword will increase. In addition, it is better not to think about the direction of the swing and just do it naturally.”

‘Who cares about my thighs? And what is this nonsense about telling me not to think? Am I Jude?’

The teachings of a great swordsman could increase even the level of a useless knight. In particular, Piaro was able to teach because he mastered the Empire’s Military Tactics and had experience commanding the Red Knights. There were many people who would pay money to receive his teachings.

Grid was receiving it for free, so it was like winning the lottery. It was an opportunity to dramatically increase his so-called ‘control.’ But he didn’t know how to appreciate it and found the advice jarring.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship, Kill!”

Kiyaaaaak!

[The giant worm has been destroyed.]

[2,339,500 experience has been acquired.]

“Puhahat! I hope I will level up today?”

Grid's experience gauge had accumulated a lot before the golem invasion, so it was already over 70%. He used his skills and enthusiastically killed the giant worm. On the other hand, Piaro was curious. It was because Grid's abilities didn't improve, despite his teachings.

‘Why?’

Piaro thought that Grid was an extraordinary and clever person. The evidence was that he didn't immediately execute Earl Ashur, taking his son as hostage instead in order to set foot on the political stage.

‘A person that smart should be able to understand my teachings.’

So why didn't his skills improve? Piaro was puzzled and came to a conclusion.

‘Pride.’

As Pagma's Descendant, Grid wanted to refuse the teachings of people other than Pagma.

‘He would be much stronger if he could take advantage of his physical abilities.’

If Grid's basics were tightened up, he would be a great sparring opponent. But it wasn't easy.

‘Hmm?’

Piario’s gaze suddenly shifted to Bland. Bland was struggling alone in the distance against a giant worm. However, his skills had risen dramatically compared to when he hunted the horned goblins a few hours ago. He had absorbed Piario’s teachings towards Grid.

‘Indeed, a lion’s cub.’

A rare talent. He was a genius who inherited his father’s magic power and a talent in swordsmanship. Piario thought that he should teach Bland well in the several days before they arrived in Reidan.

\*\*\*

[Unified Rankings]

1st. Kraugel – White Swordsman.

2nd. Zibal – Debirion’s Envoy

3rd. Chris – Destruction Warrior

‘Chris finally got his third advancement class. Destruction Warrior, he chose the class that fit his alignment the best. He

would've received it a little quicker if it wasn't for the golem army.'

It was Kraugel's habit to check the rankings from time to time. Looking at the trends of those pursuing him was the basics.

"Now then."

He had been hunting for 15 hours without stopping, so he started sorting the items in his full inventory. He calculated the items that weren't priced yet, the items needed for production and quests, the remaining junk items, and if he could get more from selling them to an NPC or user.

After a while.

Kraugel finished organizing his items and rose from this spot. Then he went through his skills list and made plans.

'I have raised the skill level of the two sword style to intermediate, so I should challenge it again.'

Kraugel, who chose the third class of White Swordsman, had crossed from the West to the East Continent, but he couldn't fully capture it. He struggled against the high barrier of the East Continent for a while, and got new titles and steadily raised his level, becoming even stronger.

His next goal was to attack the eastern and southern parts of the

Saharan Empire, as well as the labyrinths in Orias, and the western part of the Eternal Kingdom. After staying in the West Continent for awhile, he would once again challenge the uncharted land of the East Continent.

Kraugel was a true gamer and the 1st ranked user, playing the game with joy and thorough planning.

It was a lot different from someone else.

# Chapter 215

---

Reidan was a three or four days' walk away from Patrian. However, Grid's party encountered monsters all the time. They didn't avoid it, so their journey was delayed several times.

'The experience is really good.'

It had been six days since leaving Patrian.

Meanwhile, Grid hunted the strongest monsters in the west and reached level 273. In addition, his experience gauge was at 60%. It was a stunning level-up speed that users couldn't dream of matching, simply due to the fact that he leveled up every two days.

Grid didn't know this, but even Kraugel wasn't able to level up as quickly as Grid currently was when he was level 270.

'I will be level 275 by the time I reach Reidan,' Grid excitedly thought to himself. Even the top rankers would find it hard to hunt these western monsters, so he was proud of his items and his skills.

'This game is truly about items. Control? That was something that only losers who didn't have good items worried about. Puhahat!'

In the first place, control was a means used by the weak to try and win against the strong. He didn't need control if he had

overwhelming power. Grid had such a narrow mindset ever since his success in the Malacus raid. He had no doubts that items were the best.

But that firm belief of Grid's was about to be shaken.

\*\*\*

“Pant pant... Wow, this is really dirty. The giant worms before were just exercise.”

Grid was exhausted as he walked through the vast desert towards Reidan. Thanks to his passive resistance, he didn't get heat stroke. However, the heat was enough to make his stamina fall faster than usual. Moreover, he couldn't adapt to the desert terrain.

On the other hand, the monsters kept becoming stronger and stronger. Four basilisks, monsters that were treated as boss-grade monsters in the north, appeared before Grid. Grid succeeded in unleashing all sorts of skills against the basilisks, but he was pincer attacked by the monsters and faced a crisis.

“Ah, really! Let me take a break!”

He was at his wit's end. His control was immature so he constantly allowed the monsters to attack him, so even the best armor couldn't endure and he lost health. In the situation, it wouldn't be strange if his invincible passive was activated.

‘Even Braham’s golem army wouldn’t be able to exert much power against the monsters here.’

The western monsters were strong and numerous. It was the reason why the kingdom chose to let the giant worms spread instead of subjugating them.

‘It is impossible for the kingdom to manage the west properly. So the king sent me here.’

It was a correct guess. King Wiesbaden wished for Grid to cleanse the west that had become barren because of the mighty monsters, giving him Reidan. It showed absolute confidence in Grid. However, Grid thought he was used by the king and couldn’t help cursing.

Kiyaaaaak!

As Grid cursed the king, a massive desert toad stretched out its tongue, its sticky mucus flopping out from its mouth and covering Grid’s body. This mucus was a type of poison that paralyzed the target in an instant. However...

[You have resisted.]

Grid resisted and fought back. The +9 Failure passed through the toad’s fat belly. However, the western monsters were so weak to die from one of Grid’s blows. The toad moved its tongue like a whip for a counterattack.



‘Damn!’

Grid’s reaction was too late as he was buried deep in the toad’s stomach. Ku tang tang tang!

Grid was stronger than steel and full of resilience, but he was struck in the head and fell. Other monsters swarmed to his fallen body.

“Kuak...! Transcend and Transcended Link’s cooldown time isn’t over!” Grid tended to depend on skills as he lacked control, but there was a fatal weakness. If the skills weren’t available due to the cooldown time, he couldn’t help being weak. “Piaro! Help me... Eh?”

In the end, Grid tried to rely on Piaro. However, he was surprised. It was because Bland started moving. Grid hadn’t been paying any attention during the last six days, but Bland had become extremely strong during that short period.

‘What is this all of a sudden?’

This was the person who struggled against the level 280 horned goblins only six days ago. But now he was fighting one-on-one with the western monsters that were at least 50 levels higher than him, so he had truly developed.

‘Surely, it isn’t a bug...’

What was the secret behind this sudden growth? Grid questioned as he moved to the rear after Bland pulled aggro. Then he equipped the Great Lord's Sword and examined Bland.

Name: Bland

Age: 25 Gender: Male

Occupation: Magic Swordsman

Title: Great Magician's Son

He has inherited the magical talents of his father, Earl Ashur. Receive a bonus to his magic casting speed and mana regeneration speed. Every time his level increased, his intelligence will increase significantly.

Title: Marquis Steim's Disciple

He once learned swordsmanship from Marquis Steim, a swordsman of the north. When a blade type weapon is equipped, attack power will increase by 20% and attack speed by 10%.

Level: 255

Strength: 1,331/1,990 Stamina: 420/1,030

Agility: 519/1,401 Intelligence: 2,540/4,550

Charm: 212/800

Skills: Northern Swordsmanship (B), Spell Casting Acceleration (S), Magic Power Concentration (S), 9 C-grade Spells, 5 B-grade spells, 2 A-grade spells.

\* Click on the details to examine the spells that the target has currently acquired.

Bland. In his childhood and adolescence, he studied magic under his father and swordsmanship under Marquis Steim. He followed the typical elite course, and was a young genius considered to be the cornerstone of the Eternal Kingdom in the future.

‘There is nothing special?’

Grid had observed Bland’s details shortly after obtaining him as a hostage. The difference between then and now was only five levels, and a small rise in stats.

‘Then why did he become so much stronger?’

Grid was curious.

“That’s it. You understood correctly. You shouldn’t play around

when holding a sword in your hand. Rather than avoiding the enemy's attacks, it is better to aim for defense or a counterattack. Even if your opponent is stronger than you, they will be easier to defeat if you keep moving your sword."

Piario was talking to Bland. Then Grid realized.

'It is thanks to Piario's teachings!'

He might be a great swordsman, but was it possible for a person to grow so quickly just from his advice? Grid started to observe Piario and Bland. Unlike before, he didn't go ahead alone and hunted monsters near them.

"You are too tied up with being a magic swordsman. Magic casting and swordsmanship can't be done at the same time, so a gap will occur. However, this doesn't mean you should throw away magic. You have more talent in magic than in the sword, so if you are facing a stronger enemy, you should concentrate on your magic. Your swordsmanship is ideal for minimal defense.

Piario would give advice and Bland would apply the teachings in real time whenever a monster appeared. Bland's rapid growth had a big impact on Grid. Learning how to fight properly. In other words, the power of control was more than he thought possible.

'...If I combine control with items, how much stronger can I become?'

Grid finally became aware of it. He was able to understand that he would reach his limits in the future if he just relied on his items. In the end, he asked Piaro, “Please teach me as well.”

“Didn’t you say that there was no need before?”

“Originally, a person’s mind is flexible. Now I want to learn from you.”

‘Is he because he can no longer sit back and watch Bland grow alone? Did he lose his confidence as Pagma’s Descendant?’

Piario was able to understand that Grid was an unprincipled person. He was the type of person that Piario disliked. But Piario readily accepted Grid’s request. It was in the hope that he could enhance his strength by raising Grid’s.

Piario’s frozen mind that was obsessed with revenge was slowly reviving as he met Grid and Bland. It was a small but significant change.

After that.

“Don’t move your head. How many times do I have to tell you?”

“Isn’t it natural to shake my head every time I move? How can I control my body?”

“Try to make an effort. Think while you are fighting. And don’t rely on Fly. Warriors must become accustomed to various terrains, so fighting in the desert will be a valuable experience for you.”

“How can I wield my sword when my feet are buried in the sand?”

“Put your weight on the tip of your sword, not your feet.”

“So how do I do that?”

“... How many times do I need to explain that you have to move your muscles well?”

“No, how do I move my muscles?”

“ ... ”

The reason why Bland could grow rapidly was that he was a genius. The best teacher and best disciple met, so the synergy exploded. But Grid was a stupid person. It wasn’t easy for even a great swordsman to teach him.

Piario suffered as he taught Grid, who lacked comprehension and was slow to learn. He started to feel pain.

‘I thought he was a smart person, but that isn’t it...’

How could such a stupid person have gained Pagma's power and inheritance? Piaro wondered. He honestly wanted to give up on teaching Grid. However, he couldn't take back his words so he kept teaching Grid.

Grid grumbled that it was difficult and complex, but he did his best to follow the teachings. Grid repeated this in the three days before arrived at Reidan and finally improved.

“He is a little bit ordinary now.”

Grid was able to build up the basic skills of a swordsman. This was the limit of his capabilities and of a great swordsman's teaching ability.

‘I don't think it is possible for Grid to grow beyond this.’

Piario was overwhelmed with a sense of defeat. Then Grid's party arrived at Reidan.

# Chapter 216

---

Nine days ago.

The Overgeared members utilized the excellent transportation method of carriages and arrived in Reidan ahead of Grid, but they tasted huge disappointment.

The best city in the west, Reidan! According to the map, it was the second largest city of the Eternal Kingdom. The Overgeared members were full of expectations, but they were baffled because it looked more like a ruin.

“What happened here?”

“Wow, there is nothing big in the city.”

“The shops are closed, the doors broken and the poor are on the street...”

“The rice fields are like a wasteland.”

“In the first place, doesn’t the population seem too small?”

Huroi, Lauel, and Faker remained calm while the guild members were making a disturbance. They looked over Reidan because bringing up its information.



Name: Reidan

Size: Big City

Ruler: Grid (Duke of the Eternal Kingdom. Master of the Overgeared Guild)

Administrator: Arik (C-grade administrative ability)

\* The higher the administrative ability of the administrator, the higher the overall development of the estate.

Affiliation: The Eternal Kingdom

Population: NPCs – 20,551. Players – 0.

Troops: Knights – 2 (Huroi, Lauel).

Soldiers – 141

Security: 5/100

\* The state of security is the worst. It isn't unusual if the people turn into a mob straight away. Gangsters and monsters will often pop up near the village.

\* Security will increase hourly in proportion to the number of

soldiers.

\* People jobs and food for a policing activity is not available, even if the police do not rise.

Internal Affairs: 169/4,500

\* Increasing the number of shopping malls, public cultural facilities and buildings will increase the internal affairs number.

Foreign Affairs: The Butin Barony in the Saharan Empire.

Forces hostile to the ruler: Yatan Church.

Forces hostile to your affiliated groups: Gauss Kingdom, Luvia Principality.

Specialties: None.

Distinguished Figure: None.

“The situation isn’t as good as I expected.”

“It seems like it.”

While moving from Winston to Reidan, the guild members were attracted to the monsters of the west and devoted themselves to

hunting. They waited for monsters to attack the moving carriage, then quickly hunted them for experience. Therefore, they thought the west was a blessed land.

But Huroi, Lauel, and Faker thought that the strong monsters in the west were a negative point. The monsters were so strong that the accessibility of general users was low, and the area would be difficult to manage. Now the reality they faced was worse than their expectations.

“A city that can accommodate over 500,000 people only has a population of 20,000...”

“Furthermore, there are no users.”

“The biggest priority right now is to pay the people raise the security level.”

The Overgeared Guild currently had 5 million gold in funds. 5 million gold. While that amount of gold might sound large for a single person, it wasn't enough to fund a big city. Not only that, 5 million gold didn't even seem like enough to develop an empty, desolate city.

Now they had to pay expenses to raise the goodwill of the people? Was it even possible to produce food in this city in the first place? It wasn't possible to even make barley bread. It was inevitable that they would have to import ingredients, but merchants were aware of the situation and wouldn't come to Reidan.

‘Considering the transportation cost...’

Lauel calculated that he had to set a minimum of 3 silver for one meal. If it was 20,000 people, he would have to pay 600 gold. This was one meal. It was ridiculous to spend hundreds of thousands of gold on meals until a fundamental solution was set up.

But Lauel couldn't alienate the people. Did he feel compassion when seeing their skinny selves? No. That was irrelevant. People were the national power. He needed to restore them first, then there would be a rise in security and labor. There was no other choice.

“After making the people useful, set them to clearing the fields.”

“But doesn't the lord have to give permission?”

Huroi was cautious. He knew that restoring the people was the most pressing issue, but he wondered if Grid would understand. Grid would wonder why they were wasting money on people's meals.

Huroi spoke to the worried Lauel,

“South Korean doesn't give up on making hot pepper paste just because of worms. That is a saying in South Korea.”

This was the right choice, even if it was against Grid's will. This was Chief Lauel's conviction to grow the Overgeared Guild.

Hoeweever, the saying was too provocative.

Huroi thought about the saying that Lauel mentioned and became indignant, “Don’t compare My Lord to measly worms!”

“Ah no, that’s not what I meant.”

Lauel sweated profusely as he tried to soothe Huroi. On the other hand, Faker disappeared from next to the two men, moving through the yellow dust before arriving at the castle.

“Why didn’t you move quickly after hearing that the new lord’s men had arrived? Your greeting is late!”

“T-That... I was afraid that I would be stoned by the people if I left the castle and that made me late.”

“Pathetic guy. You are armed with sword and armor, but are afraid of rocks? What a worthless person. Tsk tsk.”

A fat, middle-aged man hurried to the entrance of the castle with his soldiers. This greasy man’s name was Arik, the administrator of Reidan. He was a baronet and often received treatment as a noble.

Faker pointed his dagger at Arik without hesitation.

“Hiik!”

Arik exclaimed as he saw the shadows in the yellow dust.

“W-Who are you?”

Faker replied in a cold voice, “A person with a lot of questions for you.”

“W-What...? Kiyaaack~!”

It was in an instant. Faker and Arik disappeared into the yellow dust like they weren't there in the first place.

“Administrator Arik?”

The stunned soldiers looked around, but they couldn't find any traces of Arik.

\*\*\*

‘This is a normal level?’

Bland had watched Grid training under Piaro for the past three days. Bland originally saw Grid as very strong. Grid would become much stronger under Piaro's teachings and would have no education.

However, Piaro evaluated Grid as ordinary. Grid was satisfied that he wasn't worse compared to others.

Bland couldn't believe it. 'Why are his skills so bad and dull? Doesn't he have great skills?'

It was the difference in perspective. From Bland's point of view, Earl Steim and Phoenix were the strongest swordsmen until he met Piaro, but Grid seemed to have a lot of talent. On the other hand, Grid compared his abilities to the top rankers and boss monsters, and decided this was good.

Then what about Piaro? He evaluated Grid's ability as 'poor in comparison to his amount of power.'

The conclusion.

"Puhahat! Now I can easily hunt monsters in the west without having to rely on skills!"

"This is just the basics. Only the lousy people rely solely on skills. You still have a long way to go."

"Wouldn't it be better to keep practicing steadily? Continue teaching me in the future."

"I refuse. It is unlikely that your skills will improve, even if I keep teaching you."

“Don’t give up so easily. It isn’t that hard, is it?”

“This is a realistic analysis, not one based on any emotions.”

Grid was strong. It was true that he was lacking control skills compared to top rankers, but from a normal point of view, he was beyond the average level. However, the monsters in the west were so strong that his limits started to show.

“Hap!”

Now Grid had perfectly adapted to the strange terrain of the desert. He ran on the sand with light footsteps and freely wielded Failure, causing the monsters of the west to collapse. As a result, Grid reached level 275 and finally arrived in Reidan.

“This is your city?”

The scale of Reidan that came into view was huge. The exterior walls weren’t very high or well-maintained, but they spectacularly stretched out along the horizon.

“This is a huge city comparable to the capital of a kingdom.”

Grid smiled at Piaro’s admiring words.

“It is the second biggest city in the Eternal Kingdom after



Reinhardt.”

Grid was filled with anticipation. He imagined hundreds of thousands of people in Reidan greeting him with confetti.

“Let’s go.”

Grid prompted Bland and Piaro and increased the pace. Then he was confused as he found people working on clearing the land.

‘Are they refugees?’

The people were skinny, dressed in poor clothes and looked like refugees. Grid wondered why they were doing field work in Reidan.

‘They seem to be slaves.’

He wondered if the people of Reidan hired slaves to work on the farmland. Grid tsked at the thought. ‘They might be slaves but they should be properly fed. What unscrupulous employers.’

The people of Reidan didn’t seem to have a good mentality. However, their mentality had nothing to do with Grid.

‘They are just my taxes.’

Lululula.

Grid looked at the nearest entrance to the city and hummed with a happy heart. He imagined a fanfare and hundreds of thousands of people welcoming him. However.

“Eh?”

Grid witnessed a bizarre sight and stopped walking. The Overgeared members were working among the tens of thousands of slaves?

‘W-What?’

Grid saw the Overgeared members sweating hard as they worked and stopped humming. An ominous thought struck him before Regas saw him and ran over with a bright smile.

“You finally came!”

Regas’ solid upper body was stained with sweat and dust. He looked like a worker in a coal mine so Grid asked him.

“What are you doing right now?”

“As you can see, we are clearing the fields with the people.”

“... With the people?”

Where were the people? Grid only saw the Overgeared members and the slaves.

“I greet My Lord.”

Huroi came running. He was also sweaty. Grid saw the rake in his hand and asked again, “What are you doing right now?”

Huroi had the same answer as Regas, “We are clearing the fields with the people.”

“No, that isn’t it. The people...”

Lauel rushed over at that time. “Why were you so late?”

Lauel berated with a scruffy appearance as well. He also held farming equipment in his hands.

“You didn’t respond to my whispers, so I had to start the guild members on the urgent tasks. First of all, we are joining forces with the people to connect the waterways and plant the fields, so we will be able to produce simple food in a few months.”

Grid finally perceived reality. Then he desperately asked. “Where are the people?”

“Can’t you see them?” Lauel turned his gaze to the fields. Lauel’s finger was pointing to the people on the fields, the thin ones who Grid thought were slaves. “They are your people.”

“... Ah, why me?”

It was the moment when Grid’s expectations collapsed.

# Chapter 217

---

“Damn! What is this? I knew things were going too well!”

His fate changed after becoming Pagma’s Descendant. In the past, he lived an unlucky life. After becoming Pagma’s Descendant, most of the results were positive, no matter what hardship he went through. But why did he have to go through hardship everywhere he went? Did he have to accept it just because things worked out well?

Grid suppressed his anger. He looked around at all the people before asking, “Isn’t this the kingdom’s second largest city? Doesn’t that mean it’s rich? So why are the people in this state? Eh? Were they robbed by a group of thieves or something?”

“In the past, it was the richest city in the kingdom; however, everything changed 10 years ago when the giant worms appeared.”

“The giant worms? What do those monsters have to do with Reidan?”

Lauel explained to Grid, “This is what Faker found out after questioning the administrator and the people here.”

10 years ago. Reidan was the second largest city after Reinhardt and was called the second capital of the kingdom. However, this situation changed once the giant worms appeared on a large scale.

The giant worms ravaging the land were so strong that they couldn't be subjugated with a regular army. They quickly turned the western part of the kingdom into a desert, leading to a shortage in resources and supplies, including water.

To make matters worse, all types of desert monsters started to appear. This situation got so bad that Reidan was eventually isolated from the kingdom around it, falling into a food shortage.

“Large-scale support from the kingdom became impossible so the former lord of Reidan gave up. Hundreds of thousands of people were forced to leave their home.”

But some people didn't leave. It was due to the circumstances of each people. 40,000 people remained behind in Reidan.

“They had to prioritize protecting the rivers and lakes that hadn't been dried up yet. But with their strength, they couldn't protect the rivers and lakes from monsters.”

King Wiesbaden tried to help by searching for talent to rebuild the west. However, there was no one good except for Earl Ashur, and Earl Ashur couldn't leave Patrian.

“In the end, people were unable to get help from the kingdom and chose the empire. They asked the empire to be saved and the empire readily accepted. It was a chance to absorb part of the land of the Eternal Kingdom.”

The empire dispatched the Black Knights. The Black Knights were the second strongest knights after the Red Knights. But it was impossible for them to completely get rid of all the monsters in the west.

“At this point, the empire had to make a decision. In order to obtain the west, they would have to commit a large force. And that is a big burden from the position of the empire.”

Finally, the empire made a choice.

“They will protect the Hebend River directly connected to Reidan from the monsters. In return, the people of Reiden will have to make an offering to the empire every year. They offered that deal.”

“It is a reasonable proposal. The people of Reidan would’ve had to accept.”

“That’s right. But the problem was that the amount of wealth the empire asked for grew every year.”

Thanks to the protection of the empire, the people of Reidan were able to relieve the food shortage through farming. The economy was slowly revived, but so what? They became poor again after giving their wealth to the empire every year. Finally, there was a food crisis again.

“In the end, the people of Reidan reached the point where they couldn’t listen to the demands of the empire anymore. The empire

withdrew their forces and as a result, there were only 20,000 people left in Reidan. They were on the brink of starvation. This was the situation when we arrived.”

Grid couldn't believe it. “Why did the kingdom abandon Reidan? It might be impossible to get rid of the monsters in the west, but isn't it possible to give them the minimum of supplies?”

“There was no merit. They didn't feel the value of helping the foolish people who won't abandon a land that can't be rebuilt.”

It was cold but the right decision. At least, Grid thought so. “Yes, I understand the position of the kingdom. So in the end, aren't the people of the kingdom the real issue at hand? Why would they insist on staying in Reidan, in spite the circumstances? Isn't it a simple fix if they just leave?”

“It is unfortunate... 10 years ago, the lord recruited troops to raid the vampire lair. Most of the people who didn't leave Reidan are the families of the young men conscripted to the vampire raid.”

“They don't know when their sons or husbands will return so they remained in Reidan?”

“That's right. As you know, this world is different from modern society and the reunion of separated families is almost impossible...”

10 years ago. The giant worms emerged soon after the vampire



raid began. And Reidan fell in just five months. The vampire subjugation troops were scheduled to return in half a year, so the families of the soldiers had to wait until then.

They waited one year, two years, three years, four years, etc, but the vampire subjugation team didn't return. However, the family members kept staying in Reidan. The result was that 10 years passed. 40,000 people waited for the vampire subjugation team, but half of them gave up or starved to death.

“They have been waiting 10 years for the vampire subjugation team's return, despite the fact that the troops have probably been annihilated... Blood relationships are scary.”

Grid thought that the people of Reiden were stupid, but he also felt compassion. It was because his family probably would've made the same choice if they were in the same position as the people of Reidan.

“The conclusion is that the former lord is a stupid jerk? Why did he try to clear the vampire lairs?”

“Until the giant worms appeared, the vampires were the only threat to Reidan. The vampire lairs are somewhere in the west and the vampires often used the people of Reidan as their food. The former lord made an unavoidable decision.”

Vampire Duke Marie Rose. Grid recalled the vampire that he met in the past on the way to the pope and shuddered.

“...Are the vampires still active these days?”

“No. Vampires haven’t appeared since monsters emerged in the west. Considering the strength of the vampires, they wouldn’t have been wiped out by the monsters. So it is possible that they turned the monsters into their food source.”

“That is lucky. Um... So? What should I do next?”

Lauel answered instantly as if it were obvious, “We need to focus on clearing the fields.”

“ ... ”

In the nine days of Grid’s absence, the Overgeared members defeated the monsters around Hebend River and connected the waterways to the fields. Now it was a beautiful sight because they worked hard with the people to clear the fields.

“Labor is good. The sight of the people sweating while working is beautiful.” But Grid hated doing it. “I am the duke yet I have to work in the fields with the people? Isn’t this too much?”

Lauel shrugged at Grid’s obvious dislike.

“You don’t have to. You have a different workspace.”

Lauel received Grid’s command and brought Khan to this place.

As soon as they got here, he gave support staff to Khan to build a facility. That's right, it was a smithy.

“Please do your duties as a legendary blacksmith. There is a limit to the amount of farming equipment that can be produced by Khan alone. Please help him produce a large quantity of farming equipment.”

“What?”

A legendary blacksmith needed to make farmer's tools?

“Hey, what's with that look you're giving me?” Lauel scolded Grid. “We need your strength to revive Reidan, and you want to refuse? Don't you feel any sense of responsibility as the Lord?”

Grid acquiesced and no longer complained loudly,

“...I was lacking in understanding.”

‘I became too arrogant after I became a duke.’

Only farming equipment? A blacksmith couldn't afford to have the word ‘only’ in their minds. Grid regained his pride as a blacksmith. In his mind, he threw away his futile bravado and rolled up his sleeves. Then he pulled out his blacksmith's hammer and declared, “Believe in me.”

“ ... ”

Lauel's face twisted as he heard the ominous words. But he thought about it and became relieved.

‘In the first place, farming equipment with a rating other than normal doesn't exist, so I don't have to worry.’

Combat class users had no idea about production and production items. They weren't interested because there were few opportunities to use it. A hammer was just a hammer, a pickaxe was just a pickaxe, a hoe was just a hoe etc. Moreover, most of the production items distributed had a normal rating.

Blacksmiths aimed for mass production so it was less likely for a production class item to have a high-rating. But who was Grid? He always invested at least 20 hours, no matter what item he was making, and had already produced a legendary rated hammer and pickaxe.

“Then I'm going. I'll go to work.”

He would produce the best farming equipment that could be used easily, even by those who were starving and had no strength! Grid pledged as he entered the city.

Lauel shouted after him. “By the way Grid, who are these two people?”

“Ah.” Grid was reminded of Piaro and Bland and told the two people. “This is what happened, so I’ll have to stay in the smithy for a while. In the meantime, you will be bored. Right? Shouldn’t you move your body to avoid being bored? Right?”

“If I look around the city and train Bland some more, I won’t be bored.”

Piario gave his opinion. But Grid responded like he didn’t hear.

“I will tell you how to relieve your boredom.”

Grid’s finger pointed to the fields.

Piario and Bland were always in the best position because of their noble family and their natural talents, so they couldn’t grasp Grid’s intentions at first. They never imagined that there would be a person who assigned them to work in the fields.

“Help me clear the fields. Please.”

“W-What?”

Bland was astonished. He was an elite of the kingdom with the best bloodline flowing through him! A cornerstone of the kingdom was made to do field work?

No, he could understand since he was a hostage. But wasn’t Piario

a former captain of a troop of knights, and also one of the best swordsmen on the continent? Despite his great achievements, he was still forced to work in the fields?

Bland thought that Grid was crazy. But what was this?

“Physical training is good to increase the body’s stamina. Moreover, since I’ve never had experience working in the field, it is an opportunity to develop muscles I haven’t used very well or to experience new movements. I understand.”

Piario readily accepted? Great Swordsman. The one closest to becoming a sword saint positively evaluated the field work and started stretching, so Bland fell silent and also started loosening up his body.

“Are you really working in the fields?”

Grid was surprised. He hadn’t expected Piario to accept his request.

“Why so easily?”

Piario saw Grid’s confused face and said. “I have regained my motivation after being with you and Bland for the past nine days. I don’t want revenge to be my whole life. You will get revenge for me sooner or later, so I have to shake off the past and try to live in the future. I’m not a noble anymore, so it is a good idea to learn about the lives of the common people in advance.”

“...Thank you.”

Grid bowed respectfully to him not only to thank him for his help in the fields but also for his willingness to live.

‘A person like that was affected by me...’

Grid had enough influence to change someone’s life. He realized this thanks to Piaro and thought deeply.

‘A lord is a person who rules over tens of thousands of people. He was also a guild master who led the Overgeared members. He should never forget. My thoughts and actions can change the fate of a large number of people.’

Grid vowed to become more mature every time he experienced certain events. However, he couldn’t abandon his inherent nature and was prone to losing his prudence whenever he was in a hurry. So he thought that he should manage himself more thoroughly.

He left Winston for the west. This was the moment that Grid’s heart once again grew in response to Piaro’s words.

# Chapter 218

---

“Lauel, Piaro, and Bland will help in the fields while I am in the smithy. Thank them for their help.”

“No, who are they?”

Lauel wanted Grid to introduce the two men. But rather than introducing them, Grid spoke to the two men and asked them to work. Lauel thought it was absurd.

“Then I’m going.”

“Grid!”

Lauel called again, but Grid didn’t look back and left. It was because it wouldn’t be fun to reveal Piaro’s identity immediately.

‘He will experience it directly. He will feel astonishment, admiration, and reverence. There are only a few name-grade NPCs in Satisfy.’

Grid imagined Lauel and the Overgeared members’ reactions after grasping Piaro’s identity as a great swordsman. Piaro would teach the Overgeared members and they would become more powerful.



‘So insensitive.’

Lauel faced Piaro and Bland after Grid left. He started awkwardly for a moment before observing the two people. He looked at the middle-aged Piaro standing next to Bland. Piaro was wearing dirty clothes that couldn't even be used as rags, and a horrible stench came from him.

‘He was called Bland so he must be Earl Ashur's son...’ Lauel easily understood Bland's identity, but the problem was Piaro. ‘Who is this person? His physique is good but his condition is too bad.’

Grid had mentioned that he was accompanied by someone when he took Earl Ashur's son as a hostage. However, he didn't say who it was.

‘Disappointing.’

Lauel hoped that Grid would bring someone with enormous talent to help, but did he just bring a slave over?

‘He wasted nine days to bring someone like this here...’

Lauel was deeply disappointed. He wanted to make Grid aware of his position. Then he smiled. Lauel didn't let his inner emotions show as he greeted the two people.

“I am Lael, Grid’s chief of staff. I’m proficient in handling people. Can I hear your introductions?”

Lael was active in the golem invasion and grew further on his way to the west, so he was now level 287. He was first in the qigong master rankings, but he introduced himself as ‘proficient in handling people.’

“I am Bland de Ian, the youngest son of Earl Ashur. I know a bit of magic and have some skill in the sword.”

He had poor magic ability compared to his father. In addition, his swordsmanship was at a baby’s level compared to Grid and Piaro. Therefore, Bland introduced himself as a beginner despite having a high level.

Piario was even worse, “I am Piario. I have nothing to introduce other than my name. I know how to use the sword, but I am still lacking.”

He hadn’t achieved the level of a sword saint yet, and thus, Piario introduced himself as an average swordsman.

‘There is a reason why Grid gave them field work: they just aren’t useful anywhere else.’

Lael had no expectations of Piario and Bland’s fighting power.

‘Well, a beggar is better than a freeloader.’

He wasn't very inspired, but Lauel nodded and handed rakes to the two men.

“Use this to get rid of foreign matter in the ground such as stones, then prepare the land for planting seeds.”

Lauel was sure that they wouldn't do the work properly. Bland was a noble and wouldn't want to work hard in the fields, while the slave Piaro was probably just hoping for a meal.

“Um, this is the farming equipment used by the common people.”

“I never thought that I would hold a tool like this in my entire life.”

“This is also an experience.”

“I will keep that in mind.”

Piario and Bland talked amongst themselves, but Lauel showed no interest in their conversation. Lauel pointed to the vast land as they marvelled over the rakes.

“Clear this piece of land by the end of the day. If you don't know how to do it, please ask the people nearby. If you can't do it, then take a break. I don't intend to force you to work.”

Most of the 20,551 people of Reiden were engaged in clearing the wilderness. It was safe to assume that all those with the physical strength, regardless of age and sex, were working. But the efficiency fell too much, due to the lack of farming equipment.

Putting together the farming equipment owned by the people and the ones currently produced by Khan, there was only around 3,000 tools. It meant that among the thousands of people working, only 3,000 were actually efficient. The rest of the people could only pick up the stones by hand.

In this situation, Lael wasn't certain that he should give the tools to Bland and Piaro. He deliberately gave an absurd quota to Piaro and Bland. He wanted them to give up quickly so that the precious farming equipment wasn't wasted.

'I gave them 10 times more work than the others, so they will give up quickly.'

Lael left the two people and got to work.

"Dragon Claws."

Once Lael used his skill, five sharp pillars rose from the ground before disappearing. Then around 50 pyeong of land was overturned at once (1 pyeong= around 32 square feet). Lael scraped all the foreign matter that emerged from the ground with the rake, before laying down the ground again.

“This is enough.”

Laue! was pleased. Clearing 50 pyeong in an instant. He immediately moved to another place and repeated the same thing. He was doing the job of hundreds alone. Bland watched him silently before exclaiming.

“Magic can be applied to clear the land quickly. I should give it a try.”

Bland was about to use magic when Piaro restrained him.

“Why use magic for something that doesn’t need it? Do you want to miss this golden opportunity to do physical exercise?”

Bland realized his mistake and said, “I was too short-sighted.”

“Look over there.” Piaro pointed to the people working hard and sweating. “We must learn from them. New movements will be acquired and this will nourish your swordsmanship.

“Yes.”

Piario and Bland started to observe the common people. They thoroughly grasped how to clear the ground. After a while.

“How about it? Isn’t this training?”

“That’s right. It places a severe burden on the waist, shoulders and knees. This was the first time my body has been so overworked.”

This wasn’t exercise but labor. It was new for Piaro and Bland, who were nobles. They repeatedly moved their rakes with their disciplined bodies. It was an incredibly fast speed. Both of them had good physical skills and picked up the tricks from the ordinary people, so they finished Lauel’s ridiculous quota in just one and a half hours.

“Lauel.”

‘They are finally here.’

Lauel had been working hard using his skill and rake, so he was satisfied when he heard Piaro’s voice,

“Was it tough? You must’ve suffered a lot. Then, go rest. Oh, please return the rakes as well.”

Piaro spoke to Lauel who didn’t look back at him,

“Why should we rest? I am here to report that we have finished our work. Is there anything more we can do?”

“...Huh?”

Lauel doubted his ears and turned towards Piaro. Piaro was now completely covered in dirt. It was proof that he had been working hard. But clearing a 500 pyeong sized land in just two hours?

Lauel couldn't believe it as he asked,

“If you don't mind, can I go and check it myself?”

“Yes.”

Piaro wasn't offended. It was natural since this was the first time he did it.

“Heok.”

The usually calm Lauel let out a cry of surprise. The 500 pyeong sized land that he entrusted to both Piaro and Bland really had been cleared.

‘What type of magic was used?’

Lauel couldn't close his mouth and Piaro prompted him, “Then, please give us the next task.”

“Ah, yes...”

There was a lot of wilderness that needed to be cleared. Lauel entrusted Piaro and Bland with another piece of land that was 500 pyeong. Then he watched both of them.

Buzz buzz.

The other Overgeared members quickly gathered in Lauel's vicinity, all interested in the turmoil. They folded their arms and watched Bland and Piaro. The person who started work first was Bland.

“Ohh.”

“Isn't he quite good?”

The Overgeared members let out sounds of admiration. Bland cleared the field 10 times faster than an average person, a speed comparable to when the Overgeared members used their skills. The Overgeared members were able to predict that Bland's strength and stamina were comparable to theirs.

Then what about the other person? The Overgeared members focused on Piaro, who belatedly started after sufficient stretching. Then they were shocked.

“W-What?”

“A professional farmer...!”



The speed at which Piaro cleared the field was 10 times faster than Bland. It wasn't just a matter of good stamina. He had a perfect grasp of how to use the rake to overturn the ground more effectively. His exquisite movements made the rake move through the ground like it was water. It was a godly skill that allowed all the foreign substances in the ground to be piled up in a corner.

“Hah...! Grid brought someone huge!”

“Yes. He brought a master of farming. With those skills, he is almost like a legendary farmer. We can't be fooled by his appearance...”

“But how did Grid know that we needed a farmer for Reidan?”

“This Huroi! I am impressed with My Lord's foresight!”

At that moment.

“Hmm?”

Piaro's transcendent senses detected the flow of water deep in the earth. He asked Lauel, “Does this place not have enough water connected to it right now?”

“That's right. We plan to connect more channels in the future.”

“I’ll take care of it.”

“...?”

No matter how clever Lael was, he couldn’t immediately understand Piaro’s remark. Lael and the Overgeared members were feeling puzzled as Piaro pushed his rake deep into the ground. Suddenly, the earth started to shake as an intangible wave of energy was released.

“An earthquake all of a sudden...!”

Lael and the Overgeared members thought that a giant worm might pop up, while the residents were confused.

At that moment.

Kuwaaaaaang!

A sound echoed out from where Piaro was standing before a pillar of water exploded upwards, seemingly piercing the sky.

“Wahhhh!”

The people cheered at the unbelievable sight while Lael and the Overgeared members were shocked. There was the gurgle of water as Piaro wiped the water and dirt off his face before saying,

“This is a good plot of land.”

“...”

Piario was clever and talented, so he was the best at whatever he did. It was the moment when the great swordsman became known as a legendary farmer and legendary feng shui person. On this day, there was a festive atmosphere in Reidan. A precious source of water had been found in the land that had been turned into a wilderness, so the people laughed, cried, and wept.

At the same time.

Ttang! Ttang!

“How sad, I can’t even rest and have to work immediately after being overworked in a week-long monster hunt...”

Grid, Duke of the Eternal Kingdom and Lord of Reidan, was fiercely hammering in front of the roaring blast furnace. His rank was the highest, but he was also the busiest.

This was normal.

# Chapter 219

---

“Khan!”

Three hours before Piaro was misunderstood as a legendary farmer and feng shui expert.

Grid came to the smithy where Khan was working alone.

“Ohh! You came!”

“I missed you!”

“I haven’t been able to eat, because I wanted to see you!”

“Eh? Should I have missed meals as well?”

“Hahaha!”

Grid and Khan hugged as they reunited after a long time. It was a friendship that transcended identity and age, so they welcomed each other enthusiastically.

“I was worried that you wouldn’t be able to adapt to the warm weather of the west, but you seem fine. Rather, you look healthier.”

Khan was in the latter half of his 60's. He had passed the average life expectancy of the people of the Eternal Kingdom, so it was safe to say that he was at the end of his life. But after returning to being a blacksmith thanks to Grid, Khan worked all day and looked like he was in his 40's or 50's.

“You don't have to worry. I have been working with fire all my life, so how can I be threatened by this heat?”

“You're a great inspiration.”

Grid smiled. However, he knew that the lifespan of an NPC was finite so he couldn't suppress the uneasiness in his life.

‘Please live for a long time.’

The first friend in his life, Khan. Grid wouldn't be able to bear the sadness that would come when he needed to say farewell to the person who opened up his heart. Khan noticed the sad emotions in Grid's smile and became slightly teary.

‘He reminds me of my son.’

His late son. If he hadn't become sick and died early, he would've been Duke Grid's age right now.

‘Originally, my son should be the one worrying about me...’

He wanted to see his son. But he could appease that longing with Duke Grid beside him. Khan was thankful for Duke Grid filling his vacancy. Khan swallowed back his tears and bowed his head.

“Thank you.”

“Huh? What?”

Grid didn't understand the intentions behind Khan's sudden action. Khan smiled at his puzzled expression.

“Didn't you come here to help me? So I wanted to thank you! Hahaha!”

“What...? This is originally my work.” Grid brought Khan to Reidan so that Khan wouldn't be lonely, not for the manpower. “But the situation of the city is a little inconvenient right now, so I am grateful for your help. Let's work together to solve the problem.”

Grid took off the Holy Light set and changed into old clothing. The dirty novice clothing was what Grid wore when he worked as a blacksmith. The efficiency increased because it was easy to move in the clothing. The only downside was that Grid looked like a complete beggar when he wore it.

“Ohh! You can't hide your dignity with these shabby clothes!”

Grid's current dignity and charm stats were comparable to the

king of a kingdom, so he was always brimming with elegance.

Grid swept away his hair and revealed his great forehead. He tied a cloth around his head so that his hair wouldn't flow down, and looked around the smithy.

‘It is unbelievably large.’

A general smithy only had one or two small or medium sized furnaces installed. Usually only three to five people could work at the same time in a smithy.

However, the Overgeared members looked at the future and invested in Reidan's smithy, giving it a total of eight large furnaces. The sight of eight large furnaces lined up in a row was impressive.

‘Isn't this at the level of a factory? Dozens of blacksmiths can work at the same time and produce a large quantity of items.’

But that was a story for later, when they had many blacksmiths. Currently, there was only Grid and Khan, so the big size of the smithy couldn't be taken advantage of.

‘I should look into inviting blacksmith users.’

Grid looked at the smithy before deciding to start working. However, he didn't have the method to make a rake.

‘I don’t know how to make any farming equipment.’

It was because he never needed to make farming equipment before. But that wasn’t a problem. Grid had the Legendary Blacksmith’s Appraisal skill. Grid held one of the rakes made by Khan and used appraisal.

[Sturdy Rake]

Rating: Normal

Durability: 20/20 Attack Power: 3~7

A farming equipment suitable for digging at the ground.

It is made by Blacksmith Khan who can represent a region, so it is a rake with excellent durability.

Weight: 60

[A hidden function doesn’t exist.]

[You have grasped the materials that make up Sturdy Rake, the production method, and the intentions of its creator.]

[Your understanding of the Sturdy Rake is now at 100%. You will



be able to use the Sturdy Rake perfectly.]

[You have learned how to make a rake.]

The rake production method was added. Grid was satisfied and started work.

Ttang! Ttang!

He bent the structure at the end to resemble a trident. It was a simple structure, so Khan was able to produce one rake in just 20 minutes. Yet Grid was different. Just like when raiding boss monsters, Grid was extremely focused as he devoted himself to making one rake.

He carefully shaped the ends like he was making a sword, then he combined it with the handle part. Grid had over 2,000 dexterity, so his hands delicately handled the rake like he was touching Irene's pale body.

Two hours later.

“Ah, I should take a rest.”

Age didn't lie. The weary Khan stopped working. On the other hand, Grid had superhuman stamina and wasn't exhausted. Khan looked closely at his work and was shocked.

“No, what are you doing right now?”

“Huh? What’s the problem?”

Grid looked like he didn’t understand, so Khan asked.

“Why are you spending two hours making a rake? I’ve already finished six rakes in two hours... Isn’t this a waste of time?”

“Hrmm.” Grid identified the six rakes made by Khan. Of course, they were all normal rated. The degree of completion wasn’t satisfactory, considering Khan’s skill. “Khan.”

Grid stared straight at Khan. Khan flinched at the sight. Grid’s eyes were as deep as the ocean, like a wise man. It was quite different from the usual Grid.

‘Grid can also look like this...!’

Then Grid asked the astounded Khan. “Shouldn’t you always do your best when making equipment? So why are you roughly making the farming equipment?”

“That... Produce as much as possible. Lauel said to mass produce as much farming equipment as possible so that he could put more manpower into the rehabilitation project.”

“Mass production? Even lowly blacksmiths can do something like

that.”

Grid emanated a huge pressure. Right now, he wasn't a greedy young man or Khan's valued friend. There was no doubt that he was a legendary blacksmith, Pagma's Descendant.

“Your role isn't to produce average farming equipment for ordinary farmers.”

“Then what is my role?”

Grid replied firmly to Khan's question. “It's to make the best farming equipment that will help ordinary farmers become the best. That is your mission as an advanced blacksmith. Please don't forget your pride as an advanced blacksmith, no matter the situation.”

“Ah...!”

Khan had worked with Grid for a long time and accumulated experience. Thanks to the skill Blacksmith's Affection, his blacksmithing skill reached advanced level 7. He was one of the best blacksmiths that currently existed, and he realized the truth of Grid's words.

“You're absolutely right!”

Khan was highly motivated. Grid handed the rake that he'd just completed to Khan.

“Look at what I created.”

“Truly brilliant...!”

[Ideal Rake]

Rating: Epic

Durability: 50/50 Attack Power: 25~31

\* Stamina +7.

\* Dexterity +12.

\* It will slightly improve the quality of the soil.

A farming equipment suitable for digging at the ground.

An item made by the blacksmith ‘G’ who has a reputation close to a legend. Despite the use of bad quality iron and wood as the material, its function is outstanding.

The three delicate prongs will make the soil finer, improving soil quality.

Weight: 51

‘The one rake that Grid made in two hours is much more valuable than the six rakes that I made!’

He also wanted to make a good rake. Khan pledged before standing in front of the furnace again.

Ttang! Ttang!

“Don’t overdo it.”

Grid was concerned about Khan’s health, but the highly concentrated Khan could no longer hear his voice.

‘Yes, this is like him.’

Grid smiled warmly before starting to make his second rake.

Two hours later.

Grid and Khan both completed a rare rated rake. But once again, two hours later...

“Yes! It can’t be compared to your work, but I have also produced a satisfactory rake!”

Khan succeeded in making an epic rated rake. The performance was less than Grid's, but it was clearly an excellent rake. Indeed, this was the dignity of an Advanced Blacksmith level 7. Then what about Grid?

“Damn...”

It was a normal rating. Grid was embarrassed. He didn't know that a normal rating would emerge when he was making such a simple item.

“Are you trying to deceive me with a rake?”

Grid's pride as a legendary blacksmith was once again wounded. Once again, two hours later. Grid and Khan both completed a rare rated rake.

“Not bad.”

Khan was happy. But Grid was boiling with anger.

“Ugh, dammit...!”

A legendary blacksmith was having such a hard time making farming equipment? This wasn't normal.

“Are you tricking me again? These damn scum!”

Grid yelled at the operators who were watching from somewhere. Then Khan sent him a pitiful look.

“It has been a long time since I’ve seen this...”

It was a frequent phenomenon when they worked together. Khan left Grid shouting alone and started making a new rake.

“Grid!”

Now it was time for dinner. Lauel finished today’s work and ran to the smithy.

“Let’s go eat. Then we need to consult with the guild about the estate management plans... Eh?”

Lauel’s expressions twisted. He wondered how much Grid and Khan would’ve made in half a day, but there was less than 20 tools.

“Surely you weren’t playing around?”

Lauel expected a legendary blacksmith to work like a machine. He was feeling disappointed when Grid threw him a rake.

“I wasn’t playing around. Look at this.”

“...?”

Why did he need to look at the details of a rake? Lael felt doubts and examined the rake.

“Heok.”

Lael was beyond shocked.

[Perfect Rake]

Rating: Unique

Durability: 71/71 Attack Power: 49~61

\* Stamina +15

\* Dexterity +28

\* Greatly improves the soil quality.

A farming equipment suitable for digging at the ground.

An item made by the blacksmith ‘G’ who has a reputation close to a legend. Despite the use of bad quality iron and wood as the material, its function is outstanding.



The three delicate prongs will make the soil finer, improving soil quality. The three prongs are bent at the ideal angle to work the soil. Even a child can use this rake to turn a wasteland into an excellent garden.

Weight: 45

The rake was a tool that helped adult males clear a 1,000 pyeong size land in one day. However, the people of Reidan were starving for a long time and their physical condition wasn't good, so each person could only clear 100 pyeong a day.

‘The people of Reidan will be able to do more than that if they have this rake. The soil improvement means that the land will give a good harvest.’

This game was truly about items. Grid was the truth. Lael once again thought that it was a good idea to follow Grid. He didn't doubt that one day, the people of Reidan would be armed with the power of items.

Then he suddenly got an ominous feeling.

‘Don't tell me that when he becomes a king...’

Surely he wouldn't name it Overgeared Kingdom? Lael made a tearful face.

# Chapter 220

---

The central spire of Reidan Castle was a huge 11 stories. It was nearly twice as high as the spire of the lord's castle in common cities.

“Is the height of the central spire important?”

“In a sense, it symbolizes the power of the lord. The greater the prestige and power of the lord, the higher the height of the spires.”

“In other words, the former lord of Reidan enjoyed the same authority as the king.”

“That is the correct interpretation.”

In fact, the size of Reidan Castle was comparable to the king's palace.

“The castle has a total of 127 rooms. In addition, there are six other outbuildings. There are five gardens, three parade grounds, and a barracks that can accommodate 8,000 troops.”

There were no small decorations or basic furniture left. It was left untouched for a long time, so there were many rusty places and it was desolate. But the form itself was completely preserved, so Grid was amazed.

“It’s surprising. I thought the castle would be completely ruined like the city.”

“The people of Reidan sacrificed themselves to protect it.”

The days when the empire defended the Hebend River. The people of Reidan had to give a certain amount as tribute to the empire, and it came to the point where they had to dismantle the city’s buildings. However, they couldn’t touch the castle, which was the symbol of Reiden, and their last remaining pride. As a result, the entire scenery around Reidan Castle was a ruin.

Grid was deeply impressed by Lauel’s explanation.

‘The people of Reidan might be dying of starvation, but they protected their pride...’

Grid was a selfish person, but at least he had patriotism. It was the result of the forceful education during military service. Thanks to that, he was able to understand the hearts of the Reidan people without laughing at them.

‘The people really love the place where they grew up.’ Grid had a positive observation.

“It will be a big help to me to save the people of Reidan. Then the people of Reidan will be loyal and follow any orders. Isn’t that right? Lauel.”

Lauel was impressed. “I can’t believe you thought that deeply.”

Anyone could think about it. But he thought that Grid couldn’t.

Grid spoke to the astonished Lauel. “Don’t exploit the people or give unreasonable commands.”

“...Yes?”

Lauel was shocked. He was more surprised than when he observed the unique rated rake several hours ago.

‘What’s wrong?’

Wasn’t Grid the type of person to use others for his own sake? It was unbelievable to Lauel that he would make such a statement about the people. He was at a loss when Grid whispered to him.

“I am the lord of the people, so I can’t act childish. Just do it properly.”

The people were the cash flow. Grid still thought so. He wanted to do the minimum amount to protect them. This was the least he could do for the people who sacrificed themselves to protect the symbol of the lord.

“In the first place, people must live here. Isn’t that right?”

Grid was the lord of Reidan and leader of the Overgeared Guild, so he decided to act in a manner that wouldn't shame them. Now he was trying to act according to that determination. Lael smiled with satisfaction at Grid's growth.

"I will keep it in mind."

"I know."

Grid went ahead. After a few hours, he grasped the structure of the castle.

"It's really big. This great castle is mine?"

"It isn't just this castle. You're the master of everything in Reidan. In addition, you're eligible to get your hands on something greater. The spires of Reidan will become higher than the royal palace." Huroi remarked as he appeared.

Grid smiled. "Welcome Huroi. Your words always make me feel better. Thank you."

Thank you? Huroi was baffled. The original Grid wasn't someone who would express appreciation for anything.

'Reciprocating the goodwill of others...'

The selfish Grid was starting to fill up his lacking spots. It was

gratifying. He noticed things that weren't pointed out.

‘He grows every time I see him.’

Huroi and Lael were impressed.

Thump thump.

Grid moved to the great hall that could accommodate around 500 people. Apart from the old throne, it was just a room full of dust. However, Grid didn't doubt that this would soon shine a brilliant gold. He sat on the throne and quietly closed his eyes.

“Now it feels real.”

He was a duke of the Eternal Kingdom. Next to the king, he had the highest status and held the greatest power in his hand. He represented Huroi, Lael, Jishuka and the other Overgeared members.

But.

‘Am I qualified?’

Many memories went through Grid's mind. At a young age, he learned to be anxious around others. As an adolescent, he had many limitations. In his 20's, he experienced a lot of frustration. Hardships came to mind.

His memories before Satisfy were the worst. But everything changed after he started Satisfy and became Pagma's Descendant. He used the abilities he obtained to overcome his limitations, as well as the trials that he received.

‘Is this purely the result of good luck?’

Grid wondered. After a long moment of thinking, he came up with an answer.

‘No.’

There was a lot of luck, but in the end, it was his own strength and efforts that led to this result. It was unclear if the Northern End Cave even existed, but he had found it after several months of exploration.

‘I am qualified. I was able to climb up to this point because I’m qualified.’

Sururuk.

Grid was filled with joyful emotions and slowly opened his eyes. Was this the influence of his higher charm stat? Or was it the effect of the true pride that he realized at this moment? Grid's eyes were deeper than ever, like the sea.

“Huroi, Lauel.”

“Yes.”

Grid called out and Huroi bowed with a sincere heart. Lauel followed as well. The two of them prostrated before him. It was a common action. Grid didn't feel awkward because of their exaggerated behavior.

“Both of you said that I'm destined to be the best. Was that false or exaggerated?”

Huroi and Lauel responded in unshakable voices.

“My Lord is already the best.”

“You are the only person I acknowledge. So you are a qualified person.”

They were sincere. Grid's power, stats and abilities were among the top out of the two billion users in Satisfy. The only flaw was that he was lacking financial power, but he could overcome it if Reidan developed.

Defects in personality and intelligence? Grid was developing, so that wasn't a problem.

“...Yes, I will believe you and take pride in myself.”



At this moment, Grid developed some self-pride. This was pure pride, not arrogance or egotism.

“Sigh...”

He let out a deep exhale. The victim mentality and inferiority complex was deeply rooted because of his experiences in the past. He hadn't fully shed it yet, but this was the moment his heart cleared. His jealousy towards others disappeared. His heart was light. His head became clear and his vision widened.

“This feels much better.”

Grid said with a bright smile.

Now he was reaching the end of his steady internal growth process.

\*\*\*

Reidan was a very large city that could accommodate 430,000 people, but it was currently impossible to increase the population. It was because Reidan didn't have any charms to attract people from other parts of the world to it.

Lauel believed that they should make good use of the 20,551 people currently living in Reidan.

“We have addressed the food shortage. The pace of the farmland clearing has increased exponentially thanks to the discovery of water by Piaro, the legendary farmer and feng shui expert. It’s easy to spread drinking water.”

‘Legendary farmer? Feng shui expert?’

Grid and the Overgeared members were in the meeting room. How did Piaro become a legendary farmer and feng shui expert? Grid questioned this while Lael laid out policies for the future.

Developing agriculture would encourage the birth of the people, promote consumption and attract external resources. In addition, there was a plan to grow the smithy on a large scale, centering on Grid and Khan. This would build up a foothold to become a commercial city.

“At this time, the role of the Overgeared members is to subjugate the monsters. We need to reduce the power of the monsters occupying the west. In particular, the ultimate goal is to destroy all the giant worms.”

As with most online games, Satisfy’s monsters respawned after a certain period of time from their deaths. But monsters that caused certain episodes, such as the giant worms, were in the special category.

“There is probably the home of the giant worms somewhere underground. If we find and destroy it, I’m sure that the giant

worms will no longer respawn.”

The giant worms had to be destroyed. Then the west could develop and the episode would move to the next stage. Lauel’s words stirred the enthusiasm of the Overgeared members.

“Levels are guaranteed.”

“Yes. The monsters in the west give a lot of experience.”

“In return, they are too strong.”

“We have the power of our items. Have you forgotten? We fortunately have Grid.”

“Lauel, are there no longer any villages or cities in the west where people live? If it’s possible to find a place where people are still living, can’t we bring them to Reidan to increase the population?”

This was the opinion of Toban, the former chief of staff of the Tzedakah Guild. The Overgeared members responded positively to his words, but Lauel expressed concern.

“For the time being, I don’t plan to search for other villages or cities. We should ignore the cities and villages found in the middle of the desert. There is likely to be a vampire lair.”

Vampires had a minimum level of 250. However, this was the case of the young vampires. Vampires who lived for over 300 years were likely to have levels over 400. The possibility of being wiped out was high if they stepped into a vampire lair, so Lael wanted to avoid such a situation.

Grid rose from his seat.

“I’ll go now. There’s a mountain of work piled up in the smithy.”

Grid’s word was far from being a lord. In fact, Lael was taking the role of the lord while Grid acted like a blacksmith. At first glance, the situations should be reversed, but this was actually right.

Grid wasn’t smart enough to lead a big city. It was Grid himself who appointed Lael to this role.

After that.

The Overgeared members were able to level up and secure resources by hunting the monsters. The desertification of Reidan meant that timber was lacking, so securing timber was the first priority.

Piaro and Bland immersed themselves in farming with the people, while Jude was tasked with training the strong people who Grid discovered through the Great Lord’s Sword.

“Jump. Roll. Gear up. Spear...? Stab and swing your spear.”

Jude’s reckless training caused many soldiers to leave. However, a handful endured and were gradually reborn into elite soldiers. Unfortunately, their Weapons Mastery skill didn’t grow, but the speed of their strength and stamina rise was abnormally fast.

“Anyway, my soldiers don’t need a high Weapons Mastery skill.”

Grid made weapons with low usage conditions and high attack power and spread them to the soldiers. Even the farm equipment was powerful, so the soldiers armed with his items were different from other soldiers in the region.

Ttang! Ttang!

Grid worked in the smithy around the clock. He was now working on construction tools instead of farming tools. Agriculture was stable now, so they were focusing on constructing facilities with the resources secured by the Overgeared members.

‘I feel like I’m dying, but my persistence and dexterity stats are rapidly growing.’

Grid wasn’t bored. Obtaining a different outcome every time from his production work was a different type of fun from hunting and boss raids. In any case, he was a blacksmith and needed to do it for the rest of his life.

‘Irene will like it.’

His dexterity stat kept rising, so he would be able to make Irene even happier. Grid laughed while thinking about it.

On the other hand, Khan was busy nurturing young blacksmiths.

“Hey! That forging quality isn’t great! Hey! If you put the firewood in now, your control of the fire will fall!”

Khan’s voice seemed to become more vigorous as the days passed. Khan’s passion made Grid smile.

Then after a while.

“It’s been a long time.”

Rabbit finally arrived.

# Chapter 221

---

Rabbit was from a rural part of the country, but his genius and talent caused him to rise to the top of the Mero Company. In the past, he was the first to recognize that the level 21 Grid had a huge talent and suggested a partnership.

“This commoner, Rabbit, greets the great hero, Duke Grid.”

Rabbit hadn't changed since the first day they met. He wore thin-rimmed glasses and gave off the impression of a cultured gentleman. There were no signs of greed in his eyes, but he looked more like a saint than a merchant.

But what was the truth? Unlike his appearance, Rabbit was as greedy as Grid. That's how he was able to succeed as a merchant.

‘A true charlatan gives a sense of confidence to the other person.’

Grid grinned with satisfaction and greeted Rabbit. “You must've had a hard time. Isn't it nice to see people after being stuck in prison for a long time?”

“Thanks to the people of Winston treating me as a hero, Marquis Steim gave me many conveniences.”

“That's good. I'm relieved to see that you're healthy. It's nice to meet you again.”

“ ... ”

Rabbit’s insight detected the changes in Grid. His gestures, expressions, speech, etc. From head to toe, everything about the current Grid was completely different from the Grid of the past. It wasn’t a simple change, so Rabbit felt a thrill.

“I underestimated you.”

The future that Rabbit saw for Grid was the best blacksmith and the richest person. But the current Grid was...

“You are pursuing the path of rising to the top, where everyone will look up at you.”

It was heartfelt appreciation. The Grid from a while ago would’ve overreacted. But now Grid combined reality and humility.

“It’s a challenge. I’m lacking a lot, so I need your help. Will you serve me?”

Rabbit bowed. Then he answered formally, showing his loyalty with honest words.

“Duke Grid, I don’t doubt that you are the one who will make me the richest man on the continent. So I’m willing to follow you.”

Grid also responded honestly. “Not the richest person on the



continent. I will be the richest person.”

“Haha, then I will just dream of being rich.”

“So be it.”

Grid smiled as he pulled out the Great Lord’s Sword and laid it on Rabbit’s shoulder. It wasn’t a problem that this was a smithy instead of a palace. Rather, it was more meaningful because a smithy was the place where Grid’s identity was established.

“From this moment on, you will be a viscount of the Eternal Kingdom. But you need only be loyal to me.”

When Marquis Steim was still an earl, he had appointed Grid as a viscount, despite Grid being a commoner. As a duke, Grid also had the authority to arbitrarily give someone a title. But he had no plans to abuse Rabbit, as he planned to give Rabbit a monthly salary that suited his title.

He could sell titles to users, but Lael had dissuaded him from doing this.

“Both I and my descendants will be faithful only to My Lord.”

A notification window popped up the moment Rabbit made the oath.

[You have used your authority as a duke to appoint 'Rabbit' as a viscount.]

[You have an obligation to give Rabbit a monthly salary of 500 gold every month. Rabbit's loyalty will fall if you don't pay this salary.]

Delight appeared on Grid's face.

'As I expected, he's a named NPC.'

Name: Rabbit

Age: 37 Gender: Male

Occupation: Merchant/ Viscount of the Eternal Kingdom

Title: Wealthy Merchant

\* The best merchant of this era. He has the ability to create demand even for simple stones.

Level: 307

Strength: 49 Stamina: 380

Agility: 150 Intelligence: 2,241

Political Power: 1,505 Insight: 1,533

Leadership: 512 Charm: 210

Skills: Composure (A+), Detection (A+), Administration (S), Business Acumen (S+), Wisdom of a Great Merchant (SS).

Born in Winston, in the northern part of the kingdom. He was born a commoner, but he devoted himself to his studies. After proving that he had talent, he received a sponsorship to the Central Academy and graduated as the best student.

He served as a royal administrator, but received unfair treatment due to his commoner status. Therefore, he became a merchant and made the best achievements.

Due to his poor childhood, he has a tendency to cling to money.

[Composure (A+)]

No matter what situation he faces, he won't lose his composure. It's rare for him to make mistakes because his brain is active at all times.

[Detection (A+)]

Can see the essence of humans and objects. He can easily

communicate with anyone and always gets the best results.

[Administration (S)]

If he belongs to a certain power, the ability to manage the affairs is excellent. It is at a level that can develop a small village into a city.

[Business Acumen (S+)]

The trading ability has reached the highest level. Even a piece of garbage can be made into a product.

[Wisdom of a Great Merchant (SS)]

The experience and know how of someone who made a large company.

‘S-grade Administration...’

The speed of development of a city was proportional to the grade of the administrator. The role of an administrator was very important, but it wasn't an easy task to find one with a high rating. Winston was the second largest city in the north, and even Administrator Valdi only had a B-grade. Then how fast would a place grow with a S-grade administrator? He didn't dare imagine it.

‘His ability as a merchant is S+ and SS...’

Rabbit even had the ability to make goods out of rubbish. Based on the description, it was a complete scam. Grid was confused.

‘How should I handle him?’

Should Rabbit serve as an administrator, or work as a merchant? Rabbit spoke while he couldn’t make a decision.

“Before I came to see you, I looked over Reidan. It’s good that you are clearing the fields and connecting waterways, but I feel like it’s too much.”

“Too much?”

“Doesn’t Reidan only have a population of 20,000? If the number of fields are reduced by a third, it will be enough to feed the people.”

Grid explained the situation. “Once the clearing of the fields is done, we plan to expand farming and build this up as an agricultural city. This will be the basis to become a commercial city.”

“It’s the wrong choice. Due to the hot climate of Reidan, only a limited number of crops can be grown. Reidan isn’t suitable as an agricultural city.”

“There are no problems with the species restrictions. In the first place, we were planning to concentrate and export the crops that can be harvested quickly.”

Lauel entered the smithy at this time and rebutted. He had an upset expression on his face and Rabbit responded appropriately.

“Crops that can be harvested quickly aren’t competitive. They are easy to get anywhere.”

Lauel glared at him.

“We can overcome it by selling a lot at a cheap price. Currently, the only advantage of Reidan is the spacious land. Using the land is the only way to build up funds, so the reality is that Reidan can only be an agricultural city. No, first, who are you?”

Grid introduced him. “This is Rabbit. He was once the number two of the Mero Company, the largest in the north.”

Lauel was angry. He was only the number two of a northern company, yet he dared try to decide the city’s policies.

Grid handed him the Great Lord’s Sword.

“What is this?”

Grid explained to the bewildered Lael. “Wear it and examine Rabbit yourself.”

“What are you trying...”

Lael was annoyed that Grid would listen to the opinion of a merchant over him. He grumbled as he wore the Great Lord’s Sword and observed Rabbit.

“Heok.”

These days, Lael was often surprised.

Grid persuaded Lael as he checked Rabbit’s stats and skills. “I’m not discrediting your abilities, but why don’t you try and listen to Rabbit’s thoughts? Who knows? It might help you as well.”

“...”

\*\*\*

“I will entrust the overall management of the territory to Rabbit. I will work in the fields.”

Lael decided. He recognized that Rabbit’s administrative ability was superior to his.

Grid questioned him. “Can’t you also show great abilities as an administrator? Isn’t it better to have Rabbit create a business company, since it will make more use of his talents?”

“Even though I have business ability, I don’t have the ‘Administration’ skill.”

In the end, Satisfy was a game. The importance of skills was higher than practical abilities. Administrators greatly increased the pace of domestic development because they had the Administration skill.

“In addition, diplomacy is included in the work of an administrator. Rabbit’s talent as a merchant will manifest itself in the form of diplomacy.

Lauel’s guess was correct.

After being appointed as the administrator, Rabbit reduced the scale of agriculture and invested in alchemy as well as facilities to amplify the value of blacksmiths, including Grid and Khan. At the same time, he exerted his talent as a merchant by talking diplomatically with ‘Baron Butin of the Saharan Empire.’

\*\*\*

“The alchemists say that the sand of the desert has no value in alchemy.”



Currently, Reidan's only available resource was sand. Sand was the basic material required for construction, but that was the role of sea sand. Unlike the sand at the sea, the desert sand was so fine that there was no place to use it.

Modern society could utilize the desert sand due to advanced technology, but Satisfy's background was a medieval fantasy, so its technology was inferior to modern times. Rabbit tried to use the sand in magic and alchemy, but he couldn't achieve satisfactory results.

Then one day.

“Let's export the sand to Baron Butin.”

Rabbit came to Lauel and spoke nonsense. Lauel was perplexed. “Why should we export desert sand to Baron Butin?”

The desert was all over the west. There was an excess of sand so there was no point in exporting it. It was realistically impossible. Rabbit smiled at Lauel's disapproval and explained.

“I will make it so that the baron has to import it.” Rabbit noted that Baron Butin owned one of the empire's resorts where many wealthy people and nobles visited. “The people of Reidan have lived in this hot and desolate place for 10 years. I will advertise it like this. The sand of Reidan remedy of longevity that will improve human health.”

“...Huh?”

Lauel was stunned by the absurd words.

Rabbit continued. “It’s a luxury product made with magic, and those who don’t have it will covet it. I will set the price higher so that the image of a luxury product will be firmly established. The longevity remedy won’t be credible if it’s cheap.”

“No, what type of sophistry...?”

Lauel wondered if Rabbit was sane. But Rabbit didn’t care and kept talking.

“I will use Khan as my advertising model. He’s older than 60, so if we put him front and center, the trust of the customers will increase and the reputation of the longevity remedy will rise.”

Rabbit referred to the sands of Reidan as a ‘longevity remedy.’ Lauel was convinced that Rabbit was crazy. Rabbit had high stats and great skills as a named NPC, but he had a clear flaw in his personality.

But what was the truth?

“It’s selling well.”

The sands of Reidan were called the ‘Longevity Remedy’ and

started to be imported at the mad price of 3 gold per 10 grams.

Once the nobles and wealthy people who visited the Butin Barony heard about the reason why the sand of Reidan was called the Longevity Remedy, they couldn't resist buying out of curiosity.

“This might cause a serious problem in the future...”

Lauel was concerned, but Rabbit reassured him.

“3 gold is huge for a commoner, but this is trivial for the rich.”

Even if they knew it was a scam, they could just laugh it off. They didn't have to get angry over that level of money. In the first place, there was no reason to call it a scam. How could people know their exact lifespan? There was no way to prove that the lifespan of a person was increased or not increased by the Longevity Remedy, so there was no reason to call it a scam.

“The one thing I regret is that there aren't more people visiting the Butin Barony. For the moment, the profit from selling this will stay at around 800 gold per month. But if the rumors of the goods become widespread in the future, things will change again.”

“...This is a good idea.”

800 gold a month. It was a ridiculously small sum for a big city. But the product being sold was mere sand. They just needed to put the sand that could be found anywhere in pretty glass bottles and

sell them for 3 gold each. The net profit was 99.9%. If the sales amount rose like Rabbit predicted, it would be a powerful revenue source for Reidan.

‘He truly is a wealthy merchant...’

‘This is a complete scam.’

Lauel and the Overgeared members were alerted to the true nature behind Rabbit’s face.

Grid just laughed.

All types of talented people were gathering around him.

# Chapter 222

---

One month in reality and three months in Satisfy time passed.

In the meantime, Reidan's crops grew well. It was because the water channels discovered by Piaro provided nutrients to the land, and Grid's equipment improved the soil quality.

The financial burden diminished, so they no longer needed to import food at high prices. In addition, vegetation started to grow, the yellow dust became weak, and the people became healthier. The sight of the sick children improving brought tears to the people's eyes.

“This is all thanks to Duke Grid.”

“Ah! That's right!”

The people had been suffering for the past 10 years and were about to starve to death, so Grid and the Overgeared members were like angels sent by Goddess Rebecca. The people were absolutely obedient to Grid and the Overgeared members, who were their saviors.

They were educated and trained as farmers, blacksmiths, architects, soldiers, etc. As a result, they were able to feel a sense of accomplishment from reviving the city with their own strength.

Reidan was full of vitality.

“Have you been out on the streets lately? Voices praising My Lord are everywhere.”

“Really? I’ve been so busy that I don’t have time to go outside.”

In the past, Huroi had vowed to serve Grid to repay the favor. But now it was different. Huroi respected the maturing Grid and was loyal to him based on that.

“I’m proud of you.”

The ghost town on the verge of destruction had now become lively. Thanks to the Overgeared members, the monsters didn’t threaten Reidan, and a small but powerful army was being trained by Jude.

Khan was nurturing young blacksmiths, and thanks to Rabbit, the overall speed of development of Reidan increased. Euphemina showed her strength in many fields by duplicating monster taming, blacksmithing and architectural skills.

In particular, Jishuka played a huge role as ruler of Bairan. She and the other two Overgeared members trained the knights and soldiers, and continued hunting the frostlight orcs and raiding the Guardian of the Forest. Thanks to this, the guild’s warehouse was filled with various minerals and sylphid scales. Soon, all members of Overgeared were going to have an invisibility cloak.

The person who brought together such excellent talents and strong personalities? It was none other than Grid. Huroi's respect for Grid increased day by day.

“There's still a long way to go.”

Grid wasn't satisfied with the present state. It was because Reidan was still in a deficit.

‘We only have a smithy, barracks, and alchemy institute as facilities.’

The number of people wasn't increasing. Taxes also couldn't be raised. Even though he made five items a day, he couldn't see any profit at all. So Grid was in a bad mood. What would've happened if Grid sold the 450 items he made over the past three months to users instead of investing it in Reidan?

‘I would've earned at least 1.5 billion won, even if I have to pay taxes and take into account the price of the materials...’

Of the 450 items, not one legendary rated item was produced, but there were two unique rated items. However, he couldn't sell them to users and used them for the facilities. Lael encouraged the grumbling Grid.

“Don't dwell on the immediate damages. Thanks to the items you made, the efficiency of each work field has increased by several times, and will return to you as a bigger profit.”

“I know.”

Now it was time for lunch. Due to all the work, Grid ate at the smithy while discussing things with Huroi and Lauel. On the other hand, Khan was busy teaching the young blacksmiths.

Lauel clicked his tongue. “Khan is growing stronger every day. As I look at his increased health, I sometimes wonder if Reidan’s desert sand really does improve longevity.”

“That inspiration is innate. Which reminds me, has there been a steady increase in sales for the Longevity Remedy?”

“Yes, this month’s sales has reached 1,230 gold.”

“Still, it isn’t even a quarter of Rabbit’s pay.”

Rabbit received a 500 gold salary as a viscount, then another 5,300 gold as his administrator salary. This was the ‘minimum’ value set by Rabbit himself. Even if he pledged his loyalty, he wouldn’t work for less than 5,300 gold a month. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that Reidan’s current deficit was due to Rabbit.

“But we shouldn’t begrudge him. Sir Rabbit’s value can’t be converted to money.”

“I know.”



Thanks to Rabbit, Reidan was growing quickly. The increase of domestic affairs was unrivaled when compared to other cities. Indeed, a named NPC like Rabbit with an S-grade administrative skill was worth any price.

‘Don’t fret and look to the future.’

After Reidan developed, the giant worms would be destroyed and the western area would be restored. Then he would use the western area as the foundation for becoming king. It was one of his immediate goals.

‘Then I will make money.’

Grid would become a tycoon. He didn’t want to suffer again because he didn’t have money.

Ttang! Ttang!

Grid ate the food that had been grown in three months, the rainbow potato. He hadn’t been able to hunt for the past three months, so his level was stuck at 275, but he wasn’t nervous because his stats increased every time he made an item higher than the epic rating.

Grid was a blacksmith, so he could level up his stats even if he worked in the smithy.

\*\*\*

The Butin Barony was at the eastern end of the Saharan Empire. It was a rural area, with only the natural view of the sea. Furthermore, it was a very peaceful place where monsters didn't pop up, so it was extremely rare for users to come here.

However, the 3rd ranking merchant, Muto, operated a small company and was extremely focused on trading with the Butin Barony. The Butin Barony might be empty of users, but it was a resort for rich NPCs and nobles.

“The Longevity Remedy?”

Muto was focused on supplying luxury goods to the rich and nobles who visited the Butin Barony. His sales rate had decreased suddenly, and he finally identified the reason. He looked at the small amount of sand in the glass bottle and frowned.

“This sand is sold as a luxury product under the name Longevity Remedy? The selling rate of my products is falling because of this?”

Muto had seen countless items. As a merchant, his insight was excellent, so it wasn't difficult for him to see that the Longevity Remedy was just simple sand.

“It's a really good idea.”

Which merchant came up with the idea of marketing the sand of Reidan as the Longevity Remedy? Muto marveled after hearing about it from the NPCs of the Butin Barony.

“This level of business acumen is almost at the level of a scam.”

There must be a tremendous merchant hiding in Reidan. Muto was sure of it. He worried about how he could compete with such a huge merchant and soon came up with an idea.

“Isn’t there a huge desert surrounding Reidan?”

Ssik.

Muto smiled with satisfaction and immediately led his company to Reidan. But he faced difficulties as soon as he crossed the border.

“W-What is this?”

The guards of the Muto Company were over level 200. As mercenaries hired at an expensive price, they perfectly protected the company from monsters and bandits. But as soon as they entered the territory of Reidan, the giant worms, desert toads and other powerful monsters devoured the guards.

“T-This is crazy...!”

Why were the monsters so strong? The twin ogres were the strongest monsters he had seen so far, and they were nothing against the western monsters.

“R-Run away!”

The Muto Company had to run away from the crazy monsters. But Muto still didn't forget to put the sand from the desert into his bag.

“Pant pant! Damn! I almost got killed!”

Muto trembled as he barely survived and returned to the Butin Barony. He was desperate, since he lost half of the guards in the desert.

“I have to sell all of the sand to recoup some of the losses.”

Muto went to find a merchant NPC. Then he brought out the Longevity Remedy he made from the sands of Reidan. However, the NPC clicked his tongue.

“The Longevity Remedy is made from sand collected in the center of Reidan, not ordinary sand from the desert. We only acknowledge the sand from Reidan's lord as the Longevity Remedy, while everything else is rubbish. Let's stop any transactions in the future. I no longer want to work with a crook like you.”

“ ... ”

This was bad. He thought it would be easy. But his opponent had already penetrated into his brain. Muto was frustrated after losing many guards and clients because of mere sand.

\*\*\*

“Garlic.” Shin Youngwoo logged out of Satisfy and went out into the living room for dinner. Then he found his parents peeling garlic and sat down beside them. “I’ll help you.”

Youngwoo’s parents ran a vegetable store, and garlic was treated as a commodity. They had to work hard everyday to peel the garlic. In the past, he didn’t help his parents, but now he was different.

He matured and was willing to help his parents. But his parents refused.

“Youngwoo, aren’t you having a hard time playing the game? You should take this time to rest.”

“Yes. This is our job. Youngwoo, you should go eat and focus on the game again.”

His parents dismissed the game in the past, but now they recognized it as his workplace. Youngwoo felt a sense of gratitude and sat down with a bright smile.

“I want to help.”

It wasn't easy for a person with less experience to peel garlic. The surface of garlic was hard and the skin was very thin. It needed some tricks to peel the skin attached to the surface. Youngwoo had no dexterity since he was a child. Until he joined the army, he couldn't even tie his shoelaces properly. It normally took Youngwoo a long time to peel one garlic, so he wouldn't be a big help.

Youngwoo's parents knew this fact, but they didn't stop him, since their son said he was willing to help.

Then after a while.

“Oh my? Youngwoo, when did your dexterity become so good?”

His mother was full of admiration. Youngwoo quickly peeled the skin of the garlic like a pro. The speed was comparable to his parents, who had been running a vegetable store for decades. His father was also surprised.

“What's this?”

Youngwoo was even more amazed than his parents.

‘Unbelievable. Why is it so much easier to peel garlic?’

He felt like his dexterity had increased dramatically, unlike the past. What was the reason? Youngwoo pondered over it as he peeled the garlic. Then he got the answer within minutes.

‘It is the result of repetitive actions!’

A delicate hand was needed to make items. Since becoming Pagma’s Descendant, Youngwoo had made thousands of items. It seemed that his dexterity in reality increased through his memories and this experience.

‘I’ve seen it in the news before.’

A person repeatedly practiced swordsmanship Satisfy, and their skills increased in reality. It was the inevitable result of repetitive practice. Of course, a person’s physical ability in reality was significant lower than it was in Satisfy, so it was impossible to implement all the techniques. However, following some techniques wasn’t difficult.

It was the same reason why Youngwoo’s dexterity rose now.

“Huhuhu...”

Youngwoo laughed with satisfaction. He was glad that if he ever obtained a lover in reality, he would be able to make her happy with his dexterity. It was the moment when the legendary hand dexterity that brought ecstasy to women in Satisfy appeared in

reality.



# Chapter 223

---

He helped his parents with the garlic and finished his meal. Then Youngwoo connected to his fan cafe and cheered.

“Finally...!”

Yesterday, the fan cafe had exactly 1,998,411 members, and now it exceeded two million. There was the golem invasion and he became the first user to become a duke, so his popularity had greatly increased.

‘I’m happy.’

The fact that two million people were showing interest and liking towards him made Youngwoo’s heart overwhelmed. He had been ignored and despised for a long time, so the affection of others was new and he felt happy every day.

‘I wonder what Noe’s fan cafe is like these days.’

After a long absence, Youngwoo accessed Noe’s fan cafe and laughed.

“I can’t catch up with his popularity.”

Noe’s fan cafe had reached 2.75 million members. The speed was rising much faster than Youngwoo’s fan cafes. The difference

between the two fan cafes was increasing day by day. In the past, Youngwoo would be trembling with jealousy, but now he was different. He completely shook off the inferiority complex that was deeply rooted in him and wasn't easily jealous anymore.

‘Noe's rising popularity will increase awareness towards me, since I'm his owner.’

Youngwoo had been watching Lael for months, so even his thinking ability was improving. He thought positively and stopped writing bad comments on Noe's fan cafe.

“Grid doesn't know about Noe?”

It was the title of the day's most popular post. What was this nonsense? Noe was his pet. There was nothing he didn't know about Noe. He was the only one who knew about the stupid and simple personality hidden behind Noe's cute looks.

Youngwoo wondered how this speculative post became the most popular.

Title: Grid doesn't know about Noe?

Content: It has been a long time since Noe appeared in Reinhardt, making us cheer.

Noe's eyes that shine like jewels and the beauty that is enough to overpower our gaze. But he is 'still' strong. Noe was able to weaken

the suddenly evolved ancient weapon by swallowing it, allowing Grid and the Overgeared Guild to win against the golem army.

Now I have a question. Originally, don't pets change shape and have a stronger presence as they level up? But Noe's appearance hasn't changed since the National Competition. In other words, it means that Noe's level isn't much different from the National Competition and Grid isn't nurturing him properly.

Think of it from Grid's perspective. As the first legendary class, he's a person with a very busy schedule. If you look at TV right now, his CFs play successively. As a top star, he has little time to play Satisfy.

Grid thought the words he read were absurd.

“Nonsense.”

The CFs recently being aired were all filmed right after the National Competition. Currently, Grid had completely stopped all broadcasting activities. He was on Satisfy all the time except when eating and sleeping, and was struggling to manage Reidan.

However, the author of the post didn't know this and was just rattling off nonsense. Youngwoo felt frustrated as he read the rest of the post.

The fact that Grid has less time to play Satisfy means less time to raise Noe. So Noe's level hasn't changed since the National

Competition. Then I can deduce that Grid has a very poor understanding of ‘top-grade pets.’

Typical pets lost their loyalty to their owners and will return to the wild state if they are away from their owners for long periods of time. The owners of these pets usually put them in the inventory when they can’t be with the pet for a long time (e.g. when logged out).

But what about drakes? As a ‘top-grade pet,’ its loyalty isn’t easily lost, even when it has a long period of activity separate from its owner. This is why the owners of drakes can let them freely graze. A drake’s owner often lets it hunt alone to raise their level and don’t keep them in their inventory, even when they are logged out.

So let’s point out the problem. Noe is better than a drake. The evidence is that he overwhelmed dozens of drakes alone and called himself the best demonic beast of hell. In other words, Noe should enjoy more freedom than a drake.

If Grid had given Noe freedom, then I’m sure his growth would be tremendous. However, Grid lacks understanding of pets and didn’t give freedom to Noe, probably keeping Noe in his inventory.

Noe’s growth became stagnant. This is proof of Grid’s ignorance, and is an insult to the top-grade pets.

“Ah...!”

Youngwoo realized it as he read the post.

‘I am really lacking understanding about pets.’

In the case of a common pet, the pet would hunt monsters with its master and the experience would be split between master and pet. This was why Youngwoo didn’t raise Noe’s level. Noe was very powerful even without raising his level, and Youngwoo didn’t want to lose his experience to Noe.

‘However, a top-grade pet can hunt independently from the owner and grow on their own?’

They didn’t easily betray their owner.

‘In the future, I should give Noe freedom so that he can grow.’

Noe hadn’t eaten since the golem invasion. Apart from that one time, he was always in his inventory.

“...It must be frustrating.”

Youngwoo was able to realize Noe’s grievances. He felt sorry towards Noe. Then he thanked the author of the post for giving him new knowledge.

“He went too far.”

At the same time, Youngwoo was also angry. In a community of 2.75 million members, it was too much to call someone ignorant just from mere deduction.

‘I represent the Overgeared Guild.’

He couldn’t ignore it because it was the same as insulting the Overgeared Guild. Youngwoo took immediate action.

God Grid isn’t Bald’s comment: Yes, next pet person please ^오^ I am an expert on all classes ~

The author of the post that Youngwoo read was a expert on pets. But in front of the keyboard warrior, he became a ‘person who doesn’t know about pets’ and a ‘non-expert.’

After that.

“Nyang! The best demonic beast of hell has emerged!”

Noe was still at level 35, despite destroying the ancient weapon.

“Is it time to eat? Nyang?”

Eyes filled with expectations looked at Grid, who commanded.

“From now on, you can move freely in the vicinity of Reidan. You

can eat as many monsters as you like, but don't do anything that will harm humans. In addition, report to me if you see anything suspicious... Finally, fly to me whenever I call, no matter what you are doing. Don't forget that I am your only master."

"Nyong..."

Noe's eyes became wet. The '人' shape snout opened with excitement as he asked.

"Master is really giving Noe freedom...? Noe can go...? Believe in Noe! Nyang!"

"Yes, as long as you follow my rules."

"Thank you! Nyang! Master is the best! Nyang!"

The little demon wings flapped as Noe circled around Grid before flying high into the sky.

"Cat...?"

The people of Reidan were stunned as they saw a black cat flying in the sky. It was the historic day when Noe, who would be revered as the guardian of the Reidan people, appeared in front of them for the first time.

\*\*\*

Sehee and Yerim were stars among the high school population of South Korea. They were in the top 10 nationwide of the mock exams and also beauties, so they were the target of envy.

Recently, their popularity had skyrocketed. Before they were just stars of the high schools, but now they were stars of South Korea. Even foreigners recognized them. It was the aftermath of the golem invasion of Reinhardt that occurred around a month and a half ago in reality.

“Ruby!”

“Sexy Schoolgirl!”

The two girls who worked with Grid to save the Eternal Kingdom and became the first earls! People were enthusiastic every time they saw them.

“How did you join the Overgeared Guild?”

“What is God Grid like?”

“What is the secret to playing well while studying?”

“Why is your ID Sexy Schoolgirl...?”

Sehee and Yerim had to suffer from a barrage of questions.



Various media also visited to request an interview. There were many companies who showed interest in them, causing a flood of CF model requests.

“Is this enough?”

It reached the point where it was impossible for Sehee and Yerim to go out without a disguise. After school ended. Before leaving the classroom, the two girls covered their faces as much as possible with masks and scarves. They mixed among the students and barely managed to leave the school.

Afterwards, the place they went to was a capsule room, not their homes or the library. They had a plan to play Satisfy three times a week and followed it.

Three hours later.

“Today was so much fun! Right?”

“Yes. I am now fully adapted to the new skills, so it’s fun to play.”

Sehee was now level 70 after the golem invasion. On the other hand, the Saintess’ Knight Yerim was still level 51 because she couldn’t raise her level during the golem invasion. However, it wasn’t a problem when the two girls played in a party.

The Saintess and Saintess’ Knight classes had great synergy. In addition, Youngwoo made items for them, so it was possible for

them to hunt level 100 monsters when they joined forces. To borrow a phrase from Lael, they were ‘golden spoons’ who played the game to help Youngwoo after they raised their levels.

“It really is Ruby and Sexy Schoolgirl.”

There were university students who followed Sehee and Yerim after they left the capsule room. They had seen through Sehee and Yerim’s disguise.

“It isn’t even 10 p.m. yet, so why are you going home?”

“Let me buy you something delicious. We should become friendly, as we’re both Satisfy users.”

The four university students were all confident with their appearances. In fact, they were online shopping mall advertising models and were confident that pure high school girls would fall for them. But Yerim and Sehee weren’t people who only looked at appearance.

Sehee had a hatred for men other than her brother, while Yerim looked at money.

“Do you have a lot of money? We only eat expensive things.”

Yerim gave a dazzling smile and provoked the university students. The university students felt their hearts thump before they shouted.

“Tell us what you want! We will buy you anything!”

“That’s okay. In fact, someone is already buying us a meal.”

“Are you talking about Grid?”

“That’s right.”

“...”

The eyes of the four university students sharply cooled. In fact, they were avid fans of Yura and Jishuka. But they had the scandal with Grid at the National Competition, turning the students into fierce anti-fans of Grid. They couldn’t tolerate that Grid had already gobbled up the world’s best beauties, Yura and Jishuka, and now he was monopolizing Sehee and Yerim as well.

“That bastard Grid...”

“Hey, both of you. You shouldn’t hang out with that type of playboy. Throw away that trash guy and come play with us.”

The university students became agitated after hearing Grid’s name and forcibly grabbed Sehee and Yerim’s wrists.

“Remove your hand.”

A voice filled with anger was heard. It was a voice familiar to anyone in South Korea and the world.

“Oppa!”

“Grid...!”

That’s right. It was Shin Youngwoo. After Sehee and Yerim became famous, Youngwoo was worried about their safety. Therefore, he took on the role of bringing them home every night. Today he came to pick them up, only to become furious as he saw this scene.

“Take your hands off them right now. Then I will overlook it this time.”

Youngwoo held a phone in his hand and pressed 112. But at that time, his phone ran out of battery.

Beep.

It turned off with a loud noise.

“Ah, this, really...’

Why was this happening to him?

## Chapter 224

---

Youngwoo's knowledge of human relationships was still limited. Youngwoo only used his phone to order delivery. He treated his phone as a decoration and didn't care about the battery life, leading to this situation.

'I'm screwed.'

Youngwoo was about to report the university students to the police, when he was shaken by the situation not turning out as planned. The four university students were aggressive towards him.

"Grid, isn't it hard to manage your estate?"

"Weren't you with Yura and Jishuka during the National Competition, so why are you free now?"

"I looked at your age on the Internet, so why are you trying to monopolize these girls as well? Do you want to be handcuffed for violating the law. Eh? Don't you know?"

The university students knew without a doubt that Youngwoo was older than them. They didn't even think about releasing the wrists of Sehee and Yerim.

'Those jerks.'

Youngwoo was angry when he heard the university students' tone of voice and his sister's pained expression. He wanted to run there and punch them in the jaw. But this was reality, not Satisfy.

In reality, Youngwoo was helpless. He had always been one-sidedly beaten by strong people. He had been beaten up many times, but now he wanted to commit violence against four healthy university students?

It was impossible.

First of all, Youngwoo looked around. It was to ask someone for help. Unfortunately, there was no one on the streets. It wasn't 10 p.m. yet, but it was fairly quiet. It was the result of Sehee and Yerim finding a empty place to avoid their popularity.

'This isn't ideal...'

Youngwoo took a deep breath. He suppressed his anger as much as possible and smiled.

"Let the kids go. Yes? We aren't shooting a drama, so this isn't interesting. Right?"

Youngwoo tried to persuade the university students. However, the university students didn't move at all.

"What if I don't want to?"

The university students couldn't tolerate that he was monopolizing all the pretty women. Taking Yura and Jishuka, now he was taking their future prospects? The infuriated university students started to handle Sehee and Yerim more roughly. They dragged them with force and provoked Youngwoo.

“These girls will play with us tonight. Anyway, what does it matter who we are? We're also people who make money from the game. It doesn't matter who you play with, as long as the man gives you money right?”

“Let go of me!”

Sehee struggled to shake off the university students. However, a female high school student was unable to win against the strength of men in their early 20's.

“Stay still!”

The university students grabbed Sehee harder instead of releasing her. Then they raised their hand like they would strike her.

“Won't you act more moderately?”

At that time, the silent Yerim frowned.

“These damn scum... Do you want to die?” Youngwoo’s string of tension was snapped.

It didn’t matter if he couldn’t fight well. He couldn’t stand to see his little sister insulted and treated like this.

‘Even though I was a loser.’

When he was a highschool student. Youngwoo was always hit by Lee Junho for no reason. But he couldn’t fight back because he was afraid of bigger retribution. He laughed it off, even if he didn’t want to. He started to be ignored by the other students and this became a great trauma when he was an adult.

‘It has been awhile since I’ve overcome it.’

Youngwoo was no longer a loser. He wouldn’t give in to these thugs just because he was scared.

“What? You will kill us?”

“Puhahaha!”

The university students laughed at Youngwoo. In fact, Youngwoo’s school days were famous on the Internet. Some of his classmates circulated Youngwoo’s past onto the Internet after he became famous.



“This bastard can’t distinguish between reality and a game.”

“Hey Grid. This is reality, not Satisfy. Try and do Pagma’s Swordsmanship here! Kill! It isn’t possible. Then what is with this courage? Eh?”

The university students regarded Youngwoo as weak prey. Even Youngwoo himself didn’t think he could fight against the university students. However, he couldn’t retreat, so he just clenched his fists.

‘It’s shaky.’

A university student spat out his phlegm and approached. Youngwoo wondered if he could beat any of them. The Youngwoo of the past wouldn’t have endured the pressure and run away. However, he improved his self-esteem through Satisfy and had the feeling of ‘courage.’

‘If I have to fight, I will fight.’

Fighting spirit rose in Youngwoo’s eyes. In reality, he wasn’t Satisfy’s Grid, but he had his own pride.

“This damn bastard.”

The university student became angry at the sight of Youngwoo and punched at him. The university student’s fist was quick. He had no qualms about hitting a person. Youngwoo was surprised

when he saw the flying punch.

‘It’s slow?’

Youngwoo had experienced numerous battles with strong opponents in Satisfy. Just like his dexterity, his vision in reality was also impacted. The university students hadn’t learned martial arts, so they weren’t a threat to Youngwoo.

Deftly.

Youngwoo succeeded in avoiding the fist with the university student with swift movements.

“What? He avoided it?”

The university student made an expression like it was ludicrous. Then he spat out his cigarette and kicked out. As a Korean citizen, he was taught Taekwondo during his childhood, so his kick contained more power and speed than his fist.

‘If you concentrate more strength in your thighs and buttocks, then your upper body’s forward speed will increase.’

The teachings of Piaro passed through Youngwoo’s head. At the same time, Youngwoo’s upper body moved forward. Then the kick of the university student flew above Youngwoo’s head and hit the air. Youngwoo remembered the teachings of Piaro and felt something eerie as the kick passed above him.

‘It isn’t just the limbs. Mobilize the muscles of the throat to put weight on the end of the sword.’

Sword? He had swung it thousands of times. Controlling his muscles? He received a thorough education from Piaro. Youngwoo thought of his fingertips as a sword and swung them.

Peeok!

“...!”

The university student couldn’t respond to the hand gesture that came from below him. He was hit in the chin and couldn’t even scream before collapsing.

“...Eh?”

“W-What?”

The university students never imagined their friend being defeated and were shocked. Youngwoo was even more surprised than them.

‘I won?’

He had hit a person for the first time since being born. He even knocked the person down. Before, he had always run away or was

beaten up.

Duguen! Duguen!

Youngwoo's heart thudded at the whole new experience. The other university students rushed towards him.

“This jerk!”

A university student flew towards Youngwoo with all his strength. Youngwoo was still calm.

‘It's sloppy.’

The orbit of the kick was very simple. Youngwoo took two steps back and swung his arm.

Chaaeng!

Youngwoo's hand accurately struck the university student's ankle.

“Ugh...!”

The time when he went to Cork Island to collect the fire stones. Youngwoo had flown there without a break, and was able to taste the pleasure of pushing his body to the limit. He wanted to taste

this addictive sensation in reality and jogged with Sehee every morning, as well as going mountain climbing on the weekend. He also didn't forget simple weight training.

This had been repeated for three months. As a result, Youngwoo's body was disciplined compared to the weak bodies of the university students that were filled with alcohol and tobacco.

"I-It hurts..."

The university student that was struck by Youngwoo's hand shuddered at the pain. It was just like being hit by a metal pipe. It was natural. Youngwoo followed the teachings of a great swordsman, so he showed a power that ordinary people couldn't endure.

"T-This...!"

According to the rumors floating around the Internet, Youngwoo was a loser who was always beaten up. But he could actually fight well? The remaining two university students were shaken.

On the other hand, Youngwoo admired his own ability and wanted to fight some more. He wanted to enjoy this strength.

"What? You aren't coming?"

Youngwoo moved his finger and provoked them. The remaining two university students couldn't bear it anymore and moved.

“What is that triumphant air!?”

Pepeak! Peok!

The dog fight started. The university students randomly swung their fists and feet at Youngwoo. If two opponents struck at the same time, Youngwoo wouldn't be able to avoid it unless he was a martial artist.

Youngwoo responded to both attacks using the footwork he acquired from Pagma's Swordsmanship. He was like Bruce Lee as he moved like flowing water to evade the attacks from both people.

However, it was only for a moment. Youngwoo's body wasn't tempered enough to keep up these actions. His health was at the level of the general public. He couldn't reproduce Pagma's Swordsmanship forever. There came a time when he stepped wrongly, twisting his feet and causing his posture to collapse.

“Hahat! This jerk is a fool!”

Youngwoo was indiscriminately attacked by the university students who laughed at him.

“Ugh! Eek!”

Bam bam bam!

Youngwoo felt like he could see the illusion of stars flashing in front of his eyes. But in the meantime, Sehee and Yerim were freed.

“Run away!”

Youngwoo swallowed down the words to call the police quickly. Even if he didn’t say it, he believed that they would report it to the police station.

At that moment.

“That is enough.”

Unlike Sehee, who was screaming and wondering what to do, Yerim jumped lightly. Youngwoo was attracted by her white and smooth legs as she kicked the university students.

Pakak!

Despite wearing a short skirt, Yerim’s kick perfectly struck the backs of the university students.

“Cough...”

“Ugh!”

Youngwoo suspected that they might've died. The university students exposed the whites of their eyes as they fainted.

‘What? Why is she so strong?’

Yerim reached out a hand to the stunned Youngwoo.

“Can you rise? My prince.”

Yerim looked very beautiful under the streetlights. She had a mature appearance that made it hard to believe she was a high school student, and her half moon eyes were sure to fascinate anyone.

But she was a minor, so Youngwoo didn't consider her that way.

After that.

“What? 3rd dan Taekwondo? Hey, then why were you just watching? It's really too much.”

In front of a convenience store.

Sehee and Yerim were rubbing eggs on Youngwoo's bruised face. Youngwoo was surrounded by two pretty girls, so he looked like a harem king from a manhwa. But Youngwoo didn't care about other people's gazes.



He was busy grumbling.

“If Yerim had fought from the beginning, Oppa wouldn’t look like this.”

“It’s rude to interfere in a fight between men, so I endured it.”

“It wasn’t a fight between men... It was one against four.”

“Hihi, anyway, it was great.”

Youngwoo was strong like a normal person. He might not be really strong, but his courage to protect his sister deserved praise. Today, Yerim’s crush on Youngwoo became much bigger. She really wanted to marry Youngwoo.

“Urgh... Then let’s go back. And from now on, both of you are banned from going to a capsule room. I will buy both of you capsules. Yes? Eh?”

Youngwoo tried to get up from the chair he was sitting on. But his muscles were sore from the aftermath of the fight and being hit. Yerim grabbed Youngwoo to stop him from falling sideways.

“Haah.” Yerim let out a strange sound. It was because Youngwoo’s fingers had moved from her underarm to her waist.

“W-What?”

Youngwoo became surprised by the sound while Yerim blushed and her eyes became moist.

“...Oppa is a really great person.”

What did that mean? Sehee didn't know the meaning, but Youngwoo understood it properly. He cleared his throat from the embarrassment.

# Chapter 225

---

“Finally! Finally level 300!”

It had been four months since the Overgeared Guild moved to Reidan. Toban was the last member of the former Tzedakah Guild to reach level 300. The powerful monsters of the west stimulated their growth.

“There will be a cataclysm in the unified rankings.”

“Cataclysm?”

“The top seven have firmly maintained their rankings but... I can safely say that most of the top 40 rankings are dominated by the Overgeared members.”

“Why is that a cataclysm? It isn’t anything special.”

Originally, all of the Tzedakah Guild members were ranked in the top 50. The average ranking had only risen by 10, so Grid thought it wasn’t that big of a deal.

‘It is rather strange that no one has entered the top seven, despite the items I made.’

Grid might be disappointed, but the world was astonished. The top 100 rankings didn’t fluctuate easily, so the present growth rate

of the Overgeared members was unprecedented. Media companies around the world wondered ‘What secrets are hidden in Reidan that can allow them to grow so quickly?’

『 The reporters have failed to enter the west. 』

『 In the western part of the Eternal Kingdom, there are monsters that have never been seen before. Experts speculate that only a party of at least level 280 users or rankers can enter... 』

『It seems like the Overgeared members are raising their level quickly by hunting the powerful monsters in the west. 』

『 Um... The monsters in the west will be a double-edged sword to the Overgeared Guild. The level up speed of the Overgeared members has risen exponentially, but there are few users who can move to Reidan due to the high entry barriers. 』

『 That’s right. Reidan’s speed of development will be slow. Duke Grid will definitely be hurt. 』

Ttang! Ttang!

There was the constant sound of hammering from the large smithy in Reidan. The 30 young blacksmiths taught by Khan were constantly producing the supplies that Reidan needed.

‘I’m tired.’

Grid was still busy despite the manpower increasing. After their third advancement class, the Overgeared members commissioned more powerful items, so he needed to continue making items.

‘But this damn hammering will be over soon.’

He only had five commissions left. Grid was free after he made those five items.

‘Let’s plan for the future.’

Grid had personal challenges. The first was to complete his class quest, the second was to recover all the pavranium, and the third was to complete Piaro’s quest. His work as a lord? He had the incomparably clever Lauel and Rabbit to take care of it, so there were no problems.

“You over there.”

Grid stopped hammering and called out to a soldier guarding the entrance of the smithy.

“Did you call?”

The soldier ran over with tight discipline.

‘The great duke called me!’

The soldier's eyes shone like lanterns as Grid ordered. "Bring Minor here."

"Yes!"

After 30 minutes.

"Oh, what do you want?"

A boy with a disgruntled expression came to the smithy. Despite possessing the talents of a great miner, he was fostered as a 'minerals detector' because he possessed the skill 'Minerals Master (S+).

"I will give you an escort to search for the presence of the golem's labyrinths here in the west."

"It isn't an escort, but surveillance."

"Someday, I will give you freedom if you swear true allegiance to me."

"...Well, I do acknowledge you these days. You're a commoner who became a duke. But I'm still wondering if a genius like me should devote the rest of my life to you."

Minor possessed the skill 'Talent will Reveal Itself (SS).' His

talent would always be clear to others, so he was destined to receive a lot of temptations in life. He was arrogant and would easily betray a person, so his loyalty wasn't guaranteed.

“Is it lacking to be the subordinate of a duke?”

“Indeed. At a minimum, shouldn't it be a king?”

“Hoh... You should remember that.”

Grid would surely become a king and would obtain him. Grid pledged as he waved his hands.

“Go now.”

“Yes, yes.”

Minor gave an insincere answer. But Grid knew better than anyone that he would work properly.

‘The problem of searching for pavranium in the west is resolved...’

The only things left were the class quest and Piaro's revenge quest. However, he couldn't proceed with his class quest right now. It was impossible for Grid to get God Yatan to bless the pavranium.

‘Even Yura doesn’t know where the First Servant of the Yatan Church is... First, I should resolve Piaro’s grudge.’

The cause of Piaro’s heart sickness, Asmophel. If Grid defeated the former vice-captain of the Red Knights, Piaro could be freed from these chains.

‘Once he is in a perfect condition, he might become my subordinate...’

The hopeful Grid continued making items.

Then five items later.

Grid completely all the items for the guild members and used the skill the Legendary Blacksmith’s Creation.

[Legendary Blacksmith’s Creation Skill]

You can create three equipment item production methods every time the skill level of the ‘Legendary Blacksmith’s Craftsmanship Skill’ goes up.

Number of items that can be created at present: 12/15.

\* When items are produced using this skill, the name of the creator is automatically placed on the item.



Then the familiar notification windows started to emerge.

[What item do you want to create?]

“Heavy boots.”

[Have you decided on ‘Heavy Boots?’]

“Yes.”

[What materials would you like to use?]

“Um...”

He shouldn't use only high grade minerals such as black iron, mithril and blue orichalcum as materials. The reason Grid wanted to make heavy boots was because he wanted weight. According to Piaro's advice, the heavier the shoes worn, the greater the power of the greatsword.

“The main material will be steel. I will mix blue orichalcum into it to add strength and hardness, and to make it exert more power in dark places. Ah, I have to make the color darker by mixing in black iron so that it will harmonize with my armor.”

[Have you decided?]

“Yes.”

[Please design the item.]

Grid was a lot more smart and skillful compared to when he first created Failure. He perfectly drew the shape of the boots he wanted on the blank blueprint in front of him.

“It’s done.”

Over the past four months, he made more than 600 items and his dexterity stat exceeded 3,000 points. Thanks to that, Grid was able to draw a delicate image and the shape of the boots was completed in a practical and excellent manner. They were big, black boots that came up to just below the knees. They had a rustic type of beauty.

[Have you decided? When you complete the blueprint, the number of available creation skill will decrease by one.]

Grid clicked the button without hesitation. Then the shape of the boots was corrected by the system to make it look more perfect.

[Please describe the characteristics of the item.]

“Heavy and solid boots. Thanks to the nature of blue orichalcum, the defense will increase in dark places.”

It was a simple, but accurate description. Based on Grid's description, the system started distributing the performance and options of the item.

[Finally, please decide the name of the item.]

From now on, all the items he created would proudly boast of the legendary blacksmith who created them. Grid replied in a proud voice, "Grid's Boots."

[Have you decided on 'Grid's Boots?']

"Yes."

Grid planned to attach his name to every item he designed in the future.

'I will aim to complete a set item based on these boots.'

[A new item, 'Grid's Boots' have been created.]

[Grid's Boots]

Rating: Epic ~ Legendary

Epic Rating Information:

Durability: 335/335 Defense: 324

Movement Speed: -12%

Evasion Rate: -14%

\* Increases defense by 10% against attacks from the bottom.

\* When using a dashing skill, there is a 30% chance of failure.

\* Defense will increase by 10% in dark places.

Unique Rating Information:

Durability: 401/401 Defense: 388

Movement Speed: -10%

Evasion Rate: -12%

\* Increases defense by 12% against attacks from the bottom.

\* When using a dashing skill, there is a 25% chance of failure.

\* Defense will increase by 15% in dark places.

## Legendary Rating Information:

Durability: 496/496 Defense: 470

Movement Speed: -8%

Evasion Rate: -10%

\* Increases defense by 15% against attacks from the bottom.

\* When using a dashing skill, there is a 20% chance of failure.

\* Defense will increase by 20% in dark places.

An item designed by a legendary blacksmith. Designed with a perfect combination of steel, black iron and blue orichalcum, it boasts overwhelming defense. However, there are many disadvantages to its function because it is only focused on defense.

In particular, it is too heavy, so movement is restricted.

User Restriction: Level 320 or higher. More than 1,450 strength. More than 1,200 stamina. Advanced Heavy Armor Mastery Level 5 or higher.

Weight: 2,930

The effectiveness was very low compared to Braham's Boots. It could be considered to be boots designed specifically for tanker classes, rather than damage dealers who relied on charging techniques. However, the defense was nearly twice as strong as armor of the same class. The defense was unusually high for boots, considering that boots had a quarter of the defense of armor.

‘This is perfect for me.’

In the first place, Grid didn't have a evasive type of fighting style. He favored swinging the sword. It wasn't just a matter of control, but a style unique to the greatsword. Furthermore, Grid had no charging skills.

‘The boots won't have any negative effect on me, except for a reduction in movement speed. These boots will also suit Vantner and Toban.’

Grid was satisfied with the finished creation. He dreamed that one day, both him and the Overgeared members would be armed with a ‘Grid set,’ and started to make an item for himself.

Ttang! Ttang!

“Ohh...!”

The skills of a legendary blacksmith was constantly studied by 30 young blacksmiths and Khan, so the future was bright.

\*\*\*

It had been a year since the fall of Pope Drevigo. Who would become the new pope after Drevigo? Numerous senior priests ran as pope candidates. Most of them were good priests and had a sense of mission to lead 70 million people to the path of light.

However, a small number of them wanted to be the pope to satisfy their individual needs. In particular, Pascal of the Judar Church was very ambitious.

“What if I became the master of 70 million people? The momentum of our family will pierce the sky and Father will surely become a duke.”

Pascal’s father was an earl of the Saharan Empire. Originally Pascal was a viscount, but he joined the church and became the leader of the Judar Church. Now he was looking at a higher place.

“I understand. Pascal, I will help you become the pope.”

The largest religion on the continent was on the verge of falling into the hands of the empire. At this time, the 70 million people who followed Goddess Rebecca’s teachings might become a political tool of the empire.

“Isabel-chan!”

The first unique hidden class, Damian, was trembling with sorrow. It was because Isabel's life was sharply decreasing after the unsealing of Lifael's Spear.



# Chapter 226

---

White Transformation referred to the technique of borrowing the goddess' power stored in the three divine artifacts of the Rebecca Church. It was a technique that allowed a person to borrow power that exceeded the human body. However, this power placed a heavy burden on the body.

Rebecca's Daughters refrained from using White Transformation as much as possible, and shortened the duration when they inevitably had to use it. But Isabel had been in the White Transformation state for the past year.

It was because Grid unsealed Lifael's Spear. Her life energy was rapidly becoming depleted.

“Cough! Cough!”

Her platinum hair had turned grey. Her shining eyes were faded like she was dead, and her normally flushed cheeks were pale. Nevertheless, she still looked beautiful.

‘Right now she is only 18 years old...’

She was about to die at this age.

Damian looked at Isabel out of habit and finally started crying. “How many times have I told you? I said that Lifael's Spear must be sealed! Then why... Why aren't you listening to me? Huh...?”

Isabel-chan, are the orders so important? More than your life?”

“Cough! Cough!”

Isabel lying in bed didn’t answer. She was staring at the distant sky out the window and her hearing had long been lost. She didn’t even hear Damian’s voice shouting right beside her.

“Isabel-chan...”

Damian’s handsome face twisted. His face was streaked with tears and a runny nose, so someone laughed at him.

“Why are you empathizing with tools?”

It was Pascal. He entered Isabel’s room without knocking, causing Damian to tremble.

“You...! How many times have I warned you not to describe them as tools?”

Damian hated Pascal.

The 5th Pope Franz felt a moment of compassion and sealed the divine artifacts of the church, leading to the weakening of the church. This was the logic used to convince the church that Lifael’s Spear shouldn’t be sealed again.

The person who spoke it was Pascal.

Pascal just shrugged. “Rebecca’s Daughters are fostered to serve this church in exchange for their lives. Don’t get caught up in useless sympathy and think about what is needed to keep the church. You are just damaging yourself.”

As his descendant, Pascal respected 5th Pope Franz. However, he couldn’t understand all of Franz’ policies. From the beginning, weren’t Rebecca’s Daughters people brought up as tools? Sealing the power of the divine artifacts just because they couldn’t endure it?

It was preposterous. An ignorant mistake. Pascal and most of the senior priests of the Rebecca Church thought this way. They planned to contact Pagma’s Descendant so that he could release the seals of the two remaining artifacts as soon as possible.

But Damian couldn’t tolerate it.

“I will never accept it.”

Rebecca’s paladins were much weaker than the Judar and Dominion paladins, so it wasn’t a popular class. However, Damian walked this path to the end without giving up just because of Rebecca’s Daughters.

Isabel, Rin, Luna. Damian longed for these three girls to always be happy. He wished for them to smile forever. He couldn’t stand

them suffering.

“They are people like us. And they have worked harder for this church than anyone else. To disparage them and call them mere tools... Goddess Rebecca won't forgive it.”

“You dare mention Goddess Rebecca? You are deceived by the beautiful appearance of the tools and lost control. Stupid.”

Pascal laughed at Damian. It was similar to those who ridiculed Damian in reality for running a fancafe of Rebecca's Daughters.

Damian couldn't understand them. “...Why do you have to ridicule someone's love and respect?”

“The problem is that the target is a tool, not a person.”

“Isn't this just like people in reality saying that Rebecca's Daughters are NPCs, not humans...?”

“Reality? NPC? I can't understand the language you are using.”

“Shut up!”

“...”

Pascal was the former leader of the Judar Church and a pope

candidate, so he had mighty divine power. Rebecca's Daughters were the only ones in the church with higher divine power than him.

However, at this moment.

“They are people too! They rejoice in every moment! They are impressed! Angry! Sad! They are the same as us! Not tools or NPCs! Don't compare them to such things!”

The divine power that Damian emitted was threatening. It was a threat to Pascal, who was likely to become the pope after Drevigo.

‘This is the power of the Goddess' Agent...!’

Pascal had always ignored Damian, who usually chased after Rebecca's Daughters. He had laughed when he heard some priests talk about trying to put Damian as pope, but now he was wary of Damian.

The upset Damian proclaimed to him. “I will change everything! I will root out all the rotten people, including you, who treat Rebecca's Daughters as sub-human beings! For Isabel-chan and Rin-chan! And for the sake of Luna-chan!”

Damian accepted the quest that he put on hold.

“I...! I will become the pope!”

[The quest 'Become the Pope' has been accepted.]

[Become the Pope]

Difficulty Level: SS

It has been one year since the death of 13th Pope Drevigo.

The Rebecca Church has barely recovered from the confusion and is now preparing to elect a new pope. However, Pascal is now the most powerful pope candidate and he plans to use the Rebecca Church as a political tool.

As the agent of the goddess, you have an obligation to guide the Rebecca Church to the right path and to stop Pascal's ambitions. Your power, beliefs and willpower will play a major role in defeating irrational violence and calming political strife.

After your crowning, you can never disobey Goddess Rebecca.

The faithful church members will cheer for you.

Quest Clear Conditions: In three months, become the pope in the pope's election.

Quest Clear Rewards: Second class 'Pope' will be obtained. 'Goddess Rebecca's Armor,' 'Goddess Rebecca's Helmet,' and

‘Goddess Rebecca’s Gloves’ will be acquired.

Quest Failure: Pascal will become the pope. The Rebecca Church will decline even worse than the days of Drevigo.

“You will become the pope?”

Pascal was angry. He’d already bought more than half of the votes. This declaration had no foundation to succeed.

“Well, good. As the Goddess’ Agent, you are qualified to be a pope candidate. I respect you.”

Thump thump.

Pascal nodded before heading over to Isabel’s bed. Isabel looked at him and he gave her an order.

“A Yatan Temple was found in Kent Village on the outskirts of the empire. Show them the divine power of the spear. Ah, can you hear me? This is the command. Read this and act accordingly.”

The user of Lifael’s Spear always had White Transformation triggered. Naturally, the work had to be done fast, so the elders assigned Isabel more duties than the other two Rebecca’s Daughters. As a result, Isabel’s life energy was depleting more quickly, but the elders didn’t care. They were already preparing substitutes in large quantities.

“I will go.” Damian intercepted the command. “I will take on all the duties that she will perform in the future.”

Pascal rejected it. “Didn’t I say it before? Are you making fun of the elders’ commands? As you know, the pope’s seat is currently empty so they are working on his behalf. Violating their orders is like going against the pope...”

“I am the Goddess’ Agent.” Damian responded strongly to Pascal, who tried to repeat an explanation that Damian had heard several times already. “As you said, the elders aren’t the pope.”

“...”

“I don’t want to hear anymore about the elders’ orders. Only the true pope and Goddess Rebecca can command me.”

Damian’s words sounded good, but he had a weak base. The senior priests didn’t treat Damian as important and ignored his opinions. But now Damian made his position clear, so Pascal couldn’t help feeling dumbfounded.

“Hrmm...”

Pascal tried to think.

‘If this guy is busy on the battlefield, he will be less likely to win



the pope's election held in three months.'

Damian wasn't competition in the first place, but it would be a good idea to clear the path.

Pascal nodded. "Go ahead. But I doubt that you will be able to perform the difficult missions with your abilities."

"I am strong."

He had a unique hidden class. Now Damian was different from the past. He was no longer the extra who just watched while Grid fought Drevigo. Damian was also a protagonist.

"Kukuk, good. Prepare your heart. If you become tired and fall down, Isabel will take on the missions again."

Then Pascal left the room. Damian cursed him and planned for the future.

'The mission is in the east of the empire. It is relatively close to the western part of the Eternal Kingdom.' Reidan was located in the west of the Eternal Kingdom. 'I will stop by to meet him.'

The person who went against Pope Drevigo and saved Rebecca's Daughters. He helped Damian become the Goddess' Agent. Also...

'The only one who can seal Lifael's Spear.'

Pagma's Descendant, Grid. He was the only person Damian could rely on.

“Damian...”

Isabel called out to Damian who was about to leave. Damian took a deep breath. His expression that was distorted with rage gradually softened to a smile.

“I am going, Isabel-chan. Please stay well.”

Damian said goodbye to her with a smile.

\*\*\*

[The experience of (Witness of God's Weapon) Legendary Blacksmith's Craftsmanship Skill Lv. 5 has increased by 19%.]

[A unique rated item was produced, increasing all stats by +4.]

[Reputation throughout the continent will rise by +150.]

[You currently have 25,110 reputation throughout the continent. You can use the Reputation Store when your reputation reaches over 30,000.]

“It’s good.”

Grid was very satisfied as he checked the result.

# Chapter 227

---

[Grid's Boots]

Rating: Unique

Durability: 477/477 Defense: 483

Movement Speed: -10%

Evasion Rate: -7%

\* Increases defense by 12% against attacks from the bottom.

\* When using a dashing skill, there is a 25% chance of failure.

\* Defense will increase by 15% in dark places.

Weight: 1,930

“Good, good. It wasn’t an epic rating.”

In the past four months, Grid had produced over 630 items, but he hadn’t produced one legendary item. However, he produced five unique rated items, so he was very pleased.

‘Five unique items out of 630 items... It’s so rare that I was lucky. And honestly, I am reluctant to make any more legendary items.’

Grid had made eight legendary items after becoming Pagma’s Descendant. If he produced two more, a ‘special event’ was likely to occur that would make him feel sick. He would rather make unique items.

‘The unique rated items aren’t greatly lacking compared to legendary items.’

The 30 young blacksmiths approached Grid who was grinning with satisfaction. They admired Grid’s Boots.

“Duke Grid, this is a work of art!”

“The degree of completion can’t be described in words!”

“Such elegance hidden inside a primitive design...! It truly is high quality!”

It was practically impossible for inferior blacksmiths to understand the work of the legendary blacksmith Grid. They just felt like it was great. But unlike their current appearance, their potential for development was enormous.

Grid had searched the 20,000 people of Reidan and selected those with excellent qualities, then Khan taught them. The ability of Grid and Khan to closely observe their skills exceeded common

sense.

‘At least eight of them are going to become advanced blacksmiths. I will raise new blacksmiths around them.’

They were people who might’ve become advanced blacksmiths in another city. Grid had the Blacksmith’s Affection skill, so he wasn’t exaggerating.

[Blacksmith’s Affection]

Appreciation of the NPC, which is the maximum skill level of the blacksmith, a minimum of 1 and a maximum of up to 5 randomly.

The blacksmith who received your teachings will be loyal to you for life and will share with you every time they learn new item production methods.

‘Anyway, next is the enhancement...’

Grid had a passive skill that ‘increased the probability of item enhancement.’ He enhanced Dainsleif to +8 and Failure to +9, so Grid wanted to try strengthening these boots to at least +8.

‘I’m aiming to use the Grid set for a long time, so I want to try enhancement...’

To do this, he needed enhancement stones. But the price of the

enhancement stones was rising. At the present time, the price of a general enhancement stone was 180 gold and a blessed enhancement stone was 2,500 gold. Given his previous experience and the current price of the enhancement stones, he would need at least 500,000 gold to enhance one piece of equipment to +8.

‘Dammit, why does the price of the enhancement stones keep climbing? In the old days, the price of the enhancement stones were 100 gold and the blessed enhancement stones were 1,200 gold.’

It was because the overall level of the users had risen. The higher the level, the longer it took to get out of that level section. Therefore, users felt the need to enhance their current items. As demand grew, the price of the enhancement stones also grew. There was no reason for the price of the enhancement stones to go down, unless the S.A. Group significantly increased the drop rate.

However, the S.A. Group wasn’t able to raise the drop rate of the enhancement stones. In order to maintain game service for a long time, the minimum requirement was to avoid gold inflation.

However, Grid couldn’t think of such complex things. He just lamented and sighed.

“Huh?”

Grid suddenly became confused. It was because the 30 blacksmiths admiring Grid’s Boots were now depressed.

“What’s wrong?” Grid questioned and the blacksmiths started explaining.

“Lauel commanded us to produce boots and gauntlets to supply the soldiers. We’re working hard on the boots and gauntlets, but...”

“After seeing Duke Grid’s work, the boots and gauntlets that we produced are too insignificant.”

“We know that it isn’t possible to make items at the same level as Duke Grid, but can you teach us so that we can at least mimic it?”

Khan had already passed on the boots production method to them. However, they were hoping for Grid to teach them instead of Khan.

‘I feel sorry...’

Grid watched Khan. But Khan just smiled.

“I don’t mind. Their desire to learn from you is very natural.”

A legendary blacksmith was on a different dimension from an advanced blacksmith. Khan knew this better than anyone. Grid saw his heart and nodded. Then he started smelting four pieces of iron ore in front of the 30 blacksmiths.



“It is very simple to make boots. Watch and learn.”

“Yes!”

‘I can receive the teachings of the great Duke Grid!’

The 30 blacksmiths’ eyes shone as they watched Grid. Grid made the boots while adding brief explanations, then...

[The experience of the Legendary Blacksmith’s Breath Skill Lv. 4 has increased by 9%.]

[The experience of (Witness of God’s Weapon) Legendary Blacksmith’s Craftsmanship Skill Lv. 5 has increased by 19%.]

[When legendary rated items are produced, all stats will permanently rise by +10.]

[Reputation throughout the continent will rise by +500.]

“ ... ”

Grid made legendary rated level 80 steel boots, shortening the time to the ‘special event.’

“Wah! Really amazing boots!”

“You can easily produce such a great piece!”

“Indeed, Duke Grid is a legend!”

“Damn...”

Grid shed tears. If Grid's Boots were made with the legendary rating, he wouldn't have felt so bad. Now one more legendary item remained until the special event happened.

“Hah...”

Grid could only sigh as he left the smithy. He couldn't let go of his unhappiness at completing boots for a soldier with a legendary rating.

“Sigh...”

Trudge trudge.

He had no strength in his steps. Grid staggered like a man who had lost his country. The people who saw him started to worry.

“Duke Grid is always proud and dignified, yet now he is having a hard time...”

“Surely a crisis isn't approaching Reidan?”

“Maybe it’s a large monster invasion...?”

Originally, it was a law that bad rumors spread faster. The security rating that was maintained at a stable figure thanks to Jude and the soldier’s efforts dropped dramatically. Jude and the Overgeared members were confused when they found out that the cause was Grid, but Grid didn’t even know about it.

\*\*\*

Reidan Castle.

‘According to Piaro, Asmophel’s escorts are very strong...’

Grid was unable to abandon enhancing the boots and searched the guild’s warehouse. He hoped to find enhancement stones inside. However, the guild’s warehouse only had a few minerals and sylphid scales that were supplied by Jishuka in Bairan.

“In the end, I’ll have to buy them.”

Grid checked his inventory. He currently had 20,000 gold. It was the money he acquired from disposing of the loot dropped by monsters that he hunted on the way here. What about the 5.5 million gold acquired from the golem invasion? Five million gold was used as the guild’s funds, while the remaining 500,000 was converted to Korean money.

Grid currently didn't have enough money.

“With this much money, I can only enhance it to +5 if I'm lucky.”

More money was needed. Grid went to his private warehouse. But there wasn't a single item in his warehouse that was worth money. A few months ago, he disposed of most of his items to acquire the money for his land and building in reality.

“Shit...”

He was a duke! Why did he have to be the owner of a big city?

“Huh?”

Grid was grumbling that Reidan was a poor city when he suddenly found an item in a corner of the warehouse. It was a glass bottle the size of his little finger. There was golden liquid in the glass bottle.

‘Maybe this will make me some money?’

[Goddess' Essence]

Weight: 0.1

It was an item he acquired from the Pope Drevigo raid. However,

even the Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal skill didn't have an explanation, so he didn't know where to use it.

‘The pope wouldn't drop a cheap item...’

Pope Drevigo was the one who dropped the Holy Light Battle Gear, which was the strongest armor set. Grid thought that the Goddess' Essence dropped by Drevigo was bound to have considerable value. But it was just a vague expectation. It was difficult to gauge the value because he didn't know where to use it.

‘What should I do? Ah!’

It was a mysterious item that couldn't be determined with the eyes of a blacksmith. Then a well-informed person was needed to figure out the identity. And he had such a person nearby.

It was Rabbit.

‘He has handled many goods, so won't he be able to recognize the value of this?’

Please let it be a valuable item, as he expected. Grid eagerly looked for Rabbit.

\*\*\*

Rabbit's office had documents stacked up like a mountain.

“I don’t know.” Rabbit observed the Goddess’ Essence a few times before giving up.

Grid panicked at the unexpected result. “There’s something you can’t grasp with your insight?”

“I know that is is liquid that contains the divine power of Goddess Rebecca. But it is hard to tell what the effect will be.”

“It can’t be sold?”

“Be cautious.” The always calm Rabbit raised his voice. “This liquid contains the divine power of Goddess Rebecca. You will regret it someday if you decide to sell it. You should treasure it for now.”

“I need a quick source of money.”

“Why?”

“I need enhancement stones.”

“Enhancement stones...”

Rabbit unfolded a gigantic map of the western part of the kingdom. During the past four months, the Overgeared members had adventured and completed this map.

# Chapter 228

---

Everything on the map seemed to have a smaller scale. Reidan, marked in the middle of the map, was only the size of a 500 won coin.

‘500 won... A large city that can accommodate 430,000 people is only the size of a 500 won coin...’

It showed how big the west truly was.

The Eternal Kingdom was divided into four regions: the east, west, north and south. However, the size of the four regions wasn’t constant. The west was the largest, followed by the north, east and south.

But this large territory suddenly became a desert. What if he destroyed the giant worms and restored the west? Grid was the next in line to the main power in the north of the Eternal Kingdom. He would be able to establish a unique position.

“Look here.” Rabbit pointed to one side of the map. It was the Hebed River that penetrated through Reidan. “As you can see, the villages and cities are concentrated on the southern basin of the Hebed River.”

Were there survivors in those places? But that didn’t matter.

“What is the reason?”

“...?”

Grid was surprised by Rabbit’s sudden question.

‘Why are the cities and villages concentrated there? Why is he asking me this? How should I know?’

The Grid of the past would’ve expressed his disgruntled thoughts. However, the current Grid was eager to improve his thinking abilities.

“Umm...”

He used his lacking brain to think again. As a result, he barely found an answer. “Is it because of water?”

People needed water to live. It was a simple reason and answer. But it was wrong.

“You’re wrong. Isn’t it also easy to secure water from the north basin? The reason why the population was concentrated on the southern basin in the past was because there was something to attract people there, besides water.”

“What does that mean?”

“It’s the mines. As you can see, there’s a small mountain range,



so it's geographically possible.”

“Mines?”

This was good news. It didn't matter if it was iron ore, silver or gold. Securing any resources, whether large or small, would unconditionally benefit them. It was good news for Reidan. However.

“I'm glad to hear it, but why are you suddenly talking about mines? It's just mines. You can take care of it with Lauel. Right now, I need enhancement stones. How did the conversation switch to this?”

‘Indeed... There is this type of response when hearing about the possibility of mines.’

Rabbit realized it clearly. Grid was different from a common lord. He had little interest in his role as a lord.

‘He only devoted himself to working in the smithy for the past four months.’ Some people might blame Grid for being irresponsible. But Rabbit thought about it positively. ‘The duke is right. He might be the best blacksmith and warrior, but he is lacking in knowledge. It's better for him to stay away from the administration side.’

Despite their lack of political power, there were lords who forcefully tried to control their politics. On the other hand, Grid

chose to rely on competent subordinates because he recognized his own deficiencies. He was the ideal lord who knew the limits of what he could do.

‘He is truly wise and wonderful.’

Grid was different from the stupid leader of the Mero Company that Rabbit served in the past.

Rabbit continued the explanation. “The Overgeared members have explored the southern basin to see if there really are mines. But there was a strong boss monster, so the Overgeared members abandoned the exploration and classified it as a danger zone.”

“Which of the Overgeared members went?”

“All of them.”

“What?”

The Overgeared Guild was strong. They were all rankers in the top 40. But despite them acting together, there was a boss monster powerful enough to make them retreat?

‘Is it at the level of the complete Hell Gao?’ Even Grid wasn’t an opponent for the complete version of Hell Gao. He barely managed to defeat Hell Gao after weakening him by taking two fire stones. ‘The current Overgeared members are much stronger...’

Regas was the first member of the Overgeared Guild to obtain his third advancement class. He chose the Asura class. It was a fighting demon that suited his personality. Then Regas went straight to Grid and asked for a duel. It was revenge for losing in the finals of the PvP match. As a result, Grid won.

‘I almost had to use my invincible passive.’

It was a shame, because the duel was after his training period with Piaro. After reaching the third advancement class, Regas was much stronger than before. It was the same for the other Overgeared members. But there was a boss monster in the west that they couldn’t defeat?

‘It is a terrible place.’

Grid clicked his tongue and prompted.

“So? What does that have to do with the enhancement stones?”

“Did you hear the explanation about why I invested more than half of the guild funds into the alchemy institutes?”

“I heard from Lauel. Isn’t the effect of alchemy amazing? It can make various buff potions, as well as assign special options to items.”

“There are many other things that alchemy can do. But most cities avoid investing in alchemy. It is to the point that even the richest cities that represent a kingdom are reluctant concerning alchemy.”

“Why?”

“Because it isn’t certain.”

The effects of items made with alchemy weren’t constant, but often random. Furthermore, the success rate of alchemy itself was extremely low. For example, even if the alchemy institute had the highest level, the probability of producing buff potions is less than 70%, and the probability of successfully giving an option to an item was less than 30%.

In addition, the prices of the materials needed for alchemy were too high. In conclusion, alchemy was a bad investment.

Grid frowned at the explanation. “What is this? Isn’t it complete rubbish?”

2,937,000 gold out of the five million guild funds had been invested in alchemy. Grid felt like he had been hit in the back of his head.

‘This man is determined to destroy me!’

Rabbit saw Grid’s expression and explained. “I plan to develop

Reidan into the second Talima.”

“Talima? The dwarf city?”

“That’s correct.”

The dwarf city Talima was called the city of heaven. Regardless of the rating, it was said that battle gear with a special performance were widely distributed. Even a small store would have a solid piece of equipment comparable to a unique-rated item, so many people wanted to go there to purchase battle gear. But it was impossible. Talima was located within the territory of the dragon Trauka, and was a city that humans couldn’t enter.

“What if Reidan has items like Talima?”

Certainly, the city would be able to show off a unique presence. People would come from all over the continent to Reidan. Rabbit hoped that day would come, so he encouraged the training of blacksmiths and invested in alchemy.

“Alchemy is a way to make the items produced by you and your blacksmiths shine. I am convinced that the only city on the continent worthy of investing in alchemy is Reidan.”

“Hrmm...”

If it developed the way Rabbit wished, a huge economic effect would be created. Grid hoped for that day as well. But.

“Isn’t the success rate of alchemy the worst? Can we afford it? What if we have bad luck and become bankrupt instead of becoming the second Talima?”

“Do you remember Administrator Arik?”

“Arik? Ahh, the lord of this place until I was appointed?” Arik was a funny person. The episode related to him was a sight to behold. “Isn’t he locked up in prison? What about him?”

“The reason Lael didn’t kill him was to retrieve information about the west from him. I was also able to gain valuable information from him.”

“What information?”

“Somewhere in the west, there is a mine for yellow mithril.”

“Yellow mithril?”

It was Rabbit’s decisive reason for investing in alchemy.

“Yellow mithril is the material for fairy dust. And fairy dust is a raw material that dramatically increases the chances of alchemy succeeding. I am guessing that there is a yellow mithril mine in the southern basin of the Hebend River.”

“Oh...”

It was a mineral that made it possible to overcome the low success rate of alchemy. Grid was thrilled. The radiant future of Reidan was drawn in his mind and he became excited.

“...By the way, what about the enhancement stones?”

He was still curious about the topic of conversation. Grid finally reached the limits of his patience so Rabbit cut to the chase.

“Enhancement stones can be made with alchemy.”

“...!”

Grid’s eyes widened. He thought enhancement stones only dropped from boss monsters, so he couldn’t help feeling surprised.

“Generally, it is wiser to avoid making enhancement stones because the probability of success is extremely low. But that story will change if we get our hands on fairy dust.”

It was the moment when the reason for Rabbit’s lengthy explanation was revealed.

“So the conclusion is, please go and secure the mine.”

“Okay.”

Grid instantly replied. There was no reason to refuse. The boss monster might be hard for the Overgeared members to raid, but the story would be different if Grid and Noe’s powers were added.

“Then I’ll go immediately.”

Grid was unstoppable once he made a decision. He immediately convened the Overgeared members. The Overgeared members were excited to be raiding with Grid after a long time.

“It’s the first time since the golem invasion.”

“We’ll be able to knock down that monster if we have Grid.”

Grid looked at the Overgeared members and asked them, “What type of monster is it? A demonkin?”

“No, it is a doppelganger.”

“Doppelganger?”

A doppelganger was a monster that copied the form and abilities of the target. They were obviously hard to deal with but...

“Even if he turns into one of us, we have the advantage in



numbers. Can't you easily defeat it?"

Pon explained, "As you said, the doppelganger is easy to deal with if it turns into one of us. But it's transforming into someone else who is much stronger than us."

Vantner continued. "It was really incredibly strong. The body is slim and the face is handsome, and he moves quickly while using a sword as big as Dainsleif."

Regas also spoke. "The way he moves the greatsword reminds me of you, Grid."

Faker added. "The basic moves are similar to Grid, but the sword techniques are several times better than Grid."

"Hrmm..."

The opponent was that great? Grid was very curious about the power of the doppelganger that the strongest people in the Overgeared Guild were praising.

'I will soon see.'

The Overgeared members finished their preparations. Grid commanded, "Depart. Jude, you will protect Reidan along with the soldiers."

“Yes...”

Jude was disappointed that he couldn't go with them and stepped back.

“I will accompany you.”

The continent's strongest swordsman. It was Piaro. However, he was different from before. He was neatly shaved and wearing clean clothes. It was hard to imagine that he was a beggar a few months ago, as he was now giving off a strong impression.

“Please add your strength.”

Grid gladly welcomed Piaro, while the Overgeared members were confused.

‘Why is he taking a farmer along?’

A farmer was useless in a raid. What role did a farmer have in a raid? Farmers were meant to be in the fields. Lael was about to say something, but stopped.

‘That reminds me, isn't Piaro an expert in feng shui?’

Was Grid planning to use Piaro's power to secure useful lands?

‘It is surprising. He’s so clever...’

LaueI embraced the thought that Grid was growing. Grid seemed to be a completely different person than before.

# Chapter 229

---

In the National Competition and golem invasion event, Grid proved to be the strongest. But now two months of real time had passed after the golem invasion, so was he still the strongest?

『 I don't think so. 』

『 What's the basis for your claim? 』

『 The performance of a third advancement class is far superior to the second advancement class. It's on a completely different dimension. Most of the top 50 rankers have reached their third advancement class, so Duke Grid, who is immature in control, is no longer unique. 』

『 I agree. Duke Grid overpowered the rankers in the National Competition with his items and class, but now he's lost the advantage of his class. 』

『 What if Grid overcomes his insufficient control skills? 』

『 Haha! The possibility doesn't exist. Looking at it from a professional point of view, Duke Grid has no talent for control. The only advantage he has is his items. 』

『 The advantage will be offset by the fantastic control of the other ranked players. 』

As the information of the third advancement classes started to be revealed one by one, the experts started to criticize Grid. In the first place, Pagma's Descendant wasn't a class specialized in combat. The experts were convinced that the third advancement rankers would be able to show skills well beyond Grid.

At the Second National Competition in Paris nine months later, Grid wouldn't be able to win.

『 Ah, fans of Duke Grid, please don't misunderstand. I'm not disrespecting Grid himself. He is a good leader who has absorbed the Tzedakah Guild, and also have talented people like Huroi, Lauel, Euphemina and Ruby. 』

『 I also know that Duke Grid's blacksmith skills are great. However, we are currently analyzing Duke Grid's combat ability, so we have to criticize it. 』

In fact, Satisfy experts had a grudge against Grid. It was because their analysis of Grid during the National Competition was wrong and they were embarrassed in front of the public.

‘It would be nice if Grid's era ends quickly.’

‘I don't want to discuss Grid anymore. It's embarrassing every time my analysis is wrong.’

Would these wishes come true?

\*\*\*

“Sura Charge!”

Pepepepeong!

After converting to an Asura, Regas’ combat power was twice as high as a martial artist. The enemy was confused by the punching and kicking changing trajectories, then he would dominate the battlefield by linking lightning and dark skills. The sight of him facing four giant worms simultaneously was excellent.

‘He’s stronger than when I won the duel. Has he completely adapted to his new class?’

“Nobody can call Regas a Taekwon Master now. Sooner or later, he will be called a war god.”

“Yes.”

As Grid and Lael admired him, the spear knight aboard a camel started moving.

Puk! Puk puk!

Rumble!

Kiyack!

A spear knight's attack power increased when riding on a 'mount' such as a horse or pet, so it was a spectacular sight. Even the monsters in the west were unable to cope with his blows. But it was impossible to kill the western monsters in one blow unless they were Grid.

Pon soon faced five giant worms. Was this a crisis? No.

"Gatling Spear."

Pepeng! Pepepepeng!

The sonic spear moved several times in a fan-like range. Then the five giant worms became rags and transformed into light.

'Great.'

Gatling Spear exerted a power comparable to Pagma's Swordsmanship, Kill. Unlike the single-target Kill, it was a wide range attack. Grid was filled with admiration.

'I have higher stats than Pon and the performance of Failure is much better than Pon's weapon...'

Nevertheless, the difference in passive skills was too great. Combat classes all had the passive skill of Weapons Mastery, which

had the effect of adding attack power. Meanwhile, Grid had a clear limit since he relied exclusively on Pagma's Swordsmanship.

[Pagma's Swordsmanship Lv. 2 (89.9%)]

-When the skill is deactivated-

You can become one with the sword at any time. Increases physical attack by 30%, critical hit rate by 20% and critical damage by 10%.

\* This effect is only applied when a sword type weapon is equipped.

\* The skill consumes no mana.

-When the skill is activated-

Become one with the sword. Wave, Restraint, Link, Kill, Transcend, Transcended Link and Linked Kill You can unleash a total of seven sword techniques.

\* The effect of the deactivated skill will be lost.

\* 20 mana is required to activate the skill.

\* Once deactivated, it will take 10 seconds until the skill can be



activated again. Nothing will be consumed when deactivated.

Pagma's Swordsmanship had a fatal weakness. The effect of the passive skill disappeared when he used an active skill. The effect of a 30% increase in attack power, 20% increase in critical hit rate and 10% increase in critical damage wouldn't be applied to skills like Kill and Link.

'The passive skill only applied to the base damage... This is the limit of the class called Pagma's Descendant.'

But Grid wasn't worried. Rather, he was overflowing with confidence.

'Right now, Regas and Pon's strength might seem comparable to me, but that's only for the moment. That gap will increase again the moment I reach level 300.'

There was an old saying in games that 'levels were bullies.' That saying was also established in Satisfy.

10 stat points were gained every time the level increased, and users would become stronger as their stats increased. It wasn't just because of simple reasons like wearing better items or getting stronger skills, but also due to the unique function of stats.

For example, the strength stat. A level 200 user's strength stat had 0.3 attack power, 7 health points and a weight limit increase of 40 with every point. A level 300 user's strength stat had 0.4 attack

power, 9 health points and a weight limit increased of 50 with every point.

In this way, the effect of the stats increased every 100 levels. This was called the stats awakening. The sum of the level 275 Grid's stats were currently higher than the stats of the level 300 Overgeared members. Looking at the total number of stats, Grid's level was nearly 380.

He went through a process called minus level, obtained special titles, and produced countless items. What if Grid reached level 300 and received the third stats awakening?

‘The difference between our passive skills only applies for now.’

The source of Grid's power was his overwhelming stats. Grid was more familiar with this than anyone else, so he didn't have to be nervous about the growth of others.

‘If I complete the Grid set then...’

He was the strongest.

“Huhuhu...”

‘Why all of a sudden?’

Grid smiled and Lael felt a shiver. It was like encountering a

monster on the level of a demonkin. Then Huroi shouted.

“My Lord! Seven basilisks are present 800 meters to the south!”

The Overgeared members were nervous.

“Seven basilisks?”

“We should bypass them.”

The respawn rate of the western monsters was unusually fast. If a battle lasted for an extended period of time in one place, they would end up surrounded by monsters. The basilisk was one of the strongest monsters in the west, so it was obvious they would face a crisis if they had to fight seven of them.

“There is a small mountain to the west. It might delay our journey, but we can bypass the monsters.”

“I don’t want to.” Grid ignored Lael’s advice and grabbed Failure. “I haven’t hunted in 131 days. I will use this opportunity to increase my experience.”

The desert was a harsh terrain. Every time they moved, their feet sank into the sand, severely limiting their movements. The Overgeared members were experts in combat and already adapted to the desert terrain, but what about Grid?

The Overgeared members were worried. Grid's dull movements and lack of combat sense meant it was impossible for him to exert his full power in the desert. So they were going to move first to clear any monsters they encountered on the journey to their destination.

But what was the truth?

Jebeok jebeok.

Grid was armed with heavy boots and walked in the desert like it was a plains area. He even sped up and ran. This was due to the thorough education from Piaro.

“Huh...?”

“What has gotten into Grid...?”

The Overgeared members doubted their eyes.

Kiyaaak!

A basilisk noticed a human running over and opened its mouth. Then the light of petrification that also caused great damage flashed. It was a skill that was hard to respond to because the range of the light was wide and fast.

The Overgeared members were sure that Grid would suffer great

damage. Grid lacked control skills, so he was always hit by monsters. They thought it would be the same again this time. However.

“Have I only fought you once or twice?”

Grid had moved to Reidan from Patrian. Grid had been taught by Piaro and killed numerous basilisks, so he already predicted this. He was able to accurately estimate the timing of the flash and fired Pagma’s Swordsmanship, Wave to offset it. Then he approached the basilisk that was slowed, used Blacksmith’s Rage and stabbed the basilisk in its weak eyes.

Kiyaaaaaah!

The basilisk struggled from the pain. Suddenly, the six other basilisks surrounded Grid and swung their tails.

“My Lord!”

“Grid!”

The Overgeared members paled. If the six basilisks attacked at the same time, Grid would definitely die. But Grid was already in the rear. He avoided four tails flying from the front, and defended against the other tails using the pavranium.

Jjeejeeong!

Kieek?

The basilisks were confused at the appearance of the golden blades that blocked their attacks. They felt danger. It was because they saw the black eyes of the human in the gap between the golden blades, looking at them like they were prey.

One of the top predators of the desert was prey? This human was dangerous. The basilisks were instinctively engulfed in fear.

“First one.”

Grid stepped forward towards the basilisk that he had attacked first.

Teong!

The heavy weight of Grid’s boots made the desert sand run loose. Then Grid’s greatsword, which had a different power than before, struck the basilisk’s wounded eyes. This wasn’t the end. Grid evaded the basilisk’s subsequent counterattack and triggered Pagma’s Swordsmanship.

The sword followed the movements while he evaded.

“Kill.”

Peeeeeeong!

The blue greatsword reminiscent of an ocean predator penetrated the skull of the basilisk.

Kuwaaaah!

One of the seven basilisks instantly turned into a grey light. The Overgeared members couldn't close their mouths as they watched.

“Is that Grid?”

The control skills that Grid used at this moment weren't particularly outstanding. Anyone who played the game could show such movements. But who was Grid? He was mocked by everyone for having poor control skills. This person who wasn't talented was taught the skills.

He overcame the weakness in himself.

‘Has Grid always been working where we couldn't see him?’

‘How much effort did he put in?’

‘This is truly my lord! I am proud!’

“No, aren't you going to help me? Aaaaack!”

“ ... ”

While the Overgeared members were feeling thrilled, Grid was becoming bloody due to the other six basilisks. The party window showed that his health gauge was exponentially dropping. The Overgeared members freaked out as they saw it and hurriedly moved to save him.

On the other hand, Piaro observed Grid's battle from beginning to end and clicked his tongue.

“Really, there are no signs of improvement.”

Vantner heard Piaro's voice and shook his head.

‘This farmer isn't sane either.’



# Chapter 230

---

“My Lord! There are 15 cacti in a cluster 400m ahead! It is presumed to be mine cacti in disguise, so pay special attention...”

“Advance and destroy them!”

“My Lord! Two golden toads in the oasis are mating! It is wiser to bypass them...”

“Two field bosses appeared at the same time? This is a jackpot! Charge!”

“My Lord! Dozens of desert toads are chasing us 800m in the rear! We have to speed up or they will catch us...!”

“Do they want revenge for the golden toads? Okay! Stop! We will meet the prey who are willingly coming to us!”

“My Lord... There is a small nest of giant worms below the mountain...”

“Go in and sweep them up!”

“...”

From the sky, Huroi was able to grasp the terrain in advance and discover the enemies. If he depended on his scouting ability as

master of a drake, he would be able to minimize their clashes with monsters until they reached their destination.

But who was Grid? He was enthusiastic after not hunting for a long time, so the monsters of the west were destined to be destroyed. If Huroi discovered an enemy, Grid rushed in, rather than avoiding it. Due to that, the Overgeared members became tired.

“Pant pant! Damn, doesn’t Grid get tired?”

“I feel it every time, but Grid’s stamina is much higher than we think.”

“Uhh... It’s unbearably hot.”

It was very hard to march through the desert. The Overgeared members were top rankers, but they were also users. Due to the repeated battles and heat, their stamina was quickly depleted. On the other hand, Grid was fine. His stamina was twice as high as the Overgeared members thanks to his persistence stat, which he raised through labor and blacksmith work.

‘No matter how strong the monsters in the west are, fields bosses have obvious limits.’

Field bosses were weaker than quest bosses or dungeon bosses, and their item drop rate was also low. Grid and the Overgeared members hunted one large cactus and two golden toads, but only

obtained two epic items and five enhancement stones.

As Grid was feeling disappointment, “River!”

“We’ve finally arrived!”

The group arrived at the He bend River. It was only 10 hours from Reidan. If they fully exploited Huroi’s scouting ability, they would’ve been able to arrive within three hours. However, Grid made their journey at least three times longer.

“Grid, all the guild members are tired. It’s late at night, so why don’t we take a break?” Pon suggested.

Grid checked the status of the Overgeared members.

“I understand. Get ready to camp.”

Stamina recovery was slow outdoors. Meals and simple rest weren’t sufficient, so it was better to take a short nap. The Overgeared members gathered near the river and pulled out a tents from the inventory. They were impressed when they saw Grid setting up his. It was because Grid’s setting up skill wasn’t ordinary.

“Wow, isn’t this great? It is the first time I’ve seen someone build a tent as quickly as Grid.”

“Has he set up a lot of tents in reality? Does he go camping often?”

‘What camping...’

Grid didn’t have any friends to go camping with. The reason why Grid’s tent building skill was so good was because he was thoroughly trained in the army. Grid had over 3,000 dexterity points, so he could set up a tent several times faster than ordinary users.

Were there any advantages to building a tent quickly? No. It wouldn’t be helpful in reality unless he had a lover to go on a camping trip with.

“Let’s eat.”

Once the setting up of tents was complete, the Overgeared members sat down in front of a fire. The food they prepared was common. It was the rainbow potato, the only food currently grown in Reidan.

“I’m sick of eating this for every meal.”

“I agree.”

The rainbow potato had seven flavors. The red portion had a meat flavor, the yellow portion was fried shrimp flavor, the orange portion was tangerine sauce, and so on. It had a soft, strong or

delicious taste, but in the end, it was just a potato. Basically, it was hard because they had to eat this for every meal.

“It would be nice if we had a good chef.”

In the case of a chef with high cooking skills, it was possible to make food using wild grasses and monsters. In addition, the dishes would give a small buff so it was a very useful ability.

‘Euphemina can duplicate the cooking skill...’

Euphemina wasn’t included in this raid. Currently, she was making a great contribution to the security and internal affairs development of Reidan by duplicating skills like the monster taming, blacksmithing, alchemy, building, etc. It was too much to rely on her for cooking as well, so Grid shook his head.

‘We can’t always depend on Euphemina.’

She might leave the guild. In fact, there was a limit to relying on only one person, so Grid decided that it was better to recruit users with various secondary classes like chefs.

“Now my eyes are tired.”

“What should we do?”

The guild members finished their meal. Grid rose from his spot

and proclaimed, “Leave the lookout position to me. Everybody, you should get a good sleep.”

Grid had matured and was now sacrificing himself for his colleagues. But the Overgeared members refused.

“Grid is the core power of this raid group. You can’t overdo it.”

“Don’t worry. I’m still okay because I have a lot of stamina.”

“It isn’t enough just to be okay. You have to be well prepared. The opponent is strong.”

In the end, Grid was excluded from being on guard and the members started to consult among themselves. The scheduled break was four hours. In the meantime, eight people should stand guard in intervals of 30 minutes.

“The eight people with the highest stamina stat will have to sacrifice 30 minutes.”

Every time.

The higher the stamina stat, the higher the maximum stamina and the quicker the recovery speed. Therefore, the guard positions were always taken by the tankers. Vantner and Toban groaned.

“I’m tired of being a tanker all day long...”

“A tanker is a sinner.”

It might be a reasonable method, but the tankers couldn't help complaining. Lauel watched them and made a wise suggestion.

“Why doesn't Piaro stand guard?”

On the way here. It was obvious but Piaro didn't take part in any battles. He just had to walk. Lauel guessed that Piaro still had a lot of stamina left.

‘A legendary farmer should have high basic stats... A four hour guard shift shouldn't be a huge burden to him.’

Piaro readily nodded at Lauel's suggestion. “I understand. Leave it to me and get a good night's sleep.”

“Ohh!”

The faces of the Overgeared members brightened. They didn't know why Piaro participated in this raid, but they were delighted that he was here. However, some people showed negative reactions.

“This is a danger zone, so we shouldn't leave the guard position to a farmer.”

“That’s right. What if monsters hide in the fog at dawn and attack? A farmer wouldn’t be able to detect the attack of a monster, so we will be vulnerable to danger.”

‘They don’t know the honor it is to have a great swordsman standing guard...’

Grid found this situation hilarious. How long would they mistake Piaro for a farmer? It was interesting to watch since he knew the truth. He smiled and settled the situation. “You shouldn’t doubt Piaro’s ability to be a lookout. Don’t you know that he is a legendary farmer, not an ordinary farmer?”

“...?”

The Overgeared members were confused.

“Why should a legendary farmer be good at being a lookout?”

“Explain it so that we can understand.”

“...”

Grid was stressed because the members asked for clarification. It was impossible to give a convincing explanation since it was just a thoughtless remark that he spoke.

At that moment, Lauel made a guess. “Farmers have to protect



their fields from ice, beasts and monsters. A legendary farmer should have an excellent ability to defend his fields, meaning that his ability to sense beasts and monsters is sharp. This is the reason why Grid told us to trust the legendary farmer.”

“That’s right.”

Grid agreed with Lauel’s interpretation. The Overgeared members with a negative reaction started to understand.

“I see... Farmers have this ability...”

“Okay then. Piaro, please work hard for four hours. It is a request.”

The Overgeared members entered their tents. Pon was the last one to enter and he spoke to Piaro.

“There is a huge monster that lives in Hebend River. It’s extremely powerful, unlike the golden toads that we hunted during the day. If it emerges, let us know without any delay.”

“Yes.”

Pon finally entered his tent. Piaro sat in front of a campfire alone and recalled the past.

‘It reminds me of my days as a knight.’

During his time in the Red Knights, they went on many expeditions and set up campsites. At that time, he was with his colleagues. But due to Asmophel's false accusation, they were all dead.

Tadak. Tak.

“...”

Piario was organizing the branches for the campfire when he suddenly shifted his gaze to the river. It was early dawn. Something was moving silently in the fog. It was hard to detect even by the most skilled person. But who was Piario? It was extremely rare that anything could succeed in an ambush in front of a great swordsman.

“You are the monster of Hebend River.”

Piario threw the branch he was holding into the river. As he threw it into the river, something let out a sharp scream.

On this day. The top predator of the Hebend River for the last decade met its end.

\*\*\*

“Okay, perfect.”

Grid and the Overgeared members slept for four hours and recovered enough stamina. They ate a rainbow potato and moved straight to their destination. They finally reached the edge of the mountains after passing through large and small ghost villages.

Grid and the Overgeared members no longer encountered monsters. Grid was puzzled by the bamboo forest that stretched along the mountain path.

“How was this forest preserved without being turned into a desert? Is this place safe from the giant worms?”

Lauel explained. “The doppelganger here blocks the path of monsters as well as humans. Thanks to it, this forest and the mine in the mountains behind it are safely preserved.”

“Hrmm...”

It was a strange phenomenon where a monster defended the land from another monster. Grid felt great interest as he stepped into the bamboo forest. At that moment.

[You have entered the mysterious forest.]

[Your mind has become calm.]

[You will be helpless in the midst of this tranquility.]

[You have resisted.]

“Ugh...! This feeling is so disgusting.”

“I just want to sleep.”

With the exception of Grid, the Overgeared members were overcome by the helpless feeling. Their bodies became limp and they had pained expressions on their faces. On the other hand, Grid kept moving forward and was astonished.

“...Pagma?”

The center of the forest where bamboo soared into the sky. One man was sitting on a flat rock. He had an egg-shaped face on a slender body. White skin and red lips. His long eyes that were smiling. He gave off such a beautiful and neat impression that it was hard to believe he was a man. He looked exactly like Pagma, who Grid had seen depicted on the murals at Loran Falls.

Suuk.

Pagma sat quietly on the rock and slowly moved. The silk clothes that seemed to come from the Joseon Era flapped as he moved and shifted his gaze towards Grid. The look in those eyes contained outright hostility.

# Chapter 231

---

The moment he locked eyes with Pagma.

Duguen!

Grid stiffened and his heart beat faster. His eyes shook as sweat started running down his body. It was a phenomenon of fear that transcended tension and agitation. Was he overwhelmed by the killing intent that Pagma was emitting?

No.

This was sheer instinct. The source of all his abilities was Pagma, so he couldn't help feeling awe and a sense of smallness when facing Pagma.

'Wake up.' Grid sobered up. 'This guy is just a doppelganger of Pagma. Don't be misled by appearances.'

The name that floated above his head wasn't Pagma, but 'Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest.' Grid confirmed this again and barely controlled his mind. After a moment, his composure was restored.

'It will be hard.' Who would've expected that the target of the raid would be Pagma's doppelganger? 'I never even imagined it.'

Looking back at it now, the features described by the Overgeared members resembled Pagma. But hadn't Pagma died more than 100 years ago? It was virtually impossible to imagine that the present doppelganger could copy a person from so long ago.

“...”

The staring battle between Grid and the doppelganger continued. There were all types of complex emotions and doubts in Grid's eyes, while the doppelganger only contained hostility towards the enemy.

It was clear that this situation couldn't be contained. The doppelganger attacked Grid first. He lightly swung a jade green greatsword in his hand.

Chaaeng!

“Kuk!”

Grid blocked the descending greatsword with Failure. The destructive power behind the blow was beyond imagination. The attack power was comparable to Hell Gao who was in a perfect condition.

“Laue! A doppelganger copies the appearance of the target. But can it completely copy their abilities as well?” He hurriedly asked.

Laue shook his head. “There are limits to a doppelganger's

ability to copy. It can't fully copy the ability of a person stronger than itself."

It meant that the doppelganger wasn't as strong as Pagma, who was the greatest swordsman after Muller. In other words, the doppelganger in front of Grid was an unfinished product that couldn't completely copy Pagma's power.

However.

Jjejejeok!

"Crazy..!"

Bottom, side, top. The doppelganger showed off a dazzling skill with the greatsword, with barely a time difference in each strike. This drove Grid back.

[The durability of the +9 Failure has decreased by 3.]

[The durability of the +9 Failure has decreased by 8.]

'What is this?'

Even the performance of the weapon was great. It was the first time he saw a weapon that could damage the durability of Failure so quickly. If the durability of Failure was compromised, it meant that the doppelganger's weapon dealt twice the damage.

“Lauel! What about the doppelganger’s ability to copy items?”

The material that made up a doppelganger was so flexible that it reproduced human hair and skin, even tears and blood.

“Depending on its strength, it can exert a strength comparable to orichalcum. Due to this, most items reproduced by doppelgangers are known to perform better than the original.”

It was impossible to completely copy the works of the legendary blacksmith, Pagma. The greatsword used by the doppelganger was obviously below the level of the original.

‘Nevertheless, it can deal such damage to Failure?’

Grid’s pride was crushed. He had been trying so hard for the two years since becoming Pagma’s Descendant, but he couldn’t even be compared to Pagma’s copy?

Chaaeng! Chaeng!

Grid’s sword became increasingly dull due to his agitation. On the other hand, the sword of the doppelganger was as sharp as ever, since his emotions never changed.

Chukak.



“...Uh!”

Grid finally started to become injured. Red blood stained his clothing. The flow of battle was heading towards Grid's defeat.

“Quickly help Grid...!”

The Overgeared members were nervous. They wanted to go out and help Grid right away. But it was difficult to take a step because they were still caught by the feeling of helplessness. This helpless feeling was so strong that they wouldn't be able to move their fingertips unless their survival instincts were invoked.

“We have to hope that Grid will survive until the doppelganger attacks us...”

“But look at this. Isn't the doppelganger's swordsmanship extremely similar to Grid's swordsmanship?”

“That's right. I wasn't sure before, but now that they are side by side, the two sword styles look exactly the same.”

“It can't be...”

The Overgeared members figured out the doppelganger's identity. To be precise, it was the identity of the person that the doppelganger copied. However, the weight of that name wasn't light, so they couldn't express it with their mouths.

On the other hand, Lael had no such obstacles. “It seems to be Pagma, as everyone is thinking.”

“ ... ”

Pagma. One of the nine legends and the source of Grid’s strength. But now. As a result of the golem invasion, Grid encountered Pagma’s doppelganger in the west.

What did this suggest?

“Through this raid, Grid will go through a big change. He will acquire new skills, quests or items and he will develop dramatically. The reason why the king appointed Grid as lord of Reiden is due to Satisfy’s arrangements for Pagma’s Descendant.”

Lael looked at it from a very positive perspective. It was the same for the other Overgeared members.

Teong!

Meanwhile, Grid defended against the onslaught of the doppelganger and he couldn’t retreat as the bamboo forest blocked the exit. There was no place to back off anymore, so he could only counterattack.

“Damn! Let’s try it once!”

How long was he going to be pushed by Pagma's clone, who wasn't even Pagma? The moment when Grid was about to use Pagma's Swordsmanship.

"Stop!" The silent Piaro suddenly shouted. Grid was surprised and stopped.

"..."

The doppelganger's sword had slashed through the spot where Grid was about to move to. If Grid had used Pagma's Swordsmanship, his heart would've been pierced by that greatsword.

Gulp.

Grid swallowed his dry saliva as Piaro scolded him.

"Why aren't you calm? Watch the opponent. The difference between him and you isn't great. There is no reason for it to be so one-sided."

The difference wasn't great? Wasn't his attack speed and attack power twice as high as Grid's? Piaro gave the confused Grid a hint. "Just as he knows your swordsmanship, don't you also know his swordsmanship? If so, can't you cope?"

“ ... ”

If it was four months ago, Grid would've found it hard to understand Piaro's advice. But now it was different. Grid had steadily developed thinking skills in his everyday life. As a result, he was able to use Piaro's advice as perfect nourishment.

‘That's right. That guy's swordsmanship is based on Pagma.’ A stabbing attack contained the simplified footwork of Kill while a slash had the simplified footwork of Link. ‘If I watch his foot movements, I can predict his next attack.’

Again, let's do it properly. Grid took a deep breath. In this gap, the doppelganger had taken two steps forward. It was the footwork of Link. A slashing attack. But would it be horizontal or vertical? If it was horizontal, would it come from the right or left side?

‘Read the enemy's gaze and shoulder motions.’

He recalled Piaro's teachings. Then.

‘The right!’

The movement was seen. Grid succeeded in detecting and avoiding the doppelganger's sword, despite it moving twice as fast as him. It was a very good move, impressing everyone watching.

‘He listened to the advice of the farmer and...’

‘He grew in real time?’

‘What is going on?’

The eyes of the Overgeared members’ widened. Their gazes turned towards Piaro. Piaro was standing with folded arms. It was the opposite of the members who were filled with the helpless feeling.

‘It can’t be...?’

He wasn’t just a farmer? It was when the Overgeared members were starting to realize Piaro’s identity.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship, Link!”

Pipit! Pipipipit!

Dozens of blue-white energy blades were created. Did it shatter the body of the doppelganger? It failed. The doppelganger completely blocked Grid’s attack using the same technique.

Chaeeeeeng!

“Ohh!”

The blue-white blades and the jade blades collided together, causing the bamboo to shake from the force. The Overgeared members watched with amazement and awe.

“Kill!”

Grid used another skill to not lose his momentum. However, once again, the doppelganger reacted with the same technique to neutralize Grid’s attack.

Peeeeeeong!

The collision between Kill and Kill caused a powerful explosion. The center of the forest was destroyed because it couldn’t cope with the explosion. The rock where the doppelganger first sat was shattered and the fragments scattered everywhere, injuring the Overgeared members.

“How about this?”

Grid used a fusion skill. This skill was based on his own experience, so he thought the doppelganger wouldn’t have this skill.

“Transcended Link!”

A total of 20 strikes that dealt 180% physical damage was shot out with no time difference. It was a merciless bombardment that even turned an ancient weapon to rags, so Grid didn’t doubt its power.

However, the doppelganger coped by using a skill that Grid didn't know yet.

“Revolve.”

“...?!”

Grid and the Overgeared members' eyes widened. The doppelganger moved the jade sword in a half moon and absorbed all the energy of Transcended Link, while a vortex appeared around the doppelganger? This wasn't the end.

Kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa!

The energy of Transcended Link that was sucked into the vortex reappeared. At the same time, it reversed course and aimed for Grid. It was a perfect counterattack.

“Grid!”

“My Lord!”

The 20 energy blades moved through the bamboo forest in a zigzag, heading towards Grid. The Overgeared members were certain that Grid would die. But Piaro didn't allow it. He suddenly appeared in front of Grid and pulled out his sword. Then he struck the blue-white energy blades one by one.

Kwang!

Two.

Kwang!

Three.

Kwa kwang!

Four.

Kwa kwa kwang!

In turn, he blocked all 20 blows.

“ ... ”

The Overgeared members and Grid couldn't believe the sight that was in front of them.

‘Blowing away my Transcended Link like hitting a baseball...? Was Piaro this strong?’

‘No... What the hell is this farmer?’



As an awkward silence flowed, Piaro stepped back and urged Grid. “Fight again from the beginning. Absorb the techniques in Pagma’s Swordsmanship that you don’t know and make them your own. Then you will become stronger.”

Piaro had figured out the identity of the doppelganger with the second blow that Grid and the doppelganger exchanged. However, he didn’t step forward because he judged there was no value in it.

‘This is a great stepping stone for Duke Grid.’

The private lessons of the continent’s greatest swordsman, the second stage began.

## Chapter 232

---

The doppelganger couldn't completely reproduce Pagma's power in its entirety. Nevertheless, its stats were equivalent to Hell Gao. Since Grid had a tendency to rely entirely on skills, it was natural that he was completely defeated in the first battle after Pagma's Swordsmanship was blocked.

This horrific monster...

'Fight again?'

Grid was unwilling. Wouldn't the result be the same even if they fought a few times? He would be much more comfortable if Piaro went out and took care of it. But he quickly fixed that idea.

'Piaro said to absorb Pagma's Swordsmanship. Yes, this is a chance to become stronger.'

More and more strength. He needed enough strength to do the things he had to do.

"Sigh..."

Grid hesitated before taking a deep breath.

Kuoooh!

The doppelganger stabbed forward. The attack was deafening, and despite being 5m away, seemed like it would reach his stomach.

Piario exclaimed from behind him. “There are obviously limits to a greatsword. It’s big, dull and hard to move on the fly. The stabbing of a greatsword is extremely simple, and can easily be seen. Don’t worry about hidden weapons and block.”

It was convincing advice. Grid’s confidence was elevated and he moved calmly. Utilizing the footwork of Link to move left and right, he avoided the doppelganger’s stab.

Kudududuk!

The jade greatsword passed by the side of the Holy Light Armor. Sparks scattered like firecrackers and the doppelganger could be seen beyond them.

“Once the stab misses, a gap will be exposed. This is an opportunity to hit back.”

A greatsword was big and heavy. What if the greatsword was stabbed but didn’t hit the target? The person holding the greatsword would lose their balance and their posture would collapse.

“Okay!”

Grid smiled with satisfaction as he counterattacked. His greatsword curved from the bottom up and aimed for the doppelganger's heart.

Seokeok!

It was avoided. The doppelganger demonstrated his agility by twisting his upper body to avoid being hit. However, the front of his clothing was loosened, clearing revealing the doppelganger's upper body.

“Kyaaak!”

Laella, a member of the party, let out a sound of appreciation. The doppelganger copied Pagma's appearance and was so beautiful that he caught her heart instantly. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that the sleek muscular body was the creation of a god. But the body wasn't an important factor in battle. Only the strong would win.

“Ohhhh!”

Failure passed over the doppelganger's head and once again descended.

Sukakak!

Heavy. Grid took full advantage of Grid's boots, so the weight at the end of his sword was incomparable to before. He could even

easily disintegrate a rock. Could the doppelganger withstand it?

Of course, it was possible. This doppelganger had been a named boss of the Mysterious Forest for at least 100 years. Apart from its stats, its health would be in the millions.

[Critical!]

[You have dealt 17,790 damage to the target.]

‘Indeed, there isn’t a single scratch on him.’

Grid was dismayed when he saw that the doppelganger’s health gauge didn’t seem to decrease at all. Then the jade greatsword aimed at Grid’s side.

‘Ah!’

A chill went down Grid’s spine.

Jeeeong!

The seven golden blades moved to protect Grid. They combined into one to form a barrier that defended against the greatsword. But they couldn’t fully absorb the shock and became stuck in place.

Piario spoke again. “The biggest disadvantage of a greatsword is

that it will take a long time to recover the weapon after an attack. You forgot this point and allowed a counterattack.”

Then what should he do?

Jjejeong! Jjang!

As Grid was confused, the momentum of the doppelganger rose again. He started an endless onslaught and didn't allow time for Grid to take any countermeasures. The pavranium moved to protect Grid, but there was a limit since it stiffened every time.

“The opponent's behavior is correct. You should do it as well. If you take advantage of the recoil that occurs when you attack, you can link more strikes.”

“Urgh...!”

Grid felt the need to stop the doppelganger's attacks. If so, he should evade rather than defend. In fact, Piaro had advised ‘don't play around when you have a sword in your hand.’ However, the enemy's attack speed was much faster than Grid's attack speed, so it wasn't easy to react.

Then what should he do? Grid finally allowed an attack and the next blow aimed for his neck. Then.

Teong!

Piaro stepped forward again. He blocked the doppelganger's sword and saved Grid's life once again.

“Why do you only use the golden blades as a defense tool? Optimize your control and use them as weapons if possible. Now fight again.”

“...”

After that.

The same thing was repeated many times. Grid listened to Piaro's advice, dealt with the doppelganger and when faced with death from an error, he was saved by Piaro.

Grid felt like he was in a game room.

‘Just when I think the game is over, the neighborhood boy will put in another coin.’

In fact, he had never met such a good person.

“If you have an opponent with higher health, you must go all out on attack instead of defense. Fight again.”

“The technique of lifting from the bottom to the top is inevitably weaker because the force is countered by gravity. You might be

using this technique to damage the enemy, but it is actually having an adverse effect. In the first place, is it possible with such a huge weapon? Fight again.”

“Don’t neglect the golden blades just because they can’t kill the enemy. If you make them persevere to cover the enemy’s view, they can be a bigger help than a few colleagues. Fight again.”

“I explained why stabbing a greatsword is a simple technique, but I don’t know why you are so obsessed with it. You should only stab in a situation where you can definitely knock your opponent away. You should know that the greatsword is designed for both stabbing and slashing. Don’t forget to use the right greatsword technique when appropriate. Fight again.”

“Again.”

“Fight again!”

“Again! Again! Again!”

“...Pant pant.”

How many times did he need to repeat this damn battle? It hadn’t been dawn when they arrived here in the bamboo forest but now the sun was high in the sky. Grid was mentally and physically exhausted.

On the other hand, the Overgeared members...



“Yum yum. Grid is suffering a lot.”

“The strongest NPC is teaching him swordsmanship and protecting his life, so how is he suffering? I would be excited.”

“It’s exciting, but hard.”

“Is it easy to fight for over half a day?”

“Indeed... If I was continuously fighting against the enemy like Grid, my stamina would’ve reached its limit already.”

The Overgeared members were already freed from the helpless feeling and were eating in front of a campfire. They baked and boiled the rainbow potatoes, relaxing as they watched Grid fight.

It wasn’t because they were lazy. The Overgeared members also had a desire to join the raid. Growing through struggles was the joy they desired. But they couldn’t move. Piaro was training Grid against Pagma’s doppelganger, so there was no room for them to intervene.

“Anyway, Grid’s growth rate is remarkable.” Lauel remarked.

The Overgeared members agreed.

“That’s right. It’s a tremendous growth.”

The doppelganger had completely overwhelmed Grid in the first battle. He was attacked without being able to hit back once, and faced the crisis of death. In the second battle, Grid managed to strike once. The third battle, it was two attacks and the fourth battle, three attacks and so on. And in the 51st battle, Grid was exchanging blows at a level comparable to the doppelganger. It was especially impressive the way he avoided death every time.

“Grid is a blank slate. It’s obvious if he grows even a little bit.”

The synergy of the best teacher and best sparring partner (?) raised Grid’s control. What user wouldn’t want to experience something like this? The Overgeared members really envied Grid.

“I wish I had a mentor like that...”

“How did Grid obtain such a great NPC?”

“It’s creepy that he was doing a farmer cosplay for a while.”

What was Piaro’s identity? And what circumstances were there that led him to teach Grid? It happened when the Overgeared members’ questions were deepening.

“Sob...!”

Grid eventually collapsed. His stamina was completely depleted.

On the other hand, the doppelganger was still fine. Grid had fought for half a day, but the doppelganger's health was still at 9/10ths.

Piario stopped him from finishing off Grid and turned his gaze to the Overgeared members. Then he pointed to Regas.

“You there.”

“Huh? Me?”

Regas felt irritated when he saw that Grid was getting stronger and trained alone. He imagined Pagma's doppelganger as a virtual enemy in his mind, and started sparring against it. Therefore, he was stunned when Piario suddenly pointed him out.

Piario instructed. “You will deal with this enemy while Duke Grid is resting.”

Regas' eyes shone like jewels. “Are you going to train me?”

Piario didn't deny it. “I have been watching your potential from a distance.”

“Ohh...!”

Regas was jubilant. It was an opportunity to be trained by Piario, who was stronger than anyone he knew. Piario started the lesson as soon as he came running.

“Wow.”

“What is this...? That NPC will teach anyone?”

“Amazing! We can receive his teachings?”

The Overgeared members were excited. They expected to become stronger after being taught by Piaro. And that expectation became reality.

“Next.”

Piario switched the members in turn and allowed them to spar against Pagma’s doppelganger. He also developed the Overgeared members by pointing out the strengths and weaknesses that he had observed while staying in Reidan. It was in the hope that they would become stronger and make him stronger.

The great swordsman Piario would be a great fortune to Grid and the Overgeared members.

# Chapter 233

---

It was well into dawn.

The Mysterious Forest, which looked like the landscape of an Oriental painting, had long been devastated.

“ ... ”

Dark blue paint smeared the sky. A man was standing with flames behind him. He had black hair that was thicker than silk and his white skin was dusty and scarred.

Suuk.

Dozens of of enemies were reflected in the lonely eyes. The humans fell down, got up, and fell down again. It wanted to kill them so they couldn't fight again, but it wasn't easy.

They were getting stronger over time, and there was an excellent human who protected them. He probably showed half the strength of my original master. I couldn't do anything because he easily overwhelmed me.

How long could I hold on?

In the past, a human army came. One day there were countless monsters. I had defended this forest from all types of beings for a

long time, but this was my first moment of great crisis. But I soon calmed my mind.

‘I...’

I had to defend it. She was on the hill beyond this forest. She was the only one who didn’t hate me, when I could do nothing but imitate the image of others. I didn’t remember the last time I saw her, but her warmth was still vivid. I wouldn’t let these intruders make it through this forest to ruin her happiness.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship.”

One of the humans spoke a familiar technique. It was the same technique used by my original master. It wasn’t hard to cope with. I also used the same technique. I was much faster at using the technique than the human, so it was a simple matter.

However.

“...?”

The human’s movements changed in the middle. The footwork suddenly changed from Kill to Link.

“Kill.”

“Link!”

The man dodged Kill and fired dozens of energy blades.

Pit! Pipipipit!

I couldn't deal with the dozens of energy blades alone. In other words, blood spurted from the body of Pagma's doppelganger. One fifth of my health gauge was lost at once. The human was excited after succeeding in the attack.

“How is it? You were tricked? Isn't it amazing? Eh?”

Grid. It was his 83rd showdown with the doppelganger. He changed sword techniques in the middle, and had now become a clever warrior. A brave warrior.

“Wonderful.” Piaro praised him. Piaro truly felt admiration.

‘The journey from Patrian to Reidan...’

Piaro had seen that Grid's talent was already facing limitations. Grid was so clueless that he was deemed virtually impossible to teach. But now there was a good teaching material. That's right, it was Pagma's doppelganger. Pagma's abilities might not be completely copied, but the doppelganger was far superior to Grid.

Piaro gave directions to Grid. As the battle with the doppelganger continued, Grid gained enlightenment and grew.

‘The mentor gives their student a glimpse of the bowl, a good opponent strips off the limits, and an ideal opponent makes them forget about the limits.’

Those were his master’s words. An ideal opponent. Piaro also wanted to find it. Just like the current Grid.

“Grr...!”

Pagma’s doppelganger made a sound. He emitted an immensely strong killing intent. He showed extreme survival instincts now that his life was in danger.

“From now on, it is the real battle. Duke Grid, I wish you the best.”

“Yes.”

After receiving Piaro’s encouragement, Grid stepped forward with confidence. The doppelganger aimed an entirely new technique at him.

“Pinnacle.”

Pagma’s Swordsmanship, it was made up of skills that dealt additional damage in proportion to physical damage. In addition, most of them were non-targeted skills and often missed. But



Pinnacle was different. It was a targeted skill and had an additional option of ignoring the enemy's defense. The range of movement was proportional to the length of the weapon.

Kwachak!

It was the culmination. It was an attack that was impossible for Grid to respond to.

“Kuaaaaak!”

Holy Light Armor. It was the ultimate armor made by the legendary blacksmith Pagma out of the god mineral, adamantium. But it couldn't boast a complete defense in front of Pinnacle. Grid fell down while Piaro was amazed by the manifestation of an amazing sword technique.

‘Pagma! The more I see your swordsmanship, the more I want to meet you, not the fake ones...!’

A blacksmith, but also a master of the sword. The sword technique that could separate the sky and the mountains. Indeed, the best swordsman after Sword Saint Muller...

‘They are stronger than my current self!’

Piario resented that he was born in this age. Why couldn't he be born in the same time as Muller and Pagma? If he had lived under the same sky as them, he would've been able to stand shoulder to

shoulder with them eventually.

However, there were no such people in the present age. He was alone and stagnant. The moment that Piaro was lamenting this,

“...Kuk, okay.” A pale green light flashed around Grid’s bloody body. “It was good that I managed to wear Doran’s Ring in advance.”

Grid said as he got up. His appearance was normal. The huge wound on Grid’s chest disappeared without a trace, and there were no other signs of injuries. The power of items. The healing of Doran’s Ring was amplified by the Holy Light Armor, completely restoring Grid’s health.

“What...?”

Piaro was shaken. Even a legendary Saintess couldn’t completely heal a dying person all at once, let alone Grid, who wasn’t a Saintess.

Ttuduk! Ttuduk!

Grid stretched his body. He prepared for a new strike.

“I can learn it as well.”

Pagma’s Swordsmanship usually consisted of three to seven steps

of footwork. It was extremely simple, but it was possible to unfold the ultimate swordsmanship with this simplicity. It was difficult to imitate Pagma's Swordsmanship, and it was impossible to activate even if it was imitated.

But it was possible for Grid. He could make Pagma's Swordsmanship his own, just by looking. How was it possible when he had no talent?

The reason was simple. He was Pagma's Descendant. For that reason alone, Grid had managed to learn Pagma's Swordsmanship after looking at the murals. But now there was a person to teach him the forms of Pagma's Swordsmanship directly. It was optimal.

“Pagma's Swordsmanship!”

Teong!

The heavy weight of Grid's boots shook the ground. Grid expressed the essence of a warrior god with this sword technique.

“Pinnacle.”

[You have learned a new skill.]

[Pinnacle Lv. 1]

A sword that expresses the essence of a warrior god.

Deals 700% of your attack power to a single target. This skill will ignore 60% of the target's armor.

Skill Usage Conditions: Have a sword type weapon equipped.

Skill Mana Cost: 750

Skill Cooldown Time: 3 minutes.

It was an intermediate skill between Kill and Link. It also consumed much less mana and had a shorter cooldown than Kill. The important thing was that it was a targeted skill, unlike Link or Kill. If this skill had been recorded in the murals at Loran Falls, the past Grid would've found it much easier to raise his level.

Kuoooh!

Failure moved in a half moon shape. The slash covered Pagma's doppelganger. But the doppelganger was already prepared.

“Revolve.”

A counterattack used at the perfect timing. Pinnacle was caught by the vortex and returned to Grid. The energy blade faced Grid. Could he afford to endure this attack now that Doran's Ring was on cooldown?

No.

“Revolve.”

[Revolve Lv. 1]

Like the eye of a storm, it is calm and powerful.

It will return all attacks that hit it within 0.5 seconds of casting with 100% of the power.

Skill Usage Conditions: Have a sword type weapon equipped.

Skill Mana Cost: 2,000

Skill Cooldown Time: 2 minutes.

“...!”

The Overgeared members were exhausted after fighting the doppelganger while Grid was resting. Their eyes watching the battlefield became wide with shock. Piaro was the same.

‘This is impossible!’

Everyone was shocked. Yesterday and today, Grid’s control abilities had made a breakthrough, but they didn’t think it was at

the level of counterattacking at the perfect timing.

Counterattacking was a difficult technique to do. It was necessary to use the technique in the right place and at the right time to neutralize the enemy's attack. It was a technique that wasn't easy to use without making a lot of effort.

But Grid had succeeded. He reacted to a counterattack with a counterattack. This meant he had predicted the behavior of the enemy. Grid's growth level exceeded everyone's predicted range.

Seokeok!

[The +9 Failure's option effect is activated, causing the skill 'Bisect' to be generated.]

[The +9 Failure's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[The Holy Light Gloves's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[Critical!]

[You have dealt 1,375,900 damage to the target.]

The doppelganger's right arm was cut off. The jade sword was separated from its master and fell to the ground. Grid's eyes

became sharper than ever.

‘If you catch a chance at victory, link the attack!’

Piario’s cry that he heard yesterday rang loudly in his ears.

“Ohhhhhh!”

As the doppelganger was struggling with losing one arm and his sword, Grid used a skill. It was a skill that surpassed Transcended Link. Linked Kill.

Kwachak!

A shark, the predator that ruled the world’s oceans for 415 million years! Failure tore at the body of the doppelganger in succession. One time! Two times! Three times! Four times! Five times! Six times! Seven times!

[Critical!]

[Critical!]

[Critical!]

[Critical!]

[All of your stamina has been depleted due to the maximum number of Linked Kill blows being triggered.]

[Your stamina will fall to 0 and you can't move.]

“Ugh...!”

Grid's vision blurred. He tried to hold on but eventually collapsed like a puppet whose strings were cut. Then notification windows appeared in his vision.

[You have defeated the Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest that has existed for 153 years.]

[8,450,109 experience has been acquired.]

[The party leader 'Grid' has acquired 6,300 gold.]

[The party leader 'Grid' has acquired the Guardian's Necklace.]

[The party leader 'Grid' has acquired the Guardian's Bracelet.]

[The party leader 'Grid' has acquired the Doppelganger's Greatsword.]

[The party leader 'Grid' has acquired 13 weapon enhancement stones..]



[The party leader ‘Grid’ has acquired 15 armor enhancement stones..]

[The party leader ‘Grid’ has acquired 4 blessed weapon enhancement stones..]

[The party leader ‘Grid’ has acquired 6 blessed armor enhancement stones..]

[Your level has risen.]

“Hah... Haha...”

When he checked the time, he had been fighting for 23 hours and 21 minutes. In the meantime, Grid had been defeated 82 times and the Overgeared members had tasted at least 10 defeats. But in the end, the battle was their victory.

Grid laughed. He couldn’t lift a finger, so he just lay on the cold dirt floor and laughed. He had gone beyond his limits, so an unexplained pleasure gripped him. The Overgeared members ran to him.

“My Lord! Great!”

“Grid! You were really cool!”

“Grid! You are such a great guy! Hahat! Puhahahat!”

Laughter echoed in the Mysterious Forest, which had been filled with screams for a long time. Pagma’s doppelganger couldn’t help smiling as he heard it.

Memories of the past came to mind. The pure laughter in her childhood. The sharp laughter when she was a girl. The tender laughter when she was a young lady...

“ ... ”

His vision darkened. He couldn’t think anymore. Then the voices of the humans were heard.

“Eh? He isn’t dead? He’s squirming?”

“He’s lost the cloned appearance, but the nucleus of the body is still alive. However, it might as well be dead because there is a huge degeneration in both abilities and intelligence.”

“Should we kill him?”

“Considering the tendencies of a doppelganger, I think it’s worth exploring him. Let him recover.”

The doppelganger became like a melted tire and didn’t move.

On the other hand, Piaro had the shivers. He once again realized after witnessing Grid's power. He might not be born under the same sky as Muller or Pagma, but he was under the same sky as Pagma's power.

‘It is you.’

The person who would lead him to the realm of a sword saint.

## Chapter 234

---

After restoring the proper amount of stamina. Grid barely managed to sit up on a flat piece of rock. He noticed the eyes of the Overgeared members looking at him.

‘The atmosphere has changed.’

Was it because he overcame this big trial by surpassing his limit several times over? Grid felt like he had achieved excellent personal growth. Grid shared the item information with the Overgeared members.

[Guardian’s Necklace]

Rating: Unique (Set)

Durability: 23/23 Defense: 35

\* Indomitable +30

\* When the set is worn: Defense +100

\* When the set is worn: Indomitable +50

A necklace manifested by the Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest.

It gives the wearer a strong willpower and defense.

User Restriction: Level 300 or higher.

Weight: 15

[Guardian's Bracelet]

Rating: Unique (Set)

Durability: 21/21 Defense: 37

\* Indomitable +30

\* When the set is worn: Defense +100

\* When the set is worn: Indomitable +50

A bracelet manifested by the Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest.

It gives the wearer a strong willpower and defense.

User Restriction: Level 300 or higher.

Weight: 11

“Oh, it’ a magic accessory?”

“Yes. Defense is attached to an accessory?”

Most accessories didn’t have much defense. For example, while Doran’s Ring could exert tremendous healing ability equivalent to a legendary rating, it didn’t give even one point of defense. On the other hand, the Guardian’s Necklace and Bracelet both had extremely high defense.

‘With the set effect, they increase defense by 172 points...’

It was comparable to a level 300 heavy gauntlets or heavy boots of the normal rating. It was amazing that these two accessories gave such high defense. However, the members weren’t happy.

“Just high defense? They don’t have any options.”

“Yes. An accessory should at least have some attribute resistance.”

“I need accessories that decrease cooldown time.”

“It raises the indomitable stat, but the stat itself isn’t all that great.”

[Indomitable]

Has a certain probability of invalidating a portion of the incoming damage. The lower the health, the higher the probability.

\* The higher the number, the higher the effect.

\* Stat points can't be distributed to this stat.

According to the stated description, Indomitable was a very useful special stat. In particular, it was an essential stat for tankers. However, because the probability of the stat's effect being activated was extremely low, people treated 'indomitable' as a trash stat.

Grid was more familiar with this than anyone else.

'The indomitable stat really is trash.'

Grid currently had close to 900 points in Indomitable. Despite this fact, he never experienced the indomitable effect. These were the only accessories that a strong boss monster dropped? The Overgeared members were disappointed.

But Grid was different.

"If you guys don't mind, I would like to use these accessories."

After he became Pagma's Descendant. Grid had been self-sufficient regarding items through production and raids. However, accessories weren't an area that blacksmiths could produce and because boss monsters didn't often drop them, Grid didn't have any.

'I couldn't find someone who could handle the purple orichalcum...'

From Grid's perspective, he was grateful even for the Guardian accessory set. The Overgeared members unconditionally agreed to Grid's request.

"Grid, you should do what you want."

"You are the first place in this raid. It is natural for you to have what you want."

"Thank you."

Grid expressed his gratitude and shared the information of the greatsword.

[Doppelganger's Greatsword]

Rating: Legendary



Durability: 731/731 Attack Power: 780~1,516

Attack Speed: -6%

\* Ignores 20% of the enemy's defense.

\* Increases the power of attack skills by 20%.

A greatsword that the Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest copied.

It imitated the work of the legendary blacksmith Pagma, but the resemblance is only in the appearance. The power isn't comparable to Pagma's works.

User Restriction: Level 320 or higher. More than 2,010 strength.  
Advanced Sword Mastery level 2 or higher.

Weight: 3,955

“Wow...!”

“It is terrific!”

It was overwhelming performance. The Overgeared members let out sounds of admiration. Grid was also impressed.

‘It is at this level, despite not being comparable to Pagma’s work?’

The damage was slightly less than the unique rated Failure, but the options of the greatsword showed other advantages. In particular, the 20% increase in attack skills damage captivated Grid’s heart.

‘If I use this greatsword, Pagma’s Swordsmanship will be greatly strengthened...’

Of course, it wasn’t a weapon good enough to replace Failure. It meant it wasn’t suitable for Grid to use. The Overgeared members were also similar.

“It is a pity that it’s a greatsword.”

“It would’ve been nice if it was a one-handed weapon...”

No one used the greatsword as a weapon among the Overgeared members. Beast Master Toon could handle a greatsword, but his primary weapon was a wrist blade. Both Grid and the Overgeared members felt regret.

“Why don’t you try challenging the two sword style?” Lael suggested.

“Two sword style? Dual swordsmanship?”

“Yes.”

Some swordsmen classes acquired a passive skill called the ‘Two Sword Style’, where they used two swords instead of a shield and boasted powerful attacks and dazzling attack orbits.

“He doesn’t have the skill called Two Sword Style... But it shouldn’t be a problem?”

As Pagma’s Descendant, Grid could handle all weapons regardless of whether he had the required weapon mastery skill. The Overgeared members knew this fact. However, Grid thought negatively.

“How can I do dual swordsmanship with a greatsword...”

The weight wasn’t a problem. Grid’s strength stat was unrivaled. Failure was light by default, but he could swing the relatively heavy Doppelganger’s Greatsword with one hand. But there was a problem. Both Failure and the Doppelganger’s Greatsword had a length of 2m. It wouldn’t be easy to wield two weapons longer than his height at the same time.

Lauel persuaded Grid.

“Your control skills have increased by leaps and bounds during this raid. It is more than you can imagine yourself. I am confident that if you try hard and don’t give up, I am convinced that you can

do it. Besides, don't you have a great mentor?"

Lauel pointed towards Piaro and said,

"Toon uses two wrist blades and Piaro is the strongest swordsman. If you study with them, won't you be able to master the Two Sword Style someday?"

"Umm..."

Certainly, it was a tempting suggestion. The Doppelganger's Greatsword increased basic damage and skills damage. By taking advantage of the two weapons and using Pagma's Swordsmanship, he would be able to achieve a much higher attack power.

'I want to challenge it.'

His blood was boiling. But there was a problem. The Doppelganger's Greatsword was an item obtained in a raid group with the Overgeared members. He couldn't take all the items alone.

Grid hesitated.

"Do as Lauel says."

"That's right. It is a good idea. Grid, can't you use any weapon without limit? You should take advantage of this advantage."

“You will raise your defense with the accessories, so it’s ideal if you can increase your attack power.”

“Everyone...”

They were generously giving it to me. Were they doing him a favor? The Grid in the past would’ve giggled and accepted it without any conflicts. But now he was different. He had something called a conscience.

The Overgeared members encouraged him when he hesitated.

“In the first place, you are the only one who can use a greatsword. Should we sell it to others for money? Absolutely not. I don’t want a ranker getting their hands on a powerful weapon.”

“That’s right, should we raise a rival with our own hands?”

“In addition, we owe a lot to Grid.”

After he became the master of the Overgeared Guild. Grid produced the guild members’ items for free. He thought it was something he should do as the guild master. He was always thankful to the Overgeared members.

Now that favor was returning to him.

“Thank you...!”

The Doppelganger’s Greatsword was worth at least three million gold. Grid was thrilled by the Overgeared members’ actions.

\*\*\*

“It is extremely difficult to adapt to using two swords in a short period of time. In particular, it is theoretically impossible to master dual wielding with greatswords.

“Do you mean I should give up?”

“No, that isn’t it. It is possible to overcome it with Pagma’s power. But it will take time. First of all, don’t fret. I will try to train you so that you can use dual swords with Pagma’s Swordsmanship.”

Grid and the Overgeared members passed through the Mysterious Forest and climbed the mountain. It was to search for the presence of a mine. While they were moving, Grid discussed how to dual wield with Piaro.

Huroi was walking ahead and he shouted.

“There is a small cabin on the slopes of the mountain.”

“A cabin?”

A person lived in a dangerous area where no one could enter because of the doppelganger? Grid and the Overgeared members were curious but didn't forget their boundaries. They knocked on the door of the cabin.

“Is anyone here?”

“...”

There was no answer. There were also no sounds.

“Should we enter?”

Vantner wasn't sure if there was a landlord present, but he opened the old door. Then the smell of mold tormented the group.

“This house has been neglected for at least a decade.”

Grid's group started to search the house. However, there was nothing in the house except for a small bed and desk.

“Huh? What is this?”

Vantner discovered an old storage box. It was made of birch and locked like a treasure chest. What was inside? Vantner was curious and tried to break the box. But the system rejected it.

[Nothing happened.]

“This... It looks like we need a key to open the box?”

“Leave it to me.”

Grid came forward. He pulled out his ‘Master Key.’

Clink.

The rusty lock was opened with no resistance.

“This...?”

There was a small book in the storage box. Grid opened it.



# Chapter 235

---

There was a small book kept in a firmly locked box. It was someone's diary. The first few chapters were filled with crooked letters like a child had written it.

Summer, Year 259 of the Kingdom.

I met a child who looked exactly like me in the forest on the way out of the village.

The person said hello! I also smiled and greeted the child.

“Year 259...”

“146 years ago.”

It was a diary from a long time ago. It was remarkably well preserved without anything being erased. Grid turned to the next chapter.

Winter, Year 259 of the Kingdom.

I went to the forest for the first time in a while.

The child who looked exactly like me was wearing summer clothes. I took off my hat and scarf and gave it to the child, who laughed.

Winter, Year 259 of the Kingdom.

I told my dad about the child in the forest.

My dad became angry. He said the child was a dangerous monster. He told me not to meet the child again.

“The child in this diary is the doppelganger?”

“Indeed.”

Not all monsters were aggressive. There were monsters that attacked humans first, and those that didn't. The Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest seemed to be a gentle monster in the past.

‘If this guy was like this, why did he attack us first?’

Grid and the Overgeared members had questions.

Spring, Year 260 of the Kingdom.

Dad said that child in the forest was dangerous, but he didn't know.

I went to see her again.

The child treasured the hat and scarf that I gave her.

“Hello!” I greeted her. She replied with those words.

We promised to be friends.

Spring, Year 260 of the Kingdom.

I named my friend Randy. My name is Wendy and together, we'll look like sisters.

Autumn, Year 260 of the Kingdom.

Randy now speaks very well. She can follow everything that I say.

My good friend is smart.

Winter, Year 260 of the Kingdom.

I played with Randy every day and was caught by my dad. Dad took out his bow, stating that he was going to kick Randy out.

I was scared and followed.

My dad saw Randy's greeting and couldn't shoot the bow. Thank god.

Summer, Year 261 of the Kingdom.

My dad taught Randy how to use the bow. Now Randy is better at hunting than Dad.

Thanks to Randy, my family never goes hungry.

Thank you Randy.

But I like rabbit meat more than boar meat.

The days in the diary flowed quickly. The young girl called Wendy spent her days pleasantly. Her father and her friend Randy gave her new experiences every day. The feelings conveyed from the diary were happy, so the hearts of Grid and the Overgeared members became warm.

Unfortunately, the contents of the diary started to enter a new phase. It was when Wendy's handwriting started to mature.

Spring, Year 270 of the Kingdom.

There seems to be an amazing mine behind our house. The villagers gathered together to check it, before saying that they should report it to the lord of Reidan.

Spring, Year 270 of the Kingdom.

The lord visited with dozens of knights. He told my dad to guide him to the mine.

The sight of the lord watching me was somewhat unpleasant.

Summer, Year 270 of the Kingdom.

Oh my god!

A gentleman more beautiful than me came to the mine. His dignified manner and fine skin was like a prince from a fairy tale.

The prince was concerned.

“The minds of humans are still too immature to bear this mineral.”

“Is she talking about Pagma?”

“I was thinking the same thing.”

Grid was sure of it after reading the contents of the diary. As Rabbit guessed, there was a mine in this mountain, and the mineral there was so huge that Pagma had to pay attention to it.

‘Yellow mithril.’

Grid kept reading the diary.

Autumn, Year 270 of the Kingdom.

The lord declared that he would develop the mine. Then he ordered me to pour him a drink.

As I was serving him, the lord kept touching my hips.

I was uncomfortable, but refrained because he was the lord.

Autumn, Year 270 of the Kingdom.

The lord said he would make me his concubine.

What is a concubine?

When I asked my father what that meant, he just shed tears.

Autumn, Year 270 of the Kingdom.

The villagers told me. There were one or two women who went to become the lord's concubines, but they were all treated as playthings.

Everyone is worried about me.

Scary...

Winter, Year 270 of the Kingdom.

I explained the matter to Randy, stating that I would need to leave home soon to become the lord's concubine.

I don't want to leave my father and Randy.

I cried loudly and Randy patted my back.

Randy is always nice. Winter with Randy wasn't too cold.

Winter, Year 270 of the Kingdom.

It's serious.

The lord tried to visit the mine, but was attacked by a monster in the Mysterious Forest.

The identity of a monster is a doppelganger.

Randy...

Spring, Year 271 of the Kingdom.

I heard that the angry lord organized an army to kill Randy.

I'm worried about Randy and can't sleep.

Spring, Year 271 of the Kingdom.

As soon as dawn came, I went to Randy.

Randy's appearance was different.

She looked exactly the same as one of the lord's knights.

"I don't like it. I will protect Wendy."

Randy shouted at me to run away.

No matter how I tried to persuade her, Randy wouldn't step back.

What if Randy was hurt?

I was afraid and sad.

"Since then..."



In order to defend the girl called Wendy, the gentle doppelganger started attacking anyone who invaded the forest. He had been fighting for 100 years.

“The Guardian accessories were made by the doppelganger for this.”

What happened to Wendy in the end? Then how did the doppelganger take on Pagma’s appearance? Grid and the Overgeared members became immersed in the diary.

Spring, Year 271 of the Kingdom.

It’s said that Randy defeated the army sent by the lord by herself.

It’s scary that many people died. But Randy was unharmed, so I was happy.

I went to Randy.

“Don’t worry. I’ll protect Wendy. Don’t worry, Wendy, don’t worry.”

Randy repeatedly said the same thing while bleeding.

She was seriously injured and couldn’t get up properly.

I had been saving up herbs to treat Randy.

But Randy was impervious to the effects of the herbs.

I will be with Randy tonight to look after her.

Spring, Year 271 of the Kingdom.

A few days later, Randy's wounds haven't healed.

According to rumors, the lord is preparing a new army.

Please... Somebody please help Randy.

Summer, Year 271 of the Kingdom.

I was leaning on Randy's shoulders.

"Your killing originates from a noble heart."

The prince I saw last year appeared.

Despite Randy swinging the sword, the prince hammered at her.

No!

I yelled, but the prince didn't stop. Randy's body kept being hit.

Then something strange happened.

Randy's wounds became better.

“Is this the concept of repair? The material that makes up the body of a doppelganger can be called a metal.” Lael asked.

Grid nodded.

“It seems so.”

It seemed like he could do it as well. Grid thought before turning to the next chapter.

Summer, Year 271 of the Kingdom.

“This world is full of danger. Humans are threatened by monsters and are busy fighting among themselves, while the demons underground are helped by the Yatan Church.”

The prince who called himself Pagma said difficult words.

He smiled at me while patting Randy's head.

“There is a balance to be kept. If the present day Eternal Kingdom has the power to threaten the empire, it would cause great confusion. I will give you the right to use some of my strength, so you must defend this forest thoroughly. The consequence of that will result in Wendy’s safety.”

“ ... ”

Randy was smarter than me. Unlike me, Randy understood the words and nodded.

Then on this day. Randy’s appearance changed into that of the beautiful prince.

Summer, Year 271 of the Kingdom.

Randy defeated the lord’s army.

This time, Randy wasn’t seriously injured.

Thank god. But I was worried.

Randy’s atmosphere changed.

The warmth of his eyes felt a bit cold.

Winter, Year 271 of the Kingdom.

Randy continued to fight for the last few months. The lord hired mercenaries after the army couldn't defeat Randy.

Randy warned me when I visited him.

“Don't come here anymore. Wendy should stay with your dad.”

‘Why...?’

“Aren't we friends? Why are you rejecting me?”

I asked him and Randy explained.

“I'm able to easily kill humans. And Wendy is a human. I... I'm scared.”

Randy looked lonely. My heart hurts.

Spring, Year 272 of the Kingdom.

I visited Randy today.

Randy acted as usual.

He told me to 'Go back' and then fell silent. He didn't respond to any of my stories.

I'm sorry and scared. More than anything, I am sorry.

Summer, Year 272 of the Kingdom.

Randy has killed many people.

'Are you okay?'

There was no answer from Randy. Now he didn't even look at me. He just looked into the distance. He's changing more and more.

Because of me...

Winter, Year 272 of the Kingdom.

My dad went to the village to sell leather and hasn't returned for several days. I tried to visit the village, but Randy blocked my way.

He still didn't speak.

Winter, Year 272 of the Kingdom.

I have to go to the village today!

I yelled at Randy.

I spoke harshly when I said it wasn't necessary for him to protect me.

Then Randy opened the way.

In retrospect, Randy looked very sad.

Winter, Year 272 of the Kingdom.

I arrived in the village and heard shocking news.

My dad was arrested by the lord.

His crime was conspiring with the doppelganger.

The lord found out that my dad and I were close to Randy.

It's all my fault.

The sweet and pure Randy became covered in blood and my dad was suffering...

All my fault.

Winter, Year 272 of the Kingdom.

The lord promised to release my father. Instead, I would become his concubine.

I have no other options.

Spring, Year 273 of the Kingdom.

I met Randy last night.

I couldn't bear to tell him, who was trying to protect me, that I was leaving.

Thank you, I'm sorry. And I can only say that I love you.

Now I am leaving this house. I will never be able to come back. However, I lied and told Randy I would be back after a while.

Today will be my last diary entry.

“...Poor Randy!”

Vantner burst into tears. Unlike his rough appearance, he was very sensitive. Therefore, tears and snot were running down his face.



“Shit! Poor Randy! He struggled to protect Wendy, but in the end he couldn’t protect her! He didn’t even know that he couldn’t protect Wendy. Until now! For over 100 years, he has been waiting for Wendy to come back!”

“ ... ”

The Overgeared members were solemn. They didn’t know the circumstances of the doppelganger and just thought he was a bad guy. Grid saw their depressed expressions and smiled.

“Even if it wasn’t us, someday someone else would’ve done the same thing. It’s fortunate that we know how Randy was feeling due to this book.”

It was a mature comment that they couldn’t believe.

“Grid...”

“My Lord...”

The Overgeared members comforted by Grid were impressed. They felt genuine respect for the ever-changing and growing Grid. Grid turned to the ‘real last chapter’ of the diary.

Summer, Year 286 of the Kingdom.

The lord abandoned me.

My soul and body that have become rags have finally found freedom.

The Mysterious Forest that I hadn't returned to in 13 years.

Randy was waiting for me, looking just like he did in the past.

Randy...

There were so many words I wanted to say. I wanted to express my pain. But I didn't want Randy's heart to hurt, so I smiled as brightly as possible.

I'm back.

In the last chapter of the diary, small traces of blood could be seen. It seemed like Wendy became sick while living the lonely life of the lord's concubine.

"She died shortly after returning home. The doppelganger must not understand that humans have a different life-span and had been waiting until this day."

"Um..."

Grid closed the diary.

Then a notification window popped up.

[You have learned a little more about the person called Pagma.]

[There is a bond with Pagma. The growth rate of your skills will increase.]

‘What?’

The legendary skills had the disadvantage that their effect and power were excellent, but the growth speed was slow. This would overcome that shortcoming. Grid was delighted by the unexpected harvest when the notification windows were renewed.

[You have discovered the story of the Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest.]

[The Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest that fell by your hands is now different from the past. Its intelligence, physical abilities and most of its memories have been degraded. But if you call it Randy, it will be delighted and follow you.]

This was an opportunity to get a new pet. Grid couldn't resist.

‘I will be your new friend.’

Ttalkak.

Grid decided to put the diary back in its place. Then he ordered the Overgeared members.

“After confirming the mine, I will collect the doppelganger and return.”

It was an expedition where he could obtain many things.

# Chapter 236

---

Grid and the Overgeared members returned.

It took four days, which was twice as long as the planned schedule. Rabbit came out and met them.

“I was worried since you were late.”

Vantner grumbled, “As part of training, we defeated all of the monsters on the way and back from the destination.”

Grid received the grumbles and laughed. “We’ve become a lot stronger thanks to that.”

It was true.

During the past four days, they constantly hunted as well as raided the doppelganger. Therefore, the Overgeared members made tremendous progress. It wasn’t just increasing their levels and items. Their control and ability to cooperate with each other had increased dramatically. It was thanks to Piaro’s teachings, who was an expert in tactics as well as swordsmanship.

Rabbit spoke bitterly, “Please stick to the schedule in the future. There will be a big loss if the schedule is out of order.”

Grid listened to him. He and the Overgeared members all had

important positions in Reidan. It was too much to delay them with him. Grid carved that advice into himself.

“I will be careful.”

‘He has become more mature.’

Rabbit smiled as he perceived the new changes in Grid. “Anyway, I’m glad that you’re fine. What was the result?”

Did a mine really exist in Alzar Mountain?

If there was a mine, was it really a yellow mithril mine? Rabbit was full of expectations, and Grid didn’t disappoint him.

“The mine was secured. As you guessed, it’s a yellow mithril mine.”

“Ohh...!”

Yellow mithril had appeared in the history of alchemy hundreds of years ago. None of the present day people had witnessed yellow mithril. Now Reidan obtained a monopoly on yellow mithril. It was a feat that even the empire, which occupied more than half of the territory on the continent, had failed at.

The resulting ripple effect would be huge.

“You did a great job. Reidan’s future has been obtained.”

It wasn’t an exaggeration. Reidan would be able to establish a unique position with alchemy. It was expected that there would be an explosive synergy with alchemy and the legendary blacksmith.

As a result, Reidan would become the Talima of the human world.

“Let’s go to the meeting room. We need to discuss mine development and the alchemy investment funds.” Rabbit said excitedly, but Grid shook his head.

“I’m okay. Discuss it with the Overgeared members and proceed on your own.”

“I understand.”

Rabbit already knew that Grid was deliberately avoiding his duties as a lord and didn’t panic. He just felt relief for being trusted, and a burning motivation.

‘I will do my best to make both of us rich.’

The decisive Rabbit moved to the meeting room with the Overgeared members. A small woman was left alone with Grid. A female with twin tailed blonde hair, it was Euphemina.

“You seem to have completed all the work well. Congratulations.”

Euphemina was tired. It was natural, since she had been working without a break since returning from Frontier with Rabbit.

“Why did you call me? Do you have something else for me to do?”

There were sharp points in Euphemina’s words. It seemed that she wanted to hit him.

Then Grid spoke some surprising words.

“Rest for the moment.”

“...Huh?”

Euphemina’s eyes widened. She was confused by Grid’s unexpected words.

“I know that you’ve been working harder than anyone else over the past few months. Haven’t you gone through a lot since joining the guild? Take some time to recharge and get a good night’s sleep. You can also raise your level, which you have been postponing.”

“Is it okay?”



Reidan was short-handed compared to the size of the city. In such a situation, it would be a big blow if an elite like Euphemina was to leave. Grid laughed at her hesitance.

“Yes, Reidan is quite stable thanks to your work. The experts in each field have been trained, so don’t worry too much.”

“Grid...”

Euphemina was moved.

In retrospect, this was the first time Grid had been so kind to her. He was always chilly and awkward, so this attitude change felt like a reward for her hard work. But that good atmosphere didn’t last for long.

“I recommend the Siren Kingdom as the hunting ground. While you are there, you should get some of the Water Clan King’s tears.”

“...”

It was the moment when Grid’s intentions were revealed. Euphemina’s expression cooled.

“You want me to go to the Siren Kingdom and get the tears of the water clan king?”

The effect of the Water Clan King’s Tears was unrivaled. It was a

rare material that permanently gave magic to an item. But it was hard to find. Grid once again gave her a mission under the guise of a vacation.

‘How long must I be abused?’

Euphemina sighed. She was treated as a princess everywhere she went, but now she was just a worker? She felt skeptical about whether she really should’ve joined the Overgeared Guild. Then Grid handed an item to her. It wasn’t a robe or a cloak. It was a hooded zip up that could be seen in modern society.

“What’s this?” Euphemina was puzzled by the unfamiliar item and asked Grid.

“A gift.”

“What...?”

Euphemina didn’t show much of a response. She saw the Hooded Zip Up as just a decorative item. But she was shocked as soon as she confirmed the item information.

“I-Invisibility cloak?”

Around 200 years ago, the legendary tailor Kruger made five invisibility cloaks, two of which still reportedly existed. But no one knew where to obtain them. Invisibility cloaks were a super rare system. Euphemina was thrilled by the gift.

“I will go to the Siren Kingdom!”

Euphemina once again thought it was good that she joined Overgeared. Grid’s mood improved as he saw her happiness.

Give and take. The joy of a colleague was his joy. The growth of a colleague was his growth.

Grid honestly thought so.

\*\*\*

Khan’s smithy.

Grid opened the pet inventory and pulled out the ‘Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest.’

Crash.

The liquid was reminiscent of molten metal and stretched over the floor without much effort. Grid pulled out his hammer.

‘Repair it.’

In Wendy’s diary, Pagma had repaired the doppelganger. On the basis of that, Pagma’s Descendant should also be able to repair the

doppelganger. Grid didn't doubt it. Then he started to repair the doppelganger with the Legendary Blacksmith's Repair skill Lv. 3.

Ttang! Ttang!

It wasn't easy to repair the doppelganger. He didn't know the repair method because he had no understanding of the structure of the body. He had no choice but to study it. Grid believed in himself. To be precise, he believed in the Legendary Blacksmith's Repair skill. He was sure the skill would lead him correctly.

Then one hour later. Grid finally determined the core and hammered quickly.

[Your dexterity has risen by 5.]

[Your persistence has risen by 3.]

[The Legendary Blacksmith's Repair skill has reached level 4.]

[The Doppelganger of the Mysterious Forest has been restored!]

The welcome notification windows popped up as the doppelganger started to move. Now it had a slime like appearance. Grid confirmed the information window.

Name: Not Set

Species: Doppelganger

Level: 1 (0/200)

Affinity: 0/100

Health: 1,200/1,200

Physical Attack Power: 15 Magic Attack Power: 2

Defense: 30 Magic Resistance: 6

Attributes: Nothing

Status: Confusion

(Who am I...?)

\* A doppelganger that existed for over 150 years in the Mysterious Forest. It has accumulated wisdom through human relations and has a lot of combat experience.

Above all, there is the power to copy the appearance and abilities of the legendary blacksmith Pagma, so it isn't comparable to normal doppelgangers.

-Current Skills List-

[Copy Lv. 10 (Mastered)]

Can perfectly copy the appearance of a target with a lower level than it. The stats are only 80% copied. Only some skills (random) will be copied.

It can completely copy the appearance of a target on the same level as it. The stats are only 50% copied. Only some skills (random) will be copied.

Can perfectly copy the appearance of a target with a higher level. The stats are only 20% copied. Only a small number of skills (random) will be copied.

Perfectly copies the owner's appearance. The stats are only 30% copied. Only some skills (selected) will be copied.

[Language Ability Lv. 1]

The language ability is at the level of a five year old child.

[Half Immortality (Passive)]

Somewhere in the doppelganger's body, there is a core of life energy. The doppelganger won't die unless this core is completely destroyed.

‘Wonderful.’

Grid was thrilled. The basic stats of the doppelganger at level one were very low compared to Noe, but the Copy skill was excellent. Grid could use it as a clone that demonstrated 30% of his stats.

‘I have to take care to raise its level.’

Grid set a policy to treat the doppelganger differently from Noe. If Noe knew, he would be jealous.

“Wh...o?” The doppelganger was confused. “Who am I...? You... Who?”

Grid kindly explained to the doppelganger who was asking questions. “Your name is Randy. And I am Grid. We are friends.”

“Ran...dy. Frie...nds.”

Was it a remainder of the lost memories? The doppelganger slowly changed to look like a five or six year old girl. She had orange hair and was very cute. She would be beautiful when she was older.

‘This child is Wendy.’

Grid’s expression darkened. He felt compassion for Randy and Wendy’s unhappy life.

“Randy. Good name. Friend. Good.”

“I’m glad that you like it.”

Randy smiled very brightly. Grid couldn’t help stroking her hair.

‘There might’ve been a sad ending in your past life, but this life will be different.’

Grid decided. He aimed to give Randy happiness.

“Next...”

He needed to strengthen the Doppelganger’s Greatsword and Grid’s Boots in turn. Grid took out a large amount of enhancement stones that the Overgeared members had conceded to him.

‘After this preparation, I’ll get revenge for Piaro.’

It was the moment when a new legend in the history of the Saharan Empire would soon be recorded.



# Chapter 237

---

Grid had a lot of experience with items enhancement. Grid had done a lot of enhancement compared to the other users of Satisfy. Grid took advantage of his passive skill that ‘increased the probability of enhancement’ to enhance the guild members’ items.

‘There’s no trick to enhancement.’

Enhancement wasn’t affected by stats such as dexterity. Superstitions such as enhancing at certain times, or repairing the item first before enhancement were useless. The success was purely based on luck. It was a truth he had learned from countless enhancements.

“Umm.”

Grid looked at the dozens of enhancement stones in his inventory. He was extremely nervous. He was more nervous than when he went to see his first love, Ahyoung.

‘I need either the greatsword or the boots to reach at least +7...’

Would he be successful? Would his hair loss return if he received damage from this? It was a matter of money, so he was bound to be more sensitive. God, Buddha, goddess Rebecca, etc. Grid prayed earnestly to the gods that existed in the game and reality, then started the enhancement with trembling hands.

\*\*\*

The discussion on the mine development and alchemy investment funding was over. The results were positive because Lauel and Rabbit were in agreement. However, the Overgeared members who left the meeting room weren't happy.

"We're going to suffer over the next few months." Vantner grumbled.

He had a mission to destroy the monsters around the path from Reidan to Alzar Mountain. Wouldn't the monsters just respawn if they were killed? At least 10 giant worm nests needed to be destroyed.

The 17 Overgeared members working with Vantner sighed. But Pon envied them.

'It's better than me...'

Pon was commanded to identify all the dungeons and boss monsters in the west. It was a mission to investigate which hunting ground would give them the most money. He was in charge, since it was a highly difficult mission.

Regas, who received the mission with him, smiled and spoke. "It's interesting. Let's take this opportunity to challenge a two person raid." It was Regas' dream to grow stronger through struggling. Pon had to be with this ignorant guy whose brain was

made up of muscles. He could see a rocky path in front of him.

Lauel encouraged them.

“Our roles are important while Grid is away. Let’s take responsibility by raising our levels and developing the city.”

“Grid is going to the Saharan Empire?”

“Yes, he says there is an important quest from Piaro.”

“The empire... I hope that Grid doesn’t encounter any bumps in the road.”

The world was wide and there were a lot of monsters. And most of the monsters were in the empire.

\*\*\*

The spacious fields of Reidan.

Piario was standing where wheat had started to grow. Looking at his sweaty appearance, he really was like a farmer. Then Bland and the workers saw a welcome face.

“Duke Grid is coming here.”

“...!”

The eyes of all the workers turned to one side at once. It was really the lord.

People cheered.

“Hooray Duke Grid! Hooray Duke Grid!”

The people of Reidan had one mindset. They cheered every time they saw Grid. It wasn't because someone forced them. The people were just absolutely loyal to Grid.

“The enhancement was good.”

A blue energy was rising like a haze from Grid's boots. Grid's smile wasn't because Piaro noticed quickly. He was able to strengthen both the Doppelganger's Greatsword and Grid's Boots to +8.

He was lucky. In this event, his knowledge of Pagma's Swordsmanship increased, he got a doppelganger for a pet, and he found a yellow mithril mine. Everything was going well.

Grid wanted to maintain this momentum.

“I think that now is the time to get your revenge. I will head to the empire.”

His eyes were determined. Piaro felt a strong trust in Grid.

“I believe you can get the job done.”

[A quest has been created.]

[The True Traitor of the Red Knights]

Difficulty Level: SS

Asmophel dared to rendezvous with the empress and was caught by Piaro. Piaro and his men were framed and branded as traitors.

Due to that, he lost his men and had to flee. Now Piaro has no intention of forgiving Asmophel.

However, it is virtually impossible for Piaro to get revenge himself.

Piaro has made you his agent of revenge.

Quest Clear Conditions: Kill Asmophel, the former vice captain of the Red Knights.

Quest Reward: Piaro's affinity will reach the peak.

Quest Failure: Level -6.

[Would you like to accept the quest?]

‘It has changed in many ways.’

In the past when Grid was a beginner, the level of difficulty for this quest was S-grade. And the quest rewards were the title of ‘Agent of Revenge’ and Piaro’s sword. Now the difficulty had been raised and the rewards changed.

It was a phenomenon that occurred when his relationship with Piaro improved and Piaro’s heart stabilized.

‘What will happen if my affinity with Piaro reaches the maximum?’

Was it possible he would teach Grid his sword techniques?

‘That won’t happen.’

Piaro’s swordsmanship belonged to his family. It wouldn’t be easy to teach others. Grid thought about it differently.

‘Will he become my subordinate?’

Piaro’s power was beyond imagination. If Grid could obtain Piaro

as a subordinate, it would be like obtaining a group of men. Grid was filled with great expectations and accepted the quest.

“Believe in me.”

Piario saw his confidence and warned him. “I’ve said it before, but the empire is full of strong people. The process to approach Asmophel was difficult, so be cautious.”

“I understand.”

Grid answered well, but he wasn’t particularly nervous. Piario spoke again. “Don’t trust your techniques. The two sword technique isn’t something that can be completely handled with such a short amount of training.”

Grid had practiced dual wielding on the way back from the doppelganger raid. Grid nodded. “Don’t worry, I know.”

Grid replied like this, but his inner intentions were different.

‘Right now I’m lacking, but that will change over time.’

His destination was the capital of the empire, Titan. It would take at least 20 days to arrive. If he practiced steadily on the way, he would be able to use the two sword style sufficiently. It was possible because Piario trained him well in the basics.

\*\*\*

The empire was the center of the world. It was natural for the empire to be the master of the continent, and it was right for kingdoms outside the empire to obey them. It was a very arrogant and selfish thought.

But no kingdom could condemn them. The power of the Saharan Empire was overwhelming.

“This is the village of the Ul Clan.”

The master of the White Wolf Guild, Veradin, was a baron of the empire. He received an order from Earl Zebra to subjugate the immigrants, and he finally found the base of the enemy. It was the accomplishment at the end of a one week journey.

Veradin was cautious. “How many enemies?”

Kiki, a sniper used the Hawk’s Eyes skill and reported. “1,050 people. More than half of them are women and young children.”

It meant that less than 500 people could fight properly. Veradin was relieved.

“There’s no need for tactics. Rush from the front and wipe them out.”



Kiki's reaction was unsure. "No matter how I think about it, this isn't something that people should do."

The Ul Clan were ordinary humans rather than monsters. They were a poor clan because they weren't designated as citizens of the empire. It was a pity, because they were once a flourishing nation until they were deprived of their land by the empire. The few remaining people chose to hide in the most remote areas.

Kiki was unwilling to kill them.

Veradin rebuked her. "They're just NPCs. Don't be shaken by unnecessary sentiments."

If they killed the Ul Clan, their contribution to the empire would increase by 12 per person. Veradin wanted to build a foundation to become a viscount by performing this quest perfectly.

Kiki sighed.

"Sigh... I wish a golem army would arrive."

This was the story about the golem invasion that took place in the Eternal Kingdom several months ago. Naturally, Grid's name emerged.

"That Grid brat was really lucky."

“That’s right. He happened to become a duke in one shot by killing the golem army that invaded the kingdom by chance.”

“Ah! I’m envious! If we belonged to the Eternal Kingdom, we would’ve been able to defeat the golems and occupied a duke’s seat!”

As the guild members started talking about unnecessary things, Veradin scolded them.

“Focus on the mission.”

“Yes!”

The guild members restored their posture. Unlike Kiki, they didn’t show any resistance to hunting the Ul Clan. Weren’t NPCs just a lump of graphics and artificial intelligence? They resembled people, but weren’t actually people.

It was easy to kill them. It was nothing. Veradin confirmed that the guild members were emanating a fighting spirit and ordered.

“Trample them.”

“Waaaaahhhhh!”

Except for Kiki, 24 guild members went down the mountain together.

It was a tremendous speed. They didn't slow down despite the rugged rocks. The Ul Clan discovered them along the way and fired arrows and magic from the watchtower. However, it was useless. They avoided or defended against all attacks and quickly reached the goal.

“Get lost!”

“Thanks for the contribution~”

“Kuaack!”

It was an unbelievable situation where only 24 people wiped out 1,000 people. The small village soon turned into a hell. It was a one-sided massacre.

“P-Please, my only daughter...”

“Just die quietly.”

People begged, but the White Wolf guild members had no mercy. The women, children, and elderly were murdered. But the cruel killing didn't last long.

“I'm not the boy detective, so why do incidents happen everywhere I go? Well, I got a quest and it isn't too bad...”

The White Wolf members were confused. It was because a user, not an NPC, emerged from one corner of the village.

‘Who is that person?’

He was wearing a broad-brimmed hat so his appearance and ID couldn’t be determined. The White Wolf members asked the man.

“Who are you?”

“Me?” The man held a jade greatsword in his hand and replied, “This time I am the Apostle of Justice.”

Puok!

“What?!”

Veradin’s eyes widened. The same man appeared behind Veradin’s ally and stabbed him?

“A clone...!”

It wasn’t a normal clone. It was the first time he saw a clone that could exert such power.

‘A high level user!’

# Chapter 238

---

Most clones were illusions. They were merely a gimmick that couldn't exert substantial force. However, the unidentified man's clone dealt a real blow. The guild member Elvo screamed as he was hit.

The White Wolf guild members became frightened.

'I heard that a third advancement assassin can have a perfect clone.'

'What? Then this man is an assassin over level 300?'

'Is that Faker...?'

Faker was the number one assassin and 14th ranked monster on the unified rankings. It was rare for him to reveal himself in public, but there were many rumors. It was said that the number of users assassinated was over 10,000, and rankers were always attacked by him.

There was a rumor that even the first ranked Kraugel suffered a level decrease after being assassinated by Faker. Of course, they were lies. Faker wasn't a player killer. He was like Regas and liked personal training.

But rumors were always distorted and exaggerated. The White Wolf Guild misunderstood Faker as a murderer. Was the man in

front of them really Faker?

‘We are inferior.’

‘Today is my day to die!’

The White Wolf members started to shake. They gulped and shivered. Veradin spoke a few words to calm them down. “Assassins don’t use a greatsword. In addition, they are covert. If he was Faker, we would already be dead.”

“Ah...!”

They were confused and overlooked the obvious facts. The guild members regained their calm as Veradin explained.

“That person is likely to have a hidden class.”

It was a reasonable guess. Hidden classes existed in Satisfy. It wasn’t strange if there was a hidden class specialized in clones. The guild members were relieved.

“Phew... I’m glad. I don’t want to go against Faker.”

“Dealing with a hidden class is easier than dealing with a third advancement ranker.”

“Those people are too scary.”

It showed how much the dignity of hidden classes had been lost since the third advancement classes. Veradin was alarmed at the guild members' relaxation and warned them.

“It's still difficult to gauge the opponent's ability. Don't act hastily and step back.”

The White Wolf members had strong loyalty. They stepped back without a fuss as soon as Veradin commanded them.

Step step.

The unidentified man walked through the streets.

“You aren't fighting back? Are you scared?”

As a guild master, Veradin was always cautious. He didn't fall for the taunts. He closely watched the man and the clone as he asked. “What is your relationship with the Ul Clan? Why are you helping them?”

The answer was concise. “I got a quest.”

That person was Grid. During his journey, he accidentally visited the Ul Clan's village and got a quest when the village was attacked by the enemy. He couldn't help wondering if he was cursed to get

involved in incidents wherever he went.

[Ul Clan's Rescue]

Difficulty: A

The Ul Clan have been deprived of their kingdom by the Saharan Empire, and the survivors are hiding in remote areas. However, they couldn't escape from the empire's surveillance and an invasion is once again occurring.

Free them from the clutches of the empire.

Then you will be their sun.

Quest Clear Conditions: Repel the invaders.

Quest Reward: Your affinity with the Ul Clan will reach the maximum.

Quest Failure: The Ul Clan will perish.

Four days ago.

Prior to leaving Reidan, Grid had studied the empire and found that it carried out a policy of genocide. Minorities who didn't serve the emperor were slaughtered in various parts of the empire.



Indeed, it was a brutal oppression. If they wanted to try and oppose it?

It was futile. Grid hadn't accepted the Ul Clan's quest for a noble reason. He just coveted the reward.

'If they don't have a place to go to and their affinity is at the maximum...'

Couldn't he accept them as his people? The Ul Clan's quest was a chance to increase the population of Reidan. It would be ideal if he could bring all the persecuted minorities in the empire to Reidan. Grid was starting to think and act in the manner of a lord. Lauel would be impressed if he knew.

"You have two choices."

Grid's eyes shone with killing intent. He was inwardly furious after witnessing the brutality of the White Wolf Guild. Grid had high respect for NPCs due to the influence of Khan and Irene.

"You can die easily, or you can get beaten up first before you die. Choose."

"Crazy bastard!"

The White Wolf members were furious. What was this damn arrogant guy saying?

“Veradin! How long are you going to let that brat’s mouth run wild? We should attack him right now! Anyway, he’s alone!”

Elvo was particularly furious. He was surprise attacked by the clone and suffered damage. Veradin checked Elvo’s health gauge.

‘Well, it isn’t bad.’

Elvo was a berserker, so his defense was very low. However, he only lost one-fifth of his health after the surprise attack.

‘The clone isn’t very strong.’

The unknown man’s clone was much weaker than he was. This evidence clearly showed that it wasn’t very strong. ‘Maybe he can produce a lot of clones. But it’s easy to deal with clones at this level.’

Veradin made a judgment call and ordered the guild members.

“We won’t be able to avoid this fight. Do it.”

“Okay!”

Elvo was in the lead. At level 179, he was the lowest among the White Wolf members, but he liked being in the vanguard. He was very courageous and not afraid of others.

“I’ll kill you!”

Elvo was full of killing intent. He wanted to deal a nasty blow to the clone.

“Dash!”

Teong!

A distance of 3m was narrowed in an instant. Elvo smiled with satisfaction at his own dashing ability. Then he used the ‘Madness Vortex’ skill. This was the manifestation of five powerful blows that could even cause great damage to an ogre.

However, it met the wrong opponent.

[The target has resisted the damage.]

“Eh?”

It wasn’t defense but resistance. The skill apparently hit. Then what the hell was the resistance to damage? Grid stared at the stunned Elvo.

“You want me to die?”

“Heok?”

The prideful Elvo was now like a terrified rodent. It was because of the dignity stat, which had a low chance of making the enemy yield. Grid had over 1,500 dignity, so it was hard for low or medium ranked users to endure his greatness.

[You have become lost in front of an immeasurable existence. Your head involuntarily bows. Your body is shaky and head begins to move.]

‘W-What...!’

He was stunned just because he met the person’s gaze? Was this guy a medusa boss? Elvo couldn’t believe the situation right now. It was a dream. The other guild members didn’t know the situation and were rushing around, like moths to a flame.

“Magic Transmission!”

“Atra’s Poison!”

“Fire Spear!”

“Lower Cut!”

“This is a kick! Abyooo~!”

All types of CC, physical attacks and magic attacks were used. 20 enemies used skills at the same time, so Grid seemed to be in danger. The silent clone came out. It was the doppelganger Randy.

“Revolve.”

Kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa!

The counterattack skill was activated at the perfect timing. The White Wolf members were attacked by their own skills.

“Kuaaaak!”

“What is this absurd thing?”

The White Wolf Guild members were agitated. What was with this clone’s skill? Furthermore, it was a counterattack skill that even a person found difficult to use? The one who was most surprised was Veradin.

‘He didn’t show his skills in the first surprise attack!’

He realized it right away. Randy had 30% of Grid’s current combat power. To be honest, he was equivalent to level 200. If he wanted, he couldn’t cut the guild member in half with the first attack.

But Randy refrained. He deliberately pretended to be weak to

make the enemies less vigilant. This was Randy's instinctive judgment, not Grid's orders. He lost his memories of the past, but the battle experience accumulated for more than 100 years was firmly engraved in him.

Grid admired Randy's strategy.

“Look at those facial expressions. I was surprised as well. Isn't my friend really great?”

‘Friend?’

Wasn't it a clone? Then what was it? The White Wolf members fell into the black hole of confusion.

Puok!

Then the jade greatsword penetrated Elvo's chest.

[You have been hit by a lethal blow!]

[The enemy has attacked five times using an unknown ability.]

[You have suffered 103,900 damage.]

‘Over 100,000? Not 10,000, but 100,000? I don't even have 20,000 health!’

Elvo's vision turned grey.

'Is this a dream?'

[Your party member Elvo has died.]

Silence filled the area. A monster beyond imagination had appeared in front of the White Wolf members.

But Veradin kept calm. He was part of the 10 Rookies along with Lauel and Ibellin, and he was now level 281. He didn't feel frustrated when meeting a strong opponent. Moreover, he had a hidden card. There was a sniper who remained in the mountain.

—Now.

Veradin whispered and gave the signal. There was a small flash from the low mountain 300m in the rear, then an arrow came flying.

Peeeeeeong!

Kiki was also part of the 10 Rookies. The White Wolf Guild's number two person. Her sniper skill was comparable to Jishuka, the expert archer. She precisely fired an arrow at Grid's head. Veradin had no doubt that the person would experience great damage or confusion, and took out his staff. He was trying to raise

the corpses of the Ul and Elvo with magic when he suddenly froze.

“T-This...?”

Cries of shock burst out everywhere. They saw it. The famous golden blades.

“I am surprised.”

The man’s voice was heard from behind the golden blades that protected their master from the arrow. The voice was filled with a powerful anger that could stop the heart of the person who heard it.

Sururuk.

Was it due to the shock wave caused by the arrow and blades colliding? The hat the man was wearing fell off. The ID that most people in the world knew was exposed.

“Grid...!”

The first legendary class, three gold medal holder in the National Competition, the hero of the golem invasion, the first user to become a duke, GOD, etc. He had countless nicknames attached to him.

Then he pulled out the blue greatsword that he used to defeat



Hurent in five seconds. The people present felt frightened at Grid holding two huge swords in each of his hands.

“Don’t use surprise attacks!”

‘You did it first!’

The White Wolf members wanted to cry out. But they couldn’t grumble. Grid’s eyes fixed to the top of the mountain 300m away.

“You first of all. Transcended Link.”

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

Blue-white and jade energy blades emerged at the same time. It was the moment when one small mountain permanently vanished from the map of the Saharan Empire.

[Your party member Kiki has died.]

“...I would’ve rather met Faker.”

The White Wolf members complained. Veradin couldn’t keep his composure anymore. This was the worst catastrophe since the guild’s launch. The result was a complete annihilation.

\*\*\*

“Huh? The size of the desert is less than it was a year ago?”

A black-haired man dressed in white stepped foot in the western part of the Eternal Kingdom.

# Chapter 239

---

‘An A-grade quest was surprisingly tough.’

Grid’s power was unique: ever since he had obtained it, he had almost easily solved all A-grade quests. But this time was different. He lost more than one-sixth of his stamina and health at the cost of hunting 25 enemies.

“It was an unexpected melee.”

Anybody who heard that statement would cry out, as there was no such thing. It was more accurate to say that it was a slaughter of 25 people without a conscience. However, Grid thought differently. This was shocking for him, the one who had overwhelmed the top rankers in the National Competition!

‘The average level of the enemy was only around 200. Yet I couldn’t succeed in an instant...’ This was because Veradin was a necromancer. ‘That bastard was too strong.’

A necromancer was a nuisance as an opponent. They didn’t distinguish between friend or foe, as corpses were unconditionally revived and used as soldiers. It was a class that consumed the enemy’s resources (health, mana, stamina etc.) because it was so easy to make.

In the case of Veradin, his level was high and knew how to fight. The undead soldiers were skilled in offense and defense, so they harassed him. Veradin’s combat ability was no less than that of the

Overgeared members.

‘It would be nice to create an item that could easily kill the undead.’

Indeed, experience was very important. Grid gained insight from his new combat experience. He was able to make more advanced plans by adding items to fight the undead in the future. Grid was quickly evolving in real time.

He touched the Guardian’s Bracelet with a gentle expression.

‘The more I use this, the more I like it.’

Originally, Grid’s indomitable stat was 900. Now, however, it was over 1,000 after wearing the Guardian accessories set. As a result, the effect of the indomitable stat was often triggered. He completely resisted the attacks of lower-levelled enemies.

It was the result of his abnormally high defense and indomitable stat.

‘Randy was more than I expected.’

Grid had no doubts about Randy’s fighting skills. Randy copied 30% Grid’s stats and items, so he was around a level 180 swordsman. However, the legendary-rated Pagma’s Swordsmanship gave Randy wings.

Randy copied Pinnacle and Link, as well as the highly usable Revolve. He was able to beat quite a few level 200 users, and was a really good colleague. Grid praised him as Randy returned to the shape of a little girl.

“You fought well.”

Randy’s buggy eyes shone like stars.

“Praise! Happy!”

It was a lovely smiling face with a flush.

‘Sehee was once cute like this.’

Grid patted her head and said,

“I also want to fight with Master! Nyang! Why don’t you let me fight? Nyang! Why is the best demonic beast being treated like this? Kyang!”

Noe had been hunting alone around Reidan and was now level 143. He was hoping to grow with his master while traveling together this time, but Master was too busy with the doppelganger and not looking at Noe. He didn’t like it.

Grid soothed the jealous Noe, “You are my precious secret

weapon. I don't need to borrow the strength of my great secret weapon for something minor like this."

"Ohh...! Ohhhh!"

The words 'secret weapon', 'precious' and 'great' were attached to him, so Noe really liked it. He danced with his short limbs. It was cute and ridiculous since Noe's chubby body was shaking. Grid observed Noe's appearance. The horns that rose from the forehead were slightly bigger and the fangs were sharper.

'He is becoming increasingly like a demonic beast.' Grid's demonic power rose by one every time he PKed. 'Surely I won't become a demon if my demonic power stat increases?'

The higher the demonic power, the more likely he was to go to hell. However, at present, there was no way of going in and out of hell so he couldn't help imagining bad things.

Then the Ul Clan survivors came running.

"Hero!"

The village mayor, Buda greeted him on behalf of everyone.

"If you didn't help us, our people would've been lost in the backdrops of history! I don't know how to express our gratitude!"

[The quest 'Ul Clan's Rescue' has been complete.]

[Affinity with the Ul Clan has risen to the maximum. The Ul Clan will jump over a cliff for you.]

The Ul Clan bowed to Grid. Grid took out the Great Lord's Sword and looked at their abilities.

'Their intelligence stat is very high?'

General NPCs had an intelligence around 100. But the average of the Ul Clan was 300. In particular, a girl called Hwarin stood out.

Name: Hwarin.

Age: 11 Gender: Female

Occupation: Refugee

Title: Last of the Ul Clan's Royal Family.

Level: 7

Strength: 3/70 Stamina: 12/249

Agility: 14/398 Intelligence: 120/1,890

Charm: 155/1,503 Dignity: 30/550

Skills: Haven't learnt any yet.

A survivor of the Ul Kingdom that the Saharan Empire destroyed. Her identity might be hidden but she actually has the noble lineage of the Ul Clan.

'This is good.'

The Ul Clan was an excellent race. They would be useful in many ways. Among them, it was possible to train some as magicians. Grid asked them, "The empire isn't a place where you can live. Would you consider moving to the Eternal Kingdom?"

"The Eternal Kingdom...?" The Eternal Kingdom was one of the great powers among the 17 nations of the continent. But these kingdoms weren't in the same position as the empire. "Will the Eternal Kingdom accept us, who are hunted by the empire? It might provide grounds for the empire to...?"

"If you move in secret then the empire won't notice."

"But the royal family won't be happy."

"Don't worry, go to Reidan. Even the royal family can't intervene in the administration of a duchy."



“Who are you?”

“I am the master of Reidan. I promise the people there will treat you without discrimination.”

“Heok...! That means you are a duke!”

The Ul Clan were perplexed. Why was the duke of another kingdom in the empire? They couldn't understand it with their common sense.

Grid whispered to Lael.

–I need someone who can lead 930 people from Earl Zebra's territory in the empire to Reidan.

–Yes?

Grid explained the situation to the confused Lael. The joyful Lael then recommended Faker. Grid responded with surprise.

–Faker? Is it okay?

Faker always moved in the darkness. He didn't show himself in public, and wasn't a suitable figure to lead people. But Lael gave a different opinion.

–Faker’s trap installation ability and situational judgment abilities are unique. If there are pursuers, he can install traps as quickly as possible as well as secretly lead the Ul Clan.

–I know his abilities but... Isn’t there someone better than Faker?

–There is a lot of work piled up in Reidan. It is impossible to send more than two people, so please trust Faker.

It was decided. Then Grid used a skill.

“Summon Knight.”

[Summon a knight. Currently you have Huroi, Lauel, Jude, Jishuka, Euphemina, Faker, Pon and Regas. Which knight would you like to summon?]

“Faker.”

[The target has accepted the summons.]

Sururuk.

A man wrapped in a black cloak rose from Grid’s shadow. He spoke to Grid with a nonchalant expression.

“You worked hard.”

“Yes.”

Suuk.

Faker observed the Ul Clan with emotional eyes. The Ul Clan felt like crying as they saw him.

‘Those eyes feel like they are penetrating me to the bone.’

‘I-I’m scared.’

The Ul Clan felt fear. They were affected by Faker’s killing intent stat. That’s why Faker normally acted in secret. He had to consume his mental power to hide this killing intent. For an assassin, the killing intent stat was like a type of penalty.

“Go.”

Faker didn’t delay. He instructed the frightened Ul Clan to grab their luggage and immediately left the village.

After a few days with Faker, the Ul Clan felt like they were sitting on a thorny cushion. Faker didn’t say a single word, but they became increasingly frightened of him. They felt like they would die if they touched him, and couldn’t even breathe.

On the other hand, Grid changed his schedule and was busy hunting. It was an inevitable choice because his infamy went up due to PKing. It was impossible to enter a village or city if his infamy figure was high. It might be okay to move freely in the Eternal Kingdom, regardless of his infamy figure, but this was the empire. It was necessary to lower his infamy by hunting monsters.

However, the monsters in Zebra were only level 180~220. They gave less experience and it wasn't easy to decrease his infamy. Grid was nervous because he was delaying more than he wanted, but he still remained calm. He bought time by practicing dual swordsmanship and raising the experience of Randy and Noe.

Then a homing pigeon arrived.

It was the letter from Irene that regularly arrived once a week. Normally the letters expressed a desire to see him, but today's one was special.

“This letter?”

Grid was astonished.

Irene was always stating that she wanted to get pregnant, but he didn't think it was really capable to get pregnant from a relationship between a user and NPC.

Around a month ago, my stomach has started hurting. I didn't think much of it, but then I started experiencing pregnancy

symptoms. Somehow, I feel like my belly has... Happy tears are flowing. I would like to have a son that resembles Dear Husband.

“Heok...”

A child?

Grid was more baffled than glad. It was confusing because it was a totally unexpected and unfamiliar experience. Then a notification window popped up.

[Do you want to honor the news of your wife’s pregnancy?]

[The birth of a new life should be congratulated, but those with no sense of responsibility should keep in mind that they don’t deserve to be a parent. Think carefully.]

# Chapter 240

---

Satisfy had some areas that were completely different from reality. If a user had a child in Satisfy, there could be various problems.

There were too many risk factors, such as neglecting reality by being too immersed in the child in the game or ignoring the child in the game because they were too busy playing. Only those who had established mature values were eligible to enjoy Satisfy's parenting system.

‘Can I really do well?’

The Grid of the past would've said okay without thinking about it. But the current Grid realized the seriousness of the situation. He thought carefully about it.

‘I...’

He was still too immature to be a parent. But he wanted Irene to be happy. She was one of the most precious people to him, despite being a person in virtual reality. Thanks to her, he learned how to love. Grid wanted to make her dream come true. He didn't want her to be disappointed.

‘I also want the result of the love that I share with Irene.’

After a few hours of deliberation, Grid made a decision.

“I am grateful for the news of the pregnancy.”

The notification windows immediately blinked and responded.

[Congratulations on your wife’s pregnancy!]

[The preferences and abilities of the child will be affected from prenatal development.]

[What type of child do you want? The child you want and the child your wife wants will affect prenatal development. Work hard to communicate with your wife.]

“I wish my child...”

It wasn’t that hard to imagine.

‘Someone different from me.’

He didn’t want them to be petty or stupid. Grid had no talent and was narrow-minded, so he hoped that his own child wouldn’t experience such an unfortunate life.

‘I want someone who resembles my wife, a child who is bright, generous, and pretty. First of all, I wish for a clever child to be born. Congratulations on your pregnancy. And thank you.’

Grid wrote it in the letter to Irene. It was difficult to find traces of his childhood in his careful expression. Grid would turn 28 years old in five months in real time. He was becoming a true adult with this pregnancy.

“Taemyeong means ‘fortune’ in the sense of a jackpot...”

There was no question that he still had no naming sense. Even so, it was fortunate that he only thought about Taemyeong.

\*\*\*

A regular board meeting held at the head office of the S.A. Group.

The main agenda of the meeting was to set the budget for the Second National Competition to be held in Paris next year. At the end of the meeting, one member was brought up. Grid.

“It’s actually Grid again!”

“Isn’t the parenting system only activated for mature players?”

The executives heard the report from the operations team leader and expressed their anxiety. Recently, Grid was conducting himself as a legendary class, but the prejudice didn’t easily disappear.



The executives had been watching Grid from the beginning and still saw him as that. Now he would have a child with an NPC? Just imagining it was terrible. They were worried about the worst situation.

“He will raise a child? This is ridiculous!”

Games had implemented a parenting system many times in the past. There was even a separate child raising simulation game. A typical example was Princess Mama. Such games didn't make users feel any responsibility. Users could delete their child or neglect them. Such an act didn't cause any moral issues either. The characters in a typical game were nothing more than 2D characters that acted and talked according to a given scenario.

Then what about the characters in Satisfy? The supercomputer Morpheus gave all Satisfy NPCs the perfect artificial intelligence. As a result, NPCs had thoughts and emotions. They were no different from humans.

It was only a matter of time until an immature user experienced the parenting system. If the users neglected or abused their children in the game, the creators couldn't rule out the possibility of social problems.

The parenting system was a double-edged sword. Satisfy's game would be better if used well, but public opinion would take a hit if it was exploited.

The development team arranged the parenting system so that

only a very small number of users could experience it. It was based on the fact that the married couple's liking was at the maximum, and the parenting system was designed to be activated only for users who had maximum respect for NPCs.

But Grid? The person who sent malicious emails to the group when he couldn't make legendary items was selected for the parenting system! The executives were convinced that there was clearly an error. They couldn't tolerate it.

A surprising figure emerged to defend Grid. It was Director Yoon Sangmin. In the past, he had a tendency to hate Grid more than anyone else.

“Don't you know about the recent Grid? He has grown. He's different from the past. So don't worry.”

“We all know that his abilities have grown. Didn't he win three gold medals and save the kingdom from the golem army? What we are pointing out is a personality matter.”

“He has grown up personally.”

It was Director Yoon Sangmin.

The executives frowned.

“How do you know that?”

“You will quickly notice if you show a little interest and watch him.” Grid’s inner growth was something that could be seen just from his actions. “In the first place, the system chooses. This means that Grid is qualified, so there is no room to negotiate.”

“Cough...”

The executives stared dumbly. Director Yoon Sangmin, who calmed the turmoil, was very interested in Grid.

‘A human who learns and develops through the game.’

A typical human became an adult by learning and experiencing society. Then they had a tendency to spill out all their stress in games. There were many reasons why good humans in society would become notorious villains in games.

But Grid was a special case. He lacked social skills, but was growing through the game. He was a good example of a Satisfy user and could be used as a means of publicity. Of course, that was under the assumption that Grid accepted.

\*\*\*

“Shit!”

The atmosphere of the White Wolf guild wasn’t great. They

failed their quest because of an unexpected person, and their pride was hurt because one person wiped out the whole guild. Veradin encouraged the resentful and frustrated guild members.

“Don’t mind it. Grid is the best. It isn’t a shame to be defeated by him.”

That’s right. As the first ranked Kraugel maintained an air of mystery around him, Grid had to be rated as the strongest for the moment. He was underestimated by the public because of his lacking control, but that wasn’t necessarily true. No, it was great.

As Veradin said, it wasn’t shameful for their small guild to be defeated by Grid, who was at the top. This was the obvious result.

However, the guild members were worried about Veradin. A month ago, Veradin had cleared a S+ grade quest and acquired the bones of the high ranking demonkin, Dantalian. In the battle against Grid, he had summoned the undead Dantalian using the bones.

It was his trump card. Even Grid showed worry.

Veradin was strong as long as he had Dantalian. It was amazing that he managed to annoy Grid for a while, despite not reaching level 300 yet. Veradin clearly demonstrated his abilities that were above his ranking.

The problem was that the guild members were weak. They

weren't a help to Veradin at all. They were sorry to see Veradin dragged down because of useless subordinates. They couldn't lift their heads.

In this sober atmosphere, Kiki threw out a question.

“But Veradin, why didn't you report Grid to Earl Zebra?”

Grid was a duke of the Eternal Kingdom. It was a big problem if he was in the territory of the empire. If this was reported to the upper ranks, Grid would surely experience large problems. Veradin held a key for revenge, so Kiki wondered why he didn't use it.

“It isn't time yet.”

Veradin answered vaguely and Kiki realized that he was thinking about a bigger picture.

\*\*\*

The last time that Kraugel visited the western part of the Eternal Kingdom was eight months ago.

At that time, the west was completely a desert and it was infested with monsters. If he took a step, he would be confronted with monsters. If he moved a little bit, he would be completely isolated.

But now the situation had changed. The scale of the desert was

reduced and there were less monsters than before. It had turned into more ideal hunting grounds. Kraugel speculated that Grid had destroyed several giant worm nests after becoming lord of Reidan.

Kraugel had to admire it.

‘Grid is greater than the rumors say. After absorbing the Tzedakah Guild, he’s quickly growing his power.’

Kraugel also knew about Grid. He was a celebrity that most people in the world knew. However, he hadn’t paid Grid any special attention. Kraugel devoted himself entirely to adventuring and hunting, while Grid participated in external events and was judged to be a completely different style of user.

He didn’t care because he didn’t think he would become involved with Grid in Satisfy.

‘My inventory weight is at its limit. Is Reidan the only well-equipped city or village near here?’

In the last 10 days, Kraugel had killed the western monsters while heading for Reidan. It wasn’t to meet Grid, but to dispose of his loot.

“It’s an agricultural city.” Kraugel arrived at REidan and admired the cast fields of wheat stretching out. He never imagined that a city in the middle of the desert would’ve developed agriculture. ‘He was successful in clearing the desert and has an excellent

ability in managing affairs.'

Grid showed great strength in the National Competition and in the golem army, but he was skilled in other areas as well. He was a legendary blacksmith, had top rankers as subordinates and even had great skills as a lord? He was truly a near-perfect figure.

'Zibal isn't equipped with things like this. The first user to become king might be Grid, not Zibal.'

Did Kraugel have any regrets? No. Kraugel was the type of person who enjoyed playing the game alone. He perceived that his areas of activities were completely different from Grid's. Therefore, he didn't have a sense of crisis or competitiveness towards Grid.

Step, step.

Kraugel was crossing the fields to enter Reidan. At that time, an NPC holding a rake in one hand and a hoe in the other appeared and asked him.

"Who are you?"

"...?"

# Chapter 241

---

Kraugel was just walking along. He couldn't think of anything in his behavior that would've caused wariness. So why was this person blocking the road? The farmer's attitude didn't make sense.

Kraugel felt doubts before making a reasonable guess.

'It's rare for people to come here, so they are unfamiliar with it.'

Reidan was isolated. The size of the desert might've been reduced by Grid and the Overgeared members' activities, but accessibility was still low. It was almost impossible to make it past the desert to Reidan until it was a party of rankers.

'There aren't any outsiders here so... It's natural for the residents to be wary of outsiders.'

Kraugel guessed the reason for the farmer's attitude and explained.

"I am an ordinary adventurer. I'm not a suspicious person, so you don't have to worry."

Kraugel's reputation across the continent exceeded 40,000. Since Satisfy opened, he had always maintained his first place ranking and cleared dungeons and quests faster than others, gaining reputation from this. At the present time, Kraugel was the only person who could use the Reputation Store.



‘My high reputation will give confidence to that NPC.’

Kraugel thought the farmer would release his vigilance and step back. But what was this? The farmer showed an unexpected reaction.

“Based on your stride, you’re not an ordinary adventurer.”

“...!”

There was no change in Kraugel’s expression. He smiled as always. But his mind was quite shaken.

‘My stride is unusual? Is he referring to White Light Steps?’

White Light Steps was a skill Kraugel acquired after becoming the White Swordsman. Basically, it increased his movement speed and ability to adapt to terrain. It could also be used for dashing or evasion. The white light normally couldn’t be seen unless under intense sunlight or clear moonlight.

‘He isn’t an ordinary farmer.’

The NPC in front of him, Piaro, looked like a farmer in every way. He wore a straw hat to protect him from the sun, dirty work clothes, and held a hand plow and hoe in his hands. It was difficult to recognize him as anything other than a farmer.

But you shouldn't judge people by appearances. Kraugel's sharp eyes examined Piaro.

"Who are you really? You aren't a normal farmer, are you?"

Piaro wanted to answer Kraugel honestly.

'I have always dreamed of a confrontation with a strong person like you, who is also wishing to achieve the status of sword saint. Compete with me.' This was what he wanted to say.

"I..."

"Piaro! It's time to take a break! You worked hard in today's farming, so eat a lot!"

One farmer couldn't grasp the atmosphere and came shouting. It was really exquisite timing. Thanks to that, Piaro was embarrassed.

"You go eat by yourself." Piaro said with a frown, before trying to introduce himself again. "I..."

"Piaro! Administrator Rabbit asked if you have found another source of water yet?"

A soldier shouted at him.

‘No, what was this?’

Why was he pestered every time he was trying to introduce himself? Piaro felt a little annoyed at being disturbed. But as a potential sword saint, it was funny that he would get irritated over something like this. He endured patiently.

“It isn’t easy to found a source of water. Tell him that it will take more time.”

“Yes!”

“I...”

The soldier left and Piaro tried to introduce himself again. However, Kraugel raised a hand and stopped him.

“I understand even if you don’t say it. Aren’t you a geomancer?”

The main task of a geomancer was to find things based on topography. Kraugel’s sharp eyes were convinced.

“Don’t worry. I have trained a lot of skills, but I have no intention of harming Reidan. I just want to stop by the general store. Then I’m going now.”

“ ... ”

Piario completely missed the opportunity to introduce himself. Piario was embarrassed by Kraugel's misunderstanding. But he quickly regained his composure. So what is he was misunderstood as a farmer or geomancer? It was enough if he could compete with someone strong.

“You can't enter Reidan unless you knock me down first.”

Piario's hoe moved in a line. It was a surprise attack, but Kraugel had a passive skill called Keen Senses. In response to Keen Senses, he used White Light Steps and avoided the attack. But the hoe was like a living snake. It changed the orbit and once again aimed at the target that it missed.

Kraugel's eyes sunk coldly. He had natural talent and trained hard, so he didn't easily allow attacks. There was a flash of something silver. It was the 'White Fang' sword that he acquired from one of the great demons, Drasion, who was defeated by Sword Saint Muller.

Chengkang!

The hoe and White Fang competed in strength. Piario was excited when he saw that Kraugel wasn't pushed by his strength.

“Indeed...! You truly aren't ordinary!”

“You will regret it.”

Kraugel's voice was cold. He was basically a good person, but he showed no mercy to his enemies. He couldn't turn a blind eye to Piaro's actions.

Kakakang!

White Fang slid down the hoe and stabbed at Piaro's thigh. There was enough momentum to cut off one leg entirely. Piaro defended himself with the hand plow.

Jeeeong!

The repulsive force caused Kraugel's body to rise high in the air. On the other hand, Piaro's feet were deeply embedded in the ground. Piaro shouted towards Kraugel, who had an incredibly angry expression on his face for someone who had just been a gentle youth.

"I am someone seeking the status of sword saint! I formally apply for a duel!"

"Sword saint...?"

Among the titles Kraugel had earned, there was the 'Sword Saint Candidate.' He naturally acquired the title while developing his swordsmanship through hunting and raids. After being nominated as a sword saint candidate, Kraugel was spurred to level up even more. He wanted to obtain a legendary class by becoming a sword

saint.

His goal was to be the strongest, so he needed to have a legendary class. In the meantime, he had many opportunities to obtain a lot of hidden classes. But he was still in the third stage of the sword saint candidate. At least five stages were required to become a sword saint, but it wasn't easy.

‘A farmer is seeking this realm... No, he's a geomancer.’

Kraugel's pride was upset. The person who talked about becoming a sword saint was holding a hoe and hand plow instead of a sword! Before talking about becoming a sword saint, he should start with a sword!

“You haven't grasped the subject.”

Kraugel's sentences became shorter. It was due to his rage.

Taack!

Kraugel used a different application of White Light Steps and rushed through the air like a meteor. The power caused the wheat in the area to flatten and the ground to sink. It was the manifestation of ‘Meteor Sword.’

‘Wonderful!’

Piaro's eyes widened. It wasn't an easy technique unless the body's physical abilities were raised to the maximum. It was here that Piaro could demonstrate his stats. He crossed the hoe and hand plow, forming a perfect defense posture that the Meteor Sword struck.

Peeeeeeong!

Kraugel's white clothing fluttered like a flag swept by a storm. Kraugel's expression twisted while a smile appeared on Piaro's face.

'My sword was blocked by farming equipment?'

'My whole body is grinning! This is such an exhilarating feeling!'

Chaaeng! Chaeeeeeng!

Syuok!

The battle between the two continued, with Piaro disappearing from in front of Kraugel's eyes. Then he immediately appeared in the rear and struck.

'Drasion's speed...!'

Drasion might've been defeated, but he didn't completely lose his dignity as one of the 33 great demons. He was the strongest among

all the bosses that Kraugel had raided. The highest ranking demonkin couldn't compare.

But a geomancer had a skill similar to Drasion. No, it was more than that. This wasn't a geomancer. He was a hermit. It would be nice if he helped Kraugel, but he actually started a fight.

Kaang!

“React to this!”

Piario was pleased as Kraugel blocked his attack like he had eyes in the back of his head. Piario was frantic with delight. He wanted to sing and dance.

‘My eyes were correct!’

It was like any other day. He opened his eyes at dawn, trained with the sword before going out to the fields to do farming work. He enjoyed the pleasure of sweating. Then Kraugel appeared. Piario was aware of it the moment he saw the white-clothed man walking. This person was stronger than anybody he had seen so far!

“Hahahahat!”

He had just been a supporter in Grid's fight with the doppelganger. This duel would surely improve him. Piario was filled with joy and plunged towards Kraugel. The hoe flew towards



Kraugel's chest, who avoided it.

'I am quickly adapting.'

There was a clear pattern to Piaro's techniques. Based on a specific swordsmanship style, the hoe and hand plow were wielded like a longsword and dagger. Piaro stabbed rapidly and efficiently.

It was an easy style for Kraugel to read.

Chaaeng!

"Hah..."

Piario let out a sound of admiration. It was amazing to see Kraugel attacking and defending with the sword in one motion. Kraugel provoked Piario, who had light injuries.

"You are strong, but aren't you too lacking to become a sword saint?"

There were many titles that top rankers had attached to Kraugel. God of Control, Lord of the Counter, etc. He had a reason for being so confident. Kraugel's quick brain and accurate predictions were able to quickly realize the enemy's attack patterns, while his exquisite reflexes and precise moves allowed him to counterattack. The more obvious the form, the easier he countered.

“I also know my shortcomings. That’s why I applied for a duel.” Up to now, Piaro had been using the imperial swordsmanship. It was the same as when he briefly fought Grid at Loran Falls. “But now it will be different.”

Ching!

Piario dumped the hoe and hand plow. Then he grabbed the sword that had been dropped in a corner of the field and took the posture of the Supreme Swordsmanship.

“Open your eyes!”

Swaeek!

It was extreme speed. The stab was like a fired bullet. Kraugel had a hole drilled in him and blood poured out. But he didn’t allow it to be a one-sided attack. White Fang had curved outwards and slightly neutralized the stab. He accurately captured the narrow range that was the disadvantage of a stab.

“Then what about this? Supreme Swordsmanship 1st style.”

There was a huge momentum that was like a mountain. Kraugel determined that he couldn’t defend against this and attempted to use White Light Steps, but his movements were restrained by an intangible force. Therefore, Kraugel responded with a skill.

“Storm Sword!”

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

The storm of white blades crashed into Piaro's slash. A powerful explosion shook the earth.

# Chapter 242

---

“He’s particularly intense today.”

“That means his opponent is strong. It is the first time I’ve seen anyone who can push Piaro like this.”

“But who is that person? This is the first time I’ve seen him.”

“I think he’s Duke Grid’s new subordinate?”

The wheat field was becoming more destroyed due to Piaro and the black-haired swordsman’s duel. It was already a 50m radius of destruction. It had returned to the time when it was still a wasteland.

But there was no sense of confusion or frustration in the expressions of the farmers watching the confrontation. They were used to this. Piaro often sparred with the Overgeared members, so it wasn’t just once or twice that the fields turned into a mess. Rabbit admonished him to shift places when fighting, but Piaro stood firm.

If he destroyed the field, then he would have more work to do. It was a bizarre logic, but the fields had officially been turned into a sparring ground. Piaro was a real labor addict.

“Bland, isn’t that Piaro’s share?”

There was also a noble among the farmers. Bland was caught eating Piaro's snack and cried out.

"Why is this Piaro's share? Piaro said he wouldn't eat!"

"I don't know..."

"Uhuh! Piaro said it! Then the person who eats it first is the owner!"

"..."

Bland had completely adapted to the farmer's life. It was hard to believe that he was a noble. He was covered in dirt and chewing on a potato. The farmers knew the circumstances of being taken hostage and felt compassion for him.

However, Bland was happy. He found these days 100 times more free and enjoyable than the time when he needed to be conscious of other people.

Caw~!

A roc flew in the sky. It had a large body and liked eating wheat. A couple of days ago, the monster had tried to loot the wheat field. But before it could reach the wheat field, it was hit in the sky. It was magic that Bland had strengthened through continuous duels with Piaro. Blood spilled out and the body of the monster fell to one side of Reidan's wheat field.

This place was peaceful today. There were few places safer on the continent than this.

\*\*\*

The power of Advanced Sword Mastery Level 7, his passive skill 'Sword Reinforcement' and the effect of various titles, including Sword Saint Candidate, overlapped with the power of Storm Sword and allowed him to cope with the Supreme Swordsmanship.

Piario laughed as the Storm Sword neutralized his strike.

'Huhu, it was offset.'

There were few people who survived against Supreme Swordsmanship 1st style. But Kraugel defended against it. Piario thought that Kraugel would at least get a serious injury.

'My condition isn't very good right now.'

As a great swordsman, he didn't cling to weapons or armor. He didn't feel the need to rely on tools. But at this moment, he felt regret about his tools. If he had been armed with a better sword, would the Supreme Swordsmanship 1st style be able to be blocked?

Shake shake.

Piaro shook off his thoughts.

‘Muller wouldn’t blame his tools.’

It was laughable that a person aiming to be a sword saint would blame his tools. The purpose of this duel wasn’t a one-sided victory. It was something that would assist his growth. He should be happy if his opponent held on for a long time.

‘This technique is relentless.’

The remnants of the Storm Sword persistently clung to Piaro. Piaro had to waste time to defeat these persistent fragments and Kraugel didn’t miss this gap. He used Mole Ascension.

Pahat!

White Fang moved through the earth. Piaro also didn’t stay still. He responded with Supreme Swordsmanship, 5th style.

Pachichik!

Colorless energy unfolded around him like a spider web. It destroyed the remnants of the Storm Sword, while at the same time, neutralizing Mole Ascension and covering Kraugel.

‘Nine.’

Kraugel grasped the number of invisible energy. It was because of the power of Keen Senses.

‘I can’t block all of them.’

Kraugel’s brain rotation speed was unmatched. He determined his actions quickly and protected his vital spots.

[You have suffered 8,830 damage.]

[You have suffered 9,200 damage.]

[You have suffered 9,050 damage.]

‘The damage is more than expected.’

The legendary armor and artifacts that he gathered while raiding a lot of boss monsters weren’t much help. Piaro had a power that made defense useless. Kraugel endured the pain and didn’t delay his next attack. It was his turn to take off some flesh and bones.

“Moonrise Sword.”

It was a skill that exerted its full power under the light of the full moon. But he was currently in a predicament and couldn’t afford to not use it. The moon moved behind the sun.



Susuk. Sususuk.

Kraugel accelerated and activated the stealth function in the blazing sunlight. It was the effect of the white light, which utilized the refraction of light. Kraugel had amazing control skills, so this technique was perfect in his hands.

‘Hah.’

Piario had to concentrate in order to not miss the disappearing Kraugel. However, Kraugel wasn’t emitting any energy. As soon as he disappeared from view, Piario couldn’t detect him. It was the moment when the man who reached the peak of two billion users met the strongest swordsman on the continent.

Piario was tense. This was the first time he sweated in a long time. White Fang penetrated through his qi defense.

[You have dealt 12,400 damage to the target.]

The attack hit, but Kraugel’s expression wasn’t good.

‘I can only deal this much damage, despite attacking a person wearing no armor... I could only exert 30% of my power.’

Kraugel was regretful about his attack. But he believed that he could change the flow with this. He went on the offensive against Piario. However, the power of Supreme Swordsmanship was scary.

Piario's sword started to intentionally harmonize with Kraugel's blade. Kraugel was forced back by the sword and forced to feel like he was caught in a large spider web. He couldn't even unfold his swordsmanship.

'Calm down. It doesn't matter if his swordsmanship style is stronger than mine.'

Kwaduduk!

Kraugel was aware of it. The world was wide and there were many monsters. He might be the strongest among users, but he knew that there were stronger monsters and NPCs that could trample on him. He was prepared to taste the bitter sense of defeat at any time. But he never dreamt that one day he would be defeated by a farmer.

'No, it hasn't been decided yet.'

Kraugel tried to suppress his sense of defeat. Piario used the Supreme Swordsmanship, 3rd style. It wasn't a speed that could be followed with the eyes. A normal person wouldn't have been able to cope and would've been pierced through the heart.

But Kraugel was successful in responding. He instantly twisted White Fang.

Jjejeong!

The moment he defended against the attack, Kraugel realized that he had made a mistake.

‘Force palm?’

Peeng!

Qi was delivered through White Fang. Blood poured out from Kraugel’s mouth.

[You have suffered 18,900 damage.]

He lost half of his life. Fortunately, Piaro had discarded his sword. If it had been a sword then it wouldn’t have ended well.

‘I have half my mana left.’

He needed to arrange his power. Kraugel had many powerful sword skills such as Meteor Sword, Storm Sword and Moonrise.

Flash!

One of the ultimate skills of a White Swordsman, White Light Sword, generated a brilliant light. Piaro was disappointed as he lost sight of him. A white light covered him. Piaro felt a sense of crisis and shouted.

“Supreme Swordsmanship 4th Style!”

Something terrific happened. White Fang, which should've pierced Piaro, was sucked towards something like a magnet. The momentum of White Light Sword naturally collapsed.

Kudududuk!

Piaro's discarded sword attracted White Fang using a magnetic force.

‘I can't resist this force...!’

The magnetic force was too strong, and control was useless. There were few options left for Kraugel. He couldn't lose this weapon, so he was forced to use ‘Tearing the Sky.’ Tearing the Sky was another one of the White Swordsman's ultimate moves. It consumed a lot of mana, so it was a skill he was reluctant to use.

Kwajajak! Kwajajakajak!

White Fang was surrounded by the claws of a beast and started to resist the magnetic force, tearing it up. The skill proved why it was called Tearing the Sky.

[The durability of the White Fang has decreased by 213.]

‘This is nonsense.’

His weapon’s durability had decreased by two-thirds at once. This was dangerous. He hadn’t been able to repair it for 10 days, so the low durability caused it to shine red. It might break if he kept on fighting.

‘Even my mana is at the bottom. Meanwhile, my opponent is fine.’

Piario only lost one-fifth of his health from the attack. Moreover, he seemed to have a lot of cards left.

‘Should I just stick with it?’

If he bought the Sweet Candy from the Reputation Store, all his stats would increase by 30% for 10 minutes. It might be a 30% increase, but his overall combat strength would become approximately twice as high. If he opened up the ‘Super Sensitivity’ effect, he might be able equal Piario.

‘No, maybe I can win.’

But there was no need to take it that far.

‘There is no reason to take a loss in a fight where I have nothing to gain.’

The Sweet Candy was something he used in the Drasion raid.

Muller defeated Drasion, Hell Gao, Lepir, and Kurson, so there were 29 great demons left. He didn't want to waste the candy that he reserved for use against dragon raids or the 29 great demons.

In the end, Kraugel made a reasonable choice. He admitted defeat.

“It's my defeat.”

It was an absurd development. He never imagined that he would be defeated in a city he stopped at to dispose of his loot.

Piario shook hands with Kraugel and said. “It was a good fight.”

“Why aren't you killing me?”

Kraugel questioned, making Piario click his tongue.

“I'm not crazy. Why would I kill a person for no reason? You would've died if I wanted to kill you.”

He had the skill Fated to Perish. Kraugel couldn't believe his ears.

“You seemed to be filled with killing intent.”

Piario picked up the sword he threw to one side of the wheat field and apologized.

“I wanted it to be a sincere fight. I’m sorry.”

Kraugel asked a question. “What type of person is Duke Grid? Why is a strong person like you acting as a farmer in Reidan?”

It was okay if Piario was stronger than him. He knew that was reality. However, he couldn’t accept this strong person being someone else’s subordinate. Aside from the problem of pride, it was too dangerous.

Piario frankly explained to Kraugel, who had a serious expression. “I’m not Duke Grid’s subordinate. I am doing field work as part of training, and I receive a reward for finding water.”

“Field work as training?”

Piario made a proposal to the confused Kraugel. “Why don’t you do it with me? Together, we will be able to quickly grow stronger.”

“Together...”

What were they going to do?

‘It can’t be.’

Kraugel made an uneasy expression. Piaro pointed to Reidan's fields. "Work in the morning, spar in the afternoon."

"..."

"You will really become stronger. Do you want to try it for a month?"

'It is different.'

A notification window popped up in front of Kraugel, who was going to dismiss it as nonsense.

[A hidden quest has been created.]

'This...'

The quest was amazing. If he practiced together with Piaro, he would be closer to becoming a sword saint.

'A month isn't a short amount of time, but...'

This was an opportunity to go beyond the wall. It was a different concept from simply raising his level, so it was worth investing time into. No, he couldn't miss this. It was a once in a lifetime chance at a jackpot.



“I understand. I will stay with you for the moment.”

[The quest has been accepted.]

On this day.

A good farmer was added to Reidan. But this was a minor thing, so it wasn't reported to the higher ups. Grid was currently in the empire, while the Overgeared members weren't present due to the mine development mission or raids.

Grid and the Overgeared members didn't know that the first ranked user was growing the food they were going to eat.

# Chapter 243

---

The shortest distance from Reidan to Titan was via Viscount Welkun's territory. But Grid headed there through Earl Zebra's territory. It was a huge delay of 10 days, but he didn't mind.

'Lauel told me to stop here and get the Slaughterer's Eye Patch.'

Do so through any means, he had added. It meant the item called the Slaughterer's Eye Patch had great value.

'Slaughterer.'

According to Lauel, the Slaughterer was an inhabitant of Earl Zebra's underground area. Earl Zebra's hobby was the torture and gruesome killing of half human, half beast species.

'But it was impossible to control.'

Half human, half beast. Depending on the circumstances of this species' growth, they could be either human or beast. It was a natural result that one of them would become an evil beast from Earl Zebra's brutal actions.

'I will know what type of person he is when we meet.'

Grid focused on hunting for four days and decreased his infamy, allowing him to move on.

\*\*\*

‘This is a bad place.’

Earl Zebra’s castle.

The entrance was exceptionally dark and desolate, reminding Grid of the entrance to a dungeon. It felt like once he entered, he wouldn’t be able to get out again. It was a very bold person who would be able to step in here.

But Grid didn’t feel any fear. He went forward without any hesitation. As his self-esteem grew, he became less cowardly. He wasn’t the same as the person who used to pee at the sight of ghosts.

“Who?”

The soldiers guarding the gate looked at Grid suspiciously. The person was wearing a deep hat that covered his face. Grid took off the hat. His dignity stat was over 1,500 points and he had 25,000 continent reputation, so he was extremely influential. The soldiers seemed to see a halo around Grid. They felt a baseless confidence.

“Where do you come from?”

The soldiers misunderstood Grid as a high-ranking noble of the

empire and became polite. This was a familiar transformation. Grid didn't feel much from it and responded with a nonchalant expression.

“I came to fight against the Slaughterer.”

“Heok.” The soldiers gulped. This person would fight against the fearsome Slaughterer!

‘Furthermore, by himself?’

‘The others all tried to bring more companions...’

“Are you serious?”

The soldiers asked with disbelieving expressions and Grid nodded.

“That's right.”

\*\*\*

“Hrmm.”

Earl Zebra's body weighed 0.1 tons. It wasn't pleasant to look at his belly fat and greasy face. He stroked his droopy chin and looked at Grid before speaking.

“What are you?”

Earl Zebra was competent and ordinary. He had no apparent talents. He became an earl because he inherited it from his father, just as his father did. But his eyes were good at looking at people. He often mingled with high-ranking nobles in the social circles, so he could feel the dignity coming from the other person.

In his view, Grid had a dignity compared to the royal family.

‘However, he isn’t any royal member that I know.’

In the first place, why would royalty come to this area to try and fight a monster? The royal family were like gods in this world, so it was natural for them to pursue safety.

‘Royalty from a foreign kingdom?’

Grid replied to Earl Zebra.

“I am someone who will solve your problem. Isn’t that enough?”

“Hah.”

It was truly a cheeky tone. Earl Zebra didn’t like it, as well as the fact that Grid didn’t disclose his identity. But he didn’t feel the need to dwell on it.

‘Anyway, he will die.’

The Slaughter had evolved into an evil beast half a year ago. Like every day, Earl Zebra was torturing and killing somebody when a man watching the scene suddenly trembled and transformed. Now an uncontrollable monster lived under the castle.

It was serious. Earl Zebra was keen to defeat it. He used the most powerful knights and magicians in his family, hired top-ranking mercenaries and even recruited adventurers. But in the end, he failed.

So far, the number of people who had attempted to defeat the Slaughterer was over 800, and all 800 of them had died. That Slaughterer was strong. In addition, there was a problem with the environment. The basement was narrow and the Slaughterer was large.

The maximum number of people allowed in the basement was three. It was the crucial reason why the strongest knights and magicians in his family couldn't kill the Slaughterer. It was impossible for only three people to get rid of the Slaughterer.

But the black-haired man in front of him was alone.

“Kukukuk. Yes, yes. I understand. It doesn't matter who you are. Just please fix my problem.”

The knights had already been killed by the Slaughterer. Four days later, reinforcements from the Red Knights would arrive. Earl Zebra wasn't expecting anything from Grid, so he spoke vaguely.

Then a quest window appeared in front of Grid.

[Fight the Slaughterer]

Difficulty: S+

In the past, Earl Zebra found a half man, half beast species from the slave market and purchased it. He enjoyed playing with his toy in the basement of the castle as he tortured them.

But eternal joy doesn't exist.

Zebra became bored of torturing stupid monsters who couldn't speak the language, and became addicted to torturing the 'good humans.'

He framed innocent people, made them prisoners, dragged them under the castle, tortured them, then killed them.

The half man, half beast watched this every day and became frightened, finally showing self-protective instincts. He opened the strength of an evil beast.

The Slaughterer has been subjected to numerous tortures and has

the ability to grasp humans.

He is strong and dangerous.

He will become a great disaster someday if left unchecked now.

Quest Clear Conditions: Slaughterer's death.

Quest Clear Rewards: Black Quartz Earrings.

Quest Failure: Level -6. Reputation throughout the continent – 1,000.

‘S+.’

It meant it was extremely difficult compared to S-grade quests. He heard that the number of participants who could participate in this quest was only three.

‘Lauel said that the Slaughterer can't be defeated unless Pon, Regas and Faker formed a team.’

But.

‘I think you can clear it alone.’

Lauel was always a reasonable person. Grid could trust his words.



“Let’s go.”

“Yes.”

The soldiers guided Grid down to the basement. They walked down a narrow staircase for three minutes before arriving in front of an iron door that was firmly closed.

“O-Over here.”

The sound of the Slaughterer breathing could be heard, so a soldier opened the lock with trembling hands. Then the soldiers ran away before the iron door opened. Grid was left alone.

‘No matter how strong, you must be weaker than Hell Gao.’

He had experience fighting against the strong evil aura of Hell Gao, a great demon. He acquired two new sword techniques. His control skills were rapidly rising due to Noe and Randy. Grid was in his strongest state since starting Satisfy. The greatness he showed the world at the National Competition? The Grid at that time was nothing compared to the current Grid.

Step step.

Grid listened to the sound of his footsteps echoing in the basement. The sound of the Slaughterer also entered his ears.

Kuoooh!

The Slaughterer's appearance was horrible and sad. His skin was peeled off and rusted metal pieces were embedded deeply inside his body. There were also pieces of flesh out of place. These were signs of Earl Zebra's torture. His face couldn't be identified because he was wearing a mask, but he had an eye patch and only one eyeball.

“Poor fellow. I will kill you quickly so that you don't suffer anymore.”

Grid pulled out two greatswords. A blue greatsword in his right hand and a jade greatsword in his left.

[The +9 Failure has been equipped. Due to the effect of orichalcum, your damage has risen by 30% in this dark place.]

[The +8 Doppelganger's Greatsword has been equipped. One 50% of the weapon's attack power is applied due to the double wielding penalty.]

Kuaaaaah!

The Slaughterer roared. When it saw the weapons, it was reminded of its nightmarish days of being tortured.

[The cry of the Slaughterer has caused fear.]

[You have resisted.]

[The persistent eyes of the Slaughterer will penetrate through your weaknesses.]

[You have resisted.]

Kung kung!

The Slaughterer rushed with its massive body. Then it randomly swung its weapon.

‘How crude.’

Grid had fought Randy, who copied Pagma’s power, a total of 83 times. In the end, the Slaughterer couldn’t pose a threat compared to the Randy.

Chengkang!

The jade greatsword blocked off the path.

Puok!

The blue greatsword pierced the heart of the Slaughterer. The thing that should be noted here was that it wasn’t one strike. Grid

smashed the flesh of the Slaughterer with his weapons.

Kuaaaaang!

The Slaughterer cried like a child struggling with pain. Grid cut the lower part of the Slaughterer with the jade greatsword while he used Pinnacle with the blue greatsword. The blue greatsword fell like a thunderbolt towards the Slaughterer's chest. The rotten blood mixed with pus splattered out and covered one wall of the basement.

The Slaughterer was filled with rage. Why did he have to always suffer like this? He didn't want to be born a monster! The Slaughterer seemed to be crying out. As his weapon fell towards Grid's head...

Chaaeng!

Randy appeared in the shape of Grid and used Revolve.

"Let's finish this."

Suuuk.

Seven blades spread out in the air. The golden blades shone brilliantly in the dark basement and poured towards the Slaughterer. Noe was also active.

“I’m going to eat! Nyang!”

The huge mouth swallowed up the Slaughterer.

[Strength has increased by 1,831.]

Grid was reinforced by the stats received from Noe, and used Pagma’s Swordsmanship, Linked Kill.

The option effect of the Doppelganger’s Greatsword was applied, giving him a 20% increase in his skill damage. In addition, the ‘Five Joint Attack’s option effect of Failure and the Holy Light Gloves were activated. Therefore, Link Kill was reborn a his strongest skill.

[You have killed the Slaughterer.]

[108,950,109 experience has been acquired.] One-third of this will each be distributed equally to Noe and Randy.]

[The Slaughterer’s Eye Patch has been acquired.]

[The Slaughterer’s Mask has been acquired.]

[Three weapon enhancement stones have been acquired.]

[A Blessed Weapon Enhancement Stone has been acquired.]

The Slaughterer's eternal pain ended. Grid appraised the items that were dropped and understood why Lael told him to come here.

# Chapter 244

---

The material and shape of the Slaughterer's Eye Patch looked ordinary. It was just a black eye patch made of leather. Nothing special could be seen about the eye patch. The Grid of the past would've complained before appraising it.

“This is shit! I wasted 10 days just trying to get an eyepatch? Damn! What is this? Lael, you \$%!# \$!”

He would say. He would throw a tantrum. But Grid was no longer so immature.

‘Lael wouldn't advise me to get this for nothing.’

There must be something about the item. An item wasn't something that could be distinguished with just the appearance. Grid had high expectations.

“Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal.”

[The blacksmith who became a legend can appraise items with an excellent discerning eye. If a hidden feature exists in the target item, it will be found.]

Ttiring~

[Slaughterer's Eye Patch]

Rating: Unique

Durability: 7/7

\* The skill 'Vital Spot Detection' will be generated.

The Slaughterer was tortured for a long time. He was also forced to watch the torture of countless people.

As a result, he has a high grasp of vital spots.

This eyepatch has been used by the Slaughterer for a long time and gained this ability.

Conditions of Use: None.

Weight: 0.1

[You have discovered a hidden feature in the item!]

[This is an item with a grudge. The wearer will be dominated by the impulse to kill and will become a reckless murderer.]

Curse. It was a cursed item. It was impossible to play the game normally if he was a senseless murderer. But Grid didn't care. Curse? He could just resist it.



“Lauel, this nice guy.”

Grid was thrilled. He wanted to summon Lauel right now and embrace him. The Slaughterer’s Eye Patch was a good item. No, it wasn’t just at the level of good. It was an item that helped Pagma’s Descendant take off the ‘limit.’

‘I didn’t think I would get Vital Spot Detection.’

Vital Spot Detection. It was a top grade passive skill that only a small number of classes optimized for battle would acquire. The function was simple. As the name suggested, it identified the opponent’s vital spots.

But this simple function had enormous power. If the vital spot was hit correctly, the probability of a critical hit would increase, causing bleeding, paralysis and other conditions. In other words, it meant that his attack power would increase dramatically.

‘Lauel, he got something huge from Haynes.’

First ranked monster discerner, Haynes. He was able to predict the items that monsters would drop based on their characteristics. If Minor was a minerals detector, Haynes was an item detector.

‘Lauel would’ve paid a lot of money to get this information from Haynes.’

Grid realized that Lael's heart was deepening. He worked hard to overcome his master's weakness, so Grid's liking towards him increased.

‘Lael is busy with acting as the lord... I must surely reward his hard work.’

Grid promised happily as he wore the eye patch. Then something interesting happened. The left eye, covered by an eye patch, started to emit a dim red light. It was so weak that it was hardly noticeable in a bright place. However, it was clearly visible in dark spaces like this basement.

Lael would be very excited when he saw this.

[Your hatred for humans is growing. You are filled with the urge to murder someone.]

[You have resisted.]

Grid was being provided a new perspective. Randy stood beside him and Grid could clearly see the ‘core’ of the doppelganger. It wasn't precise, but it was powerful enough to be able to grasp the target's vital points.

‘I was worried that the vision on one side would be obscured. Fortunately, that isn't the case.’

It was a perfect artifact. Of course, that was on the assumption

that the murderous impulse curse could be suppressed. Grid's joy was comparable to when he raided the pope and acquired the Holy Light set.

“Then...” Grid watched Noe. He had a cute tail of modest length. A white part at the end looked like a flower. “Your tail is your weakness...”

“I am the best demonic beast of hell. I don't have a weakness! Nyang!”

Noe bluffed and raised his palms. He seemed to be bewildered at his weakness being seen through. Grid thought about making Noe an armor to defend his tail. Then he turned his attention to another item dropped by the Slaughterer.

The Slaughterer's Mask. It was an iron mask designed to cover the right half of the face.

‘The material is black iron.’

Unlike ordinary masks, this one was made from a good mineral. However, the design was dismal. The crying eye shape seemed the opposite of the smiling mouth shape. It looked like a clown's mask. There were even a few teardrops carved into it.

‘I didn't hear anything about this mask.’

It was probably a small item that wasn't worth emphasizing. Grid

didn't have much expectations.

“Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal.”

Ttiring~

[The Slaughterer's Mask]

Rating: Legendary

Durability: 39/39 Defense: 21

\* The skill 'Evil Spirit's Bloody Tears' will be generated.

It is a mask that reflects the sadness of the Slaughterer, a being who lived a painful life just before he was born as a half man, half beast.

Conditions of Use: None.

Weight: 55

[You have discovered a hidden feature in the item!]

[This is an item with a grudge. The wearer will be dominated by the impulse to kill and will become a reckless murderer.]

## [Evil Spirit's Bloody Tears]

When hit, there is a 8% chance of releasing a blood flow. The ejected blood will paint the Slaughterer's mask with blood. When this happens 10 times, the mask will turn a distinct red.

At that time, the wearer's attack power will increase by 50% for 5 seconds.

“Crazy.” He reflexively exclaimed.

Grid was astonished. Evil Spirit's Bloody Tears. It might be a conditionally triggered skill, but its power was excellent. It was a fraudulent skill. It was a legendary rated artifact.

‘Lauel didn't mention this item because he didn't know.’

It was proof that Haynes was still lacking. As a result, it was a huge profit. If Haynes knew about the existence of this mask, Lauel would've had to pay a bigger fee.

“Kukukuk.”

Grid couldn't help laughing. Half his face was covered with a black mask and his left eye shone red, making him look like a demon. The level of oppression was much higher than when he wore the Frostlight Orc Chief's Helmet in the past.

Lauel would be shocked if he saw it.

\*\*\*

“T-This...”

Earl Zebra ran after hearing the news and couldn't believe the scene in front of him. The undefeatable Slaughterer was dead, leaving only a few body parts behind. This was caused by only one person!

“W-Who are you? Heok?”

Was this really the skills of a human? Zebra gulped after asking the question. He was frightened after seeing Grid in the bizarre mask and eye patch.

‘There is a red light in his eyes...’

He didn't look like a human being at all. Maybe he was a real demon? Grid reached out to Earl Zebra.

“Give me the earrings.”

“U-Understood!”

Earl Zebra handed his most prized treasure to Grid. The Black Quartz Earrings increased the wearer's intelligence by 15%. It was a beautiful treasure that had been passed down through his family for generations. He never thought there would come a day when he would really give this to someone. Now it was wasted.

‘I was supposed to give this to the knights who are coming to kill the Slaughterer... Shit, I need to send assassins after this guy.’

Earl Zebra's greed caused him to make a wicked plan. But who was the greedy one? It was Grid. Grid could read Earl Zebra's eyes instantly.

‘This ridiculous guy.’

Pisik.

Grid smirked. Then Earl Zebra asked him.

“W-Why are you suddenly smiling?”

“Cute.”

“What...?”

Earl Zebra's face filled with anger. He was an earl of the great empire and over 40 years old, yet he was called cute? As if he was a pet? This was an obvious taunt.

‘This insane bastard!’

Earl Zebra didn’t like Grid at all. From the beginning, this young man had a nasty spirit. Earl Zebra wanted to brutally torture and kill Grid.

“T-Thank you.”

However, Earl Zebra had difficulty meeting the eyes of Grid, who killed the Slaughterer alone. First, he just wanted Grid to get lost. Grid equipped the Black Quartz Earrings.

[Intelligence will increase by 15%.]

‘This is the reward for a S+ grade quest.’

In fact, an accessory that increased intelligence by 15% was very valuable. Any magician would covet it. But thanks to the effects of all types of titles, Grid’s intelligence already exceeded 1,000 and he didn’t need it. He was able to have enough mana to use all his skills and didn’t use Dainsleif anymore, so magic power wasn’t that important.

‘I will use this until I can find a craftsman who can make an accessory out of blue orichalcum.’

Grid threw a question to Earl Zebra, who was avoiding his gaze.



“Do you think about weak people?”

“...?”

It was a confusing question. Earl Zebra wanted this ghastly man to disappear. But he didn't dare express his heart.

“That is something I don't know.”

He was a powerful man, born as the son of an earl. Tens of thousands of people bowed before him, and thousands of soldiers obeyed him. Weak? He had no interest in such things.

Grid nodded. “Right. You wouldn't know about such a thing.”

He was never subjected to one-sided bullying. Grid knew there was nothing as painful and terrible as that. He had no desire to save Earl Zebra, who had committed a crime against his people and tortured people for his own entertainment.

“You, aren't you weak?”

The red eyes swept over Earl Zebra's entire body. Zebra's instincts screamed at him and he stepped back.

“W-What? What are you trying to do?”

Grid shrugged.

“What am I doing?”

Then he just left? Earl Zebra was relieved to hear Grid’s footsteps leaving. He waited until he couldn’t hear the footsteps anymore, before running to someone else.

# Chapter 245

---

“Come out!”

Earl Zebra ran into his great hall and shouted. Then nine assassins showed up. Earl Zebra absolutely believed in the Black Arrows group. The assassination ability of those who served Earl Zebra’s family for generations was unmatched. There was no history of failed assassinations.

Earl Zebra ordered.

“Kill the guy who was here a little while ago! Get me the Black Quartz Earrings back!”

“Yes.”

The assassins suddenly disappeared. Earl Zebra was facing them, and even he wasn’t sure when they disappeared. Earl Zebra felt relieved by their excellent skills and smiled evilly.

‘It doesn’t matter what a monster that guy is.’

What opponents couldn’t those assassins kill? Earl Zebra imagined the situation where that person would die and was very satisfied. The moment he was humming.

“Nyang.”

A small cat entered the great war. It was a cat with smooth black fur. Only the end of his four feet and tail were white as snow.

‘C-Cute!’

Earl Zebra thought as he watched the cat. The cat’s charm was so absolute that even a crazy human was captivated by it. Earl Zebra was deceived for a moment. He felt a desire to keep that cat around him for the rest of his life.

But it was only for a moment. Earl Zebra barely managed to regain his spirit.

“What are the guards doing? Why can’t the guards keep a beast out of here? Do you really want to die?”

“I-I’m really sorry.”

The soldiers who rushed over at the noise were pale. They had obviously been standing guard fiercely. It was impossible for even an ant to enter. How was a cat able to get in?

“Why are you just standing there?”

The soldiers tried to get rid of the cat. However, the cat was very agile, despite its chubbiness. It jumped around the great hall like it was its own home.

“Heok?”

Earl Zebra and the soldiers’ eyes widened. They witnessed small wings appearing on the cat’s back. They looked closely and saw a small horn on his forehead.

“M-Monster...!”

Earl Zebra belatedly grasped the identity of the cat and shook his hands. But his dull hands couldn’t prevent the aggressive cat’s dash.

“Kiyaaah!”

Papat! Pa pa pa pat!

The short paws of the cat swung at lightning speed. Earl Zebra was filled with a terrible pain. He felt a burning sensation from his face.

“Kuaaaaak!”

A sharp scream rang out. Earl Zebra’s face was bloody like it was mangled.

“H-Hik.”

The soldiers were terrified. It was obvious that Earl Zebra's anger would fall on them, who couldn't prevent the monster from entering.

'He is going to torture us terribly!'

'W-What should we do?'

'Why did this happen?'

The soldiers fixed their eyes on their spears as they talked. Then they crept towards Earl Zebra, who was filled with a lot of agony and pain.

"Y-You guys...!"

Earl Zebra lived a life that wasn't filled with suffering, simply because he was born of a noble lineage. Today was his first time experiencing a major injury since he was born. It was also because of his subordinates.

"How dare you try to harm your master! Don't you know that this is a felony? Your limbs will be cut off and you will all die!"

Earl Zebra cried out. But the threat didn't vanish. The soldiers raised their spears. Earl Zebra wanted to avoid this and quickly changed his attitude.

“If you put down your spears now, I will forgive you and give you a great reward! So please calm down!”

He tried to negotiate, but it didn't work.

“Do you think that we'll believe your words? We know that you tell dozens of lies to those you torture!”

“We hated you from the beginning! You human butcher! It's better to get rid of a guy like you!”

“One of the girls you framed and killed was my relative! She was only 15 years old! You son of a bitch.”

The anger that had been suppressed was being expressed. If they didn't kill the earl, they would die anyway. The soldiers were well aware that there was no turning back. They stabbed Earl Zebra with their spears.

Puk! Puk puk puk!

“Y-You...! You guys! Kuheook!”

It was the end of the human who was more cruel and wicked than a demon.

“Nyang.”

The cat, who was the culprit of this situation, slowly escaped from the great hall.

\*\*\*

“Was this what you aimed for?”

On the outer walls. Kiki had reported the situation in the castle after she used her Hawk Eyes skill.

Veradin shook his head.

“No. I just wanted to obtain the bones of the Slaughterer.”

Veradin couldn't know why Grid, a duke of the Eternal Kingdom, came to visit Earl Zebra. But he could roughly guess the reason why. The Slaughterer was a bounty monster for many rankers. Maybe Grid came here to raid this place? He predicted Grid's presence and didn't report it to Earl Zebra. As a result, Grid raided the Slaughterer.

Thus far, it was as planned. But he had no idea Earl Zebra would be killed. In fact, it was the soldiers who killed Earl Zebra, but the black cat that caused the incident obviously belonged to Grid.

“It's surprising.”



Was Grid acting for the people of another kingdom that weren't related to him? A strange smile appeared on Veradin's face.

Kiki questioned him, "What should we do? There will be an uproar."

The empire wouldn't stay silent after a noble was killed. A large scale investigation team would be sent and the atmosphere would become bloody for a while. That wasn't the only problem. The son of Earl Zebra was still young. In addition, he grew up watching his crazy father and was emotionally unstable. In short, he was easily manipulated. It was doubtful that the other nobles would give a territory to a lacking boy. It was expected that a bloody faction strife over the territory would occur.

"Veradin? What are you thinking? Wouldn't it be better to report Grid right now?"

"Dismissed."

"What?"

Kiki couldn't believe it. Grid was an enemy. Now only did he hurt their guild, he damaged Earl Zebra's territory, the home of their guild. Yet Veradin was intending to let Grid go?

Veradin explained the plan. "We will arrest the soldiers who killed Earl Zebra and get a huge achievement. Then we can increase our influence and make the son of Earl Zebra a lord."

He was drawing a big picture.

“This is an opportunity to go further.”

Veradin believed that this work would allow him to devour Earl Zebra’s territory in the future. He would give this estate to his master, Agnus.

\*\*\*

The outskirts of Earl Zebra’s castle.

Grid was waiting for Noe.

‘I wanted to kill him myself.’

Earl Zebra was a wicked man who shouldn’t be saved. Grid had gone through many adventures, but it was the first time he saw such a brutal person. But it was too dangerous to kill the earl himself.

It would be difficult to access Asmophel if the empire was chasing him, and it would also put the Eternal Kingdom in a difficult position. If he knew that Veradin was a noble of the empire, Grid wouldn’t have touched the White Wolf Guild either. But Grid didn’t know the truth about Veradin, so he couldn’t feel glad that Veradin didn’t report him.

“Grid is a good person? Then you punished a bad person?”

Randy started questioning the division between good and evil. Grid was satisfied at the friend who grew up everyday and replied.

“I’m not good.”

That’s right. Grid wasn’t a good man. He wouldn’t sacrifice his life unless it was for his colleagues. But he had the minimum of conscience. He couldn’t turn away from those who were in fear from Earl Zebra. If he lacked strength, he might’ve turned away for his own comfort.

‘I’m no longer a weakling.’

He was willing to help someone if he could help. But that story was based on the assumption that he would come to no harm. This was Grid’s evolution. It wasn’t quite justice. However, he wasn’t really reprehensible.

“Rather...”

Grid sensed uninvited people approaching their hiding spot. It wasn’t difficult to detect them because he had over 1,400 insight.

“These guys, they were sent by Zebra.”

The criteria that Grid used to judge the skills of an assassin was Faker. These assassins weren't a match for Faker. In other words, Grid didn't acknowledge most of the assassins in the world. It wasn't just arrogance.

His position was right. An assassin's weapons were their secrecy and swiftness, but it was virtually impossible for them to threaten Grid with his high insight and unreasonable defense. They needed to have at least Faker's skills to threaten him.

Susuk.

The assassins were unaware that they would be detected. After steadily narrowing down the distance, they aimed their daggers at Grid's neck. At that moment.

Chaaeng!

Golden blades flew and blocked the assassins' daggers.

“Aren't you using cute tricks?”

“...!”

The assassins' expressions didn't change. But they were incredibly surprised.

‘He noticed our surprise attack? It couldn't be.’

They tried stabbing again, but it was useless.

Puok!

“Kuaaaak!”

The golden blades were thrown by someone unknown and flew again, sticking into the assassin’s thigh. A notification window appeared in front of Grid.

[Critical!]

[You have dealt 1,590 damage to the target.]

‘There is only this much damage, even if it’s a critical attack.’

Pavranium was the strongest mineral. If he made a weapon using pavranium, the attack power would be beyond Failure. But right now, the blades made from pavranium couldn’t exert their full strength. They were made with only a small amount of pavranium, so the attack power wasn’t very good.

‘Minor must find the western labyrinths quickly.’

He wanted to secure more pavranium. Minor had a lot of responsibility. As Grid was thinking this, the assassins became wary.

‘This person has a companion!’

Grid was obviously alone when he came to the castle. But now he had a girl with him, as well as a hidden guard. They had to find the guard hiding somewhere that was throwing the golden blades. But they couldn’t detect the person.

Grid smiled like they were funny and pointed towards the sky.

“Above.”

“...?”

At that moment. The assassins looked up at the sky and witnessed the golden blades moving alone.

‘Artifact!’

The astonished assassins looked back at Grid.

“Keok...”

“Ugh...”

Three of the assassins were skewered with a blue greatsword.

“What is this?”

This was too absurd!

“Are we being hunted?”

The past Grid and current Grid had something in common. He showed no mercy to his enemies.

“Don’t waste your time and die obediently.”

An iron mask that covered half the face. At first glance, it seemed to be crying, but now it was smiling. The assassins experienced the greatest horror since they were born.

# Chapter 246

---

‘Are we going to die like this?’

The assassins were trained to maintain their composure under any circumstances. Surveillance, assault, assassination, etc. Their tasks required secrecy and patience, so suppressing their emotions was the most basic skill.

But now the Black Arrow assassins lost their composure. In other words, they were clearly terrified. This was evidence that their status was low. An excellent assassin would’ve kept their composure, no matter how strong their target.

“Your master is a dog and you’re just at the level of a gangster.”

Step, step.

The target moved closer and approached them. The assassins were good at using a dagger, so they welcomed close combat, but this situation was an exception.

‘There is no chance when facing him from the front.’

Their colleagues were killed in the blink of an eye. The six assassins quickly determined and spread out. Then they threw their daggers.



Pa pa pa pat!

Dozens of daggers flooded towards Grid. It seemed like there was no room to evade. The assassins naturally thought that Grid would bleed. They had an extremely poor imagination.

Suuk.

A jade greatsword was calmly and quickly pulled out. Then dozens of daggers flying at Grid were sucked into the centre of a vortex. This wasn't the end. Then the direction of the vortex changed and the daggers popped out like bullets.

It was Pagma's Swordsmanship, Revolve.

Puk! Puuok!

“Keook!”

“Kkuk!”

The effect of ‘skill damage increased by 20%’ made the daggers bombardment much more powerful than when the assassins threw them. The assassins hit by the daggers became a hedgehog.

‘Being hit by my own attack!’

It was serious. The eyes of the assassins swayed like a lamp in front of the wind. Grid triggered Blacksmith's Rage and wielded the blue greatsword like a lightning bolt.

Seokeok!

Two colleagues lost their lives at once. The bodies and heads were separated, turning them to ash at once.

‘He is too strong...!’

The assassins were well aware of the fact that the Slaughterer was strong. But they were confident that they could kill the Slaughterer if all nine assassins did a pincer attack. However, the number of people who could access the basement was limited to three.

It meant that the target was a monster who had taken on the Slaughterer alone. However, the nine of them could beat the target if they fought together. But that wasn't it. The target's strength far exceeded the assumed range. He might even be a match for the famous Red Knights.

The Black Arrows that followed Earl Zebra and committed many bad acts were wiped out on this day.

\*\*\*

‘If I aim at a vital spot, the chances of activating the Bisect skill is

much higher... Is it? I need to experiment a bit more.'

Grid defeated the Slaughterer and gained a lot of experience. He defeated nine Black Arrows assassins with an average level of 240, and his level rose due to the additional experience. 288. Based on his level, he was now within the top 500 rankings.

But that strength? His rank had nothing to do with it.

'My agility is too low.'

Grid invested all 10 stat points into agility, but he still felt that it was lacking. Piaro's strength and agility was a 1:1 ratio. Grid had used him for reference and invested all points into agility for several months, but his ratio was still a mess. He had invested most of his stat points into strength until he met Piaro.

Grid currently had 2,810 strength and 1,606 agility. He had to make the ratio of these two stats 1:1. If he wanted to use the ideal swordsmanship that balanced strength and speed, he needed to gain at least another 120 levels.

'My vision is dark.'

But did he feel desperate? No way.

'I have to concentrate on hunting every time I take a break.'

Right now, Grid didn't care about overworking himself. He would be rewarded for all the effort he put in. He was well aware of this fact.

Noe flew to him. "Praise the best demonic beast of hell! Nyang!"

Based on his expression, he had completed his task properly. This was the end of Earl Zebra's reign.

"Then let's go to Titan."

Now Grid didn't need the hat. The mask and eyepatch hid his features, so his ID was automatically hidden.

Grid moved forward without hesitation. He met monsters on the way to Titan and gradually adjusted to dual wielding and using the Vital Spot Detection skill. After the battle, he recreated the contents and sought how to overcome his weaknesses.

The journey to Tital would take approximately a fortnight. Until then, Grid's goal was to reach at least level 291.

Randy and Noe became surprisingly friendly.

"Noe! Cute!"

"Kyang! Pat the best demonic beast of hell on the head! Stroke my chin as well! Kyang!"

\*\*\*

The 31st knight, Idan. He was the youngest of the Red Knights. He was only 14 years old when he joined the knights and now he was 23 years old. He wasn't from a prestigious family.

But nobody could ignore him.

Who would make fun of him, one of the empire's strongest knights?

“Hmmm~”

The scene where Earl Zebra was murdered. There were dozens of nobles and knights present. They stood like stone statues and watched Idan. On the other hand, Idan didn't look at them. He questioned the seven soldiers who murdered Earl Zebra, as well as the circumstances around his murder.

“Um~ I see.”

After a while.

Idan made an expression like he finally grasped the situation. Then at the place where Earl Zebra was killed. In other words, he sat on the throne in the great hall. Nobody pointed out that this behavior was unbecoming.

Idan ordered.

“Destroy them and their families.”

“S-Sir Idan!”

The seven soldiers who murdered Earl Zebra cried out. Didn't he say that their families would live if they cooperated with the investigation? It was a ruthless command! Idan smiled at those who were looking at him with eyes full of pleading and resentment.

“I understand the reason why you needed to kill Earl Zebra. In addition, I know that Earl Zebra deserved to die. But a crime is a crime. I need to enforce the law.”

“Why are you doing this? You promised to spare our families!”

“That was if you cooperated.”

“We willingly cooperated!”

“Yes~? When?”

“...!”

The soldiers realized it. Idan was an evil person. He was just as vicious as Earl Zebra. It was chilling to see him laugh as he sentenced dozens of people to death. Idan watched the soldiers who were dragged to the execution area before turning to the nobles.

“Did you say you were Baron Veradin?”

“Yes.”

Veradin was called by Idan and took one step forward. Idan observed him closely before smiling.

“You accidentally witnessed the murder of Earl Zebra at the hands of his soldiers and arrested them... Aren’t you wonderful?”

It was blatantly sarcastic. The situation was excellent enough to make Veradin stand out, and Idan clearly smelt it. Veradin didn’t shake. He bowed while maintaining a calm expression.

“I might’ve been able to save Earl Zebra if I arrived at the scene a little sooner. I am sorry.”

Idan’s eyes darkened. Veradin was a pretty tough guy.

“Do you know anything about the killer of the Slaughterer?”

Just before Earl Zebra was murdered, someone had killed the

Slaughterer by himself. Idan suspected that these things were related. However, it was a problem because Veradin, who was presumed to be in the center of the case, remained consistent until the end.

“This is all the soldiers said. He was alone, and was a black-haired man full of grace. I didn’t see him myself.”

“Yes, I understand.”

That was the end. Idan left without looking at Earl Zebra’s body. Then he looked at direction where the killer of the Slaughterer had headed.

“Who is he?”

The empire’s judgment division determined that the Slaughterer was an A+ grade monster. Three black knights weren’t able to defeat it, so he was sent alone. He didn’t like the fact that he was pushed to do this troublesome thing. Now he was irritated because the situation had become more complicated.

‘A person who can handle an A+ grade monster alone isn’t ordinary... The seniors won’t like it if I return without investigating the person’s identity.’

“Hah.”

He could only sigh.



\*\*\*

“Is this authentic information?”

“Yes.”

“Okay, now is the perfect time.”

Zibal was second on the unified rankings. The Snake Guild, led by him, was growing rapidly, but he couldn't help feeling anxiety. The total number of guild members was 275 and their average level exceeded 230.

At least 100 of them were in the top 1,000 rankers. He had recently achieved his goal of becoming an earl of the Haken Kingdom. He would be the first user to become a king. But there was a big stumbling block.

It was none other than Grid. Grid had become a duke at once due to the large-scale golem invasion. It was highly likely that Grid would take the title of first king. Zibal couldn't sit back, and instead made a plan.

Seven guilds had joined forces to keep Grid and Reidan in check. The leaders of the seven guilds pledged to cooperate. They would suppress Grid. But there was a problem.

Grid and the Overgeared Guild were too big. How could they invade Reidan when there was a group of monsters completely dominating the 10th to 40th places in the unified rankings? If the seven guilds combined, it might be possible to kill the Overgeared members, but they would have to take huge damage. It would turn into a loss for them.

Zibal and the leaders of the seven guilds couldn't carelessly take action. They were worried for the past few months, but had to wait.

Then a chance arrived. According to a scouting team dispatched to the western part of the Eternal Kingdom, Grid had recently disappeared and the Overgeared members had left Reidan to develop a mine.

Currently, Reidan was completely vacant. What if they invaded and destroyed the facilities? It would be a huge blow that Grid would find difficult to overcome.

“Head to Reidan right now. Put on a helmet or mask to hide your identity and move as secretly and quickly as possible.

At the same time, Reidan.

“This is Grid's city...!”

The sight of the endless fields and walls made Damian overwhelmed. He had travelled to many big cities during his

adventures, but in terms of size, Reidan was the best.

“Being a duke is really great! Ruling this great city! Amazing! The population must be at least over 100,000!”

Damian looked around at the surroundings and admired it.

Were visitors unwelcome? Two farmers suddenly arrived in front of him and asked him a question.

“Who are you?”

“...?”

## Chapter 247

---

Damian was just walking along. He couldn't think of anything in his behavior that would've caused wariness. So why were these people blocking the road? The attitude of the farmers didn't make sense.

Damian thought about it before making a reasonable guess.

‘They don't like me because I'm an otaku.’

Damian's equipment were engraved with all types of phrases. The phrases written in gold looked very nice, because they had a sense of harmony with the white color of the gear. However, this changed after seeing the contents of the phrases.

I love you Rin-chan, beautiful Isabel-chan, cute Luna-chan, Rebecca's Daughters forever, and so on.

The contents of the phrases were things that invited disdain. Some people were so disgusted that they caused a fight because they didn't want to see it. In reality and in games, an otaku was a target of hatred and derision.

But Damian didn't give in. He wanted to freely express his love for Rebecca's Daughters. He couldn't understand why he should be criticized for the act of loving someone so purely and enthusiastically.

“I’m a paladin of the Rebecca Church. Why are you asking me who I am?”

Damian’s attitude was cold.

One of the farmers smiled. “You don’t seem to be an ordinary paladin.”

Damian exclaimed. “Yes! I am not an ordinary paladin, I’m an otaku paladin! So what? Do you want to beat me up?”

“Otaku? What is that? Anyway, won’t you fight me? The divine power that I can feel around you is very interesting compared to all the paladins and priests I’ve met so far.”

“This...”

Damian finally figured out the situation. These farmers weren’t mad at him for being an otaku. They were just crazy. A farmer who detected his powerful divine power and wanted to challenge him? It was safe to say that he had crossed a line.

‘He’s crazy.’

Damian felt compassion for the farmer. Then he sincerely prayed.

“Goddess of light, please bless these poor people...”

After a moment. Damian finished praying and said goodbye to the farmers.

“I hope that you will restore your spirit under Goddess Rebecca’s divine favor. Then I’m going now.”

Damian didn’t look back. He didn’t want to encounter these crazy farmers for long, so he hurried towards the gate.

‘I need to meet Grid as soon as possible.’

He needed to ask Grid to seal Lifaël’s Spear. He just wondered if the greedy Grid would do it.

‘I will save Isabel-chan, even if I have to give him all my possessions.’

He would devote his soul for her. It was when he was making a pledge again.

Peeng!

There was a loud sound. Damian turned his head to see a hoe flying towards him.

“Heok?”

There was clearly killing intent. An overwhelming qi. It would cause great damage if he didn't block it. Damian instinctively sensed and hurriedly raised his shield.

Chaaeng!

A strong shockwave occurred as a result of the hoe and white shield colliding. The whole wheat field shook. Damian was appalled.

‘Strong!’

It was incredible attack power. It was enough to make his spine chill, the first paladin of the Rebecca Church. As he was feeling confused, the farmer pulled back his hoe and threw off his straw hat.

An NPC called Piaro. He looked amused as he held a hoe in one hand and a hand plow in the other.

“Good defense. I'll have to use Supreme Swordsmanship.”

Piaro was excited. First there was Duke Grid, the Overgeared members, Kraugel, and now Damian. He was excited by the fact that he met powerful people who couldn't be overpowered with the Imperial Swordsmanship.

‘I have to deal with him seriously, like when I am fighting Kraugel.’

When he competed with Duke Grid at Loran Falls. At that time, Piaro hadn’t been in the proper mental state. He wasn’t able to demonstrate his skills properly. But after being with Duke Grid for the past few months, Piaro had become emotionally stable. Now he could exert his full skills.

“Then let’s start.”

“I don’t want to!”

Damian quickly rejected. There was no reason to fight. But Piaro was stubborn.

“You must take me down in order to enter Reidan.”

“What’s this?”

Damian thought it was ridiculous. It was a city where a farmer was the gatekeeper. The other farmer standing silently suddenly whispered to Piaro.

“Please do it moderately. I also want to fight with him.”

He was Kraugel. He had been working in the fields and training with Piaro for a fortnight. Thanks to Piaro, he had certainly



become stronger than before. Now he only lost half his health when confronting Piaro. Even that monster was looking forward to a fight with Damian.

An exceptional person who rose to become the number two paladin, despite being a paladin of the Rebeccan Church. But one day, he suddenly disappeared from the rankings list, so there were rumors that he obtained a hidden class.

That person was Damian. Damian was famous, so Kraugel was interested in news about him. But Damian himself was unaware that he was a celebrity. He was only interested in Rebecca's Daughters.

Anyway, that celebrity was currently in a desperate crisis.

The continent's strongest swordsman, Piaro.

The peak of two billion users, Kraugel.

He was destined to fight those two in turn.

\*\*\*

The Ice Flower Guild was one of the axis of the seven guilds. They had 30 members. They were few in number, but all 30 members were elites in the top 100 of the magician rankings.

In particular, their guild master Bondre was an overwhelming talent. He was the first ranking magician and 11th on the unified rankings just a month ago. Thanks to the Overgeared members, his ranking was pushed to 17th. However, there was nobody who would disagree that he was strong.

Ah, there was Grid. In the National Competition, Grid had logged out Bondre in four seconds.

But that was then and this was now. After his disgrace in the National Competition, Bondre struggled to acquire more S-grade magic. He poured all his money, time, and effort into it. As a result, Bondre was now much more powerful than he was in the National Competition.

He had three S-grade magic spells. Nine months later, the Second National Competition would be held in France, his home country. At that place, he planned to thoroughly get revenge on Grid.

“I will log you out in three seconds.” But before that. “Today, I will shatter your estate.”

That damn Grid was the lord of Reidan. Bondre would make it a vacant lot. The development of the city that occurred in the last few months would be in vain! Cruelly! Perfectly!

“I will make you crumble! Kuhahahaha!”

“The disease has returned.”

The guild members talked among themselves as they watched their guild master having an outburst. Their guild master was often like this after being defeated by Grid in the National Competition. They missed his past appearance.

“Huh? What is that?”

There was a strange forest filled with thorny vines. This was currently the west of the Eternal Kingdom. The desert would soon appear in front of everyone. The Ice Flower Guild suddenly stopped marching.

It was because there were hundreds of people in the distance. They were blocking the forest’s narrow path.

“Don’t they seem like refugees?”

“Their timing is dirty.”

The guild was close to Reidan. However, the 900 refugees made their march slow down, so the Ice Flower Guild became irritated.

“Just kill them.”

Bondre witnessed it and spat out terrible words. The guild members winced and calmed Bondre down.

“Our infamy will shoot through the roof if we kill so many people. It will be impossible to play the game normally for a while.”

“Yes, Master. Please take it easy.”

“Shit! Shit! Shit! I want to smash Reidan right now!”

“Look! We can fly in the sky!”

Bondre was losing his mind because his enemy's empty house was right in front of him. The guild members tried to calm him down. They could fly in the sky using magic.

“Let's fly through the sky until we escape the forest. How about it? Okay?”

Bondre barely recovered control and nodded.

“Sigh... Okay. It's unfortunate that mana will be consumed, but it's still less than killing those people.”

Float.

The moment Bondre was using Fly along with his guild members. A hand sprang out from a thorny vine and grabbed a guild member.

“...Eh?”

The Ice Flower Guild couldn't grasp the situation. They were stunned as they received a notification window.

[Your party member Ren has died.]

“What?”

“This is crazy!”

What was going on? Bondre aimed magic in the direction that the mysterious hand protruded from.

“This bastard!”

Kwajajajak!

The ice bombs rapidly cooled the vines and destroyed them. Then Ren's dead body came into view.

‘Where?’

They had to find the person who killed Ren. Bondre and the guild members searched the area, but they couldn't find the enemy.

Puk!

“Kyak!”

[Your party member Silver has died.]

Bondre and the guild members paled. A companion standing near them had died and they still couldn't detect the enemy. It was like there was a ghost.

‘Assassin.’

A strong assassin that the level 303 Bondre couldn't detect, that was powerful enough to kill magicians whose levels were in the late 200s. Yes, like Faker.

‘Faker?’ A chill went down Bondre's spine. ‘It can't be.’

Was it really Faker? If so!

Bondre hurriedly exclaimed. “We shouldn't be here! Get out of the forest now!”

An assassin was the counter of a magician. Magicians had low health, defense and agility, so they couldn't afford to go against the swift assassins. It was worse in a dark place like this with many obstacles. They had to move to a wide area. The Ice Flower Guild made this judgment and instantly used Haste. It was to escape the forest after increasing their movement speed.

But the person in the darkness had no intention of letting them go. He threw daggers aimed at the magicians.

## Chapter 248

---

If the Overgeared members were asked who they trusted the most, they would answer without hesitation: Faker.

He gazed into the shadows that his companions couldn't see and, with the tip of his weapon, destroyed any who was brave enough to try and harm his companions. His reason for being silent was caution, and his remarks became reality.

“You will die here today.”

Five minutes after the battle commenced, Faker finally revealed himself. A terrible anger appeared on Bondre's face as he exclaimed, “Faker, this guy!”

It was only five minutes, the amount of time it took to go to the bathroom. That was it. During that period of time, 11 of Bondre's colleagues were killed. The dagger had a dispel function that made the shields of the magicians useless.

“What are you doing here? How did you predict that we would be going through this place? No, how did you know that we were going to invade Reidan in the first place? Did you plant a spy?”

Spy? There wasn't enough manpower in Reidan for that. It was just a coincidence. Faker had to avoid the gaze of the empire while he was transporting the refugees. He chose this narrow thorny vine forest as his route and encountered the Ice Flower Guild.



This could be called luck. Did he need to explain all of this to Bondre? No.

Bondre's face turned red as Faker remained silent.

“Damn bastard! Are you ignoring me now?”

Chwachachachak!

Six ice pillars emerged from the ground. He had used S-grade magic a little while ago to completely devastate the forest and make Faker reveal himself.

It was the moment when magic of the same level was manifested. Bondre stood in the cold air and smiled as he said, “This is one of the spells I prepared to kill Grid. Can you hold on?”

Ice Dragon's Fury: an S-grade spell.

Six huge ice pillars swirled in the air like a flight of Dragons.

“I'll kill you before trampling on Reidan!”

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

The six ice pillars attacked Faker from all directions. Power,

speed, and range. Nothing was lacking. The only downside of this magic was that it consumed a large amount of mana. However, it wouldn't completely deplete the mana of a top grade magician.

‘As long as his cover is gone, he will die! Come on! The person who took the 11th rank that was originally my position!’

Bondre was sure of his victory. He knew he could neutralize an assassin's swiftness with a wide area magic spell.

Don't give an assassin time to avoid. The relatively weak attack power compared to a single damage skill? It didn't matter. Assassins had low health, just like magicians. Once hit by the spell, the only result was...

“Huh?”

The confident Bondre's eyes shook, refusing to believe the spectacle unfolding before them.

Left.

Kwajak!

Right.

Kwajajak!

Left again.

Kwa kwang!

This time it was up. While six ice pillars rotated like the saw blades in a blender, Faker moved so fast that only afterimages were left behind. What about the cold air that caused the speed to drop?

‘How high is Faker’s agility?’

In fact, it wasn’t just a matter of agility. High speed that couldn’t be controlled was akin to having a pearl necklace around a pig’s neck. But Faker was in complete control of the speed that transcended common sense. No, it wasn’t just at the level of control.

‘Godly co...!’

Godly control. It was a modifier that only existed for Kraugel so far! As Bondre was in shock, Faker expressed his gratitude to Grid.

‘I always admire the items you make.’

Wind God’s Leather Armor. It was the armor that Grid made based on the production method that Faker had obtained. Originally, this armor increased the wearer’s agility by 6% and all speeds by 12%. However, Grid’s recreation of the armor increased agility by 8% and all speeds by 15%.

Susuk. Sususuk.

The afterimages increased.

One of the third assassin classes, 'Master of Swiftiness,' the class that required the highest level of control among all the classes in Satisfy. After meeting Grid's items and Faker's control, its capabilities were increased by 200% .

"Unbelievable!"

The six pillars gradually lost momentum, while Faker's speed increased. Anyone looking at him was likely to feel dizzy. The guild members tried casting magic in order to limit Faker's movements.

"Shit!"

Daggers flew and stopped their casting. There wasn't a pattern, but he avoided the big magic that dominated the whole area while stopping other magic casting.

'This is a scam!' It was strange. Faker's skills were more than rumored. 'Weren't the original rumors exaggerated? So why is it the opposite?'

The duration of Ice Dragon's Fury finally ended. Bondre hurriedly exclaimed, "Use the spells in your orb!"

They could use the spells stored in their orbs without any casting. But the magicians were reluctant to use it. It was a last resort. Now it was time to use their last resort.

Pepeng! Pepepepeng!

Kwajik! Kwajijik!

Magics with all types of attributes immediately appeared and aimed for Faker. As he flew around the ice pillars, the spells struck his body.

“That’s it! We did it!”

No, it was a misunderstanding. Their spells had hit an afterimage, not Faker’s body. Faker’s condition was relatively fine.

“This damn thing!”

Bondre cursed as Faker only suffered minor damage. He invoked ‘Double Casting’ and used two spells at the same time.

Kuuong!

After minimizing Faker’s activities radius using an ice barrier,

Jjejeok! Jjejeok!

Then he unfolded the Ice Spider Web. The other guild members cast spells at the same time.

‘What will Faker do now?’

The Master of Swiftness class had clear limits. It couldn’t move through the shadows like a Master of Shadows, nor did it have defense abilities. The only advantage was speed, so it was possible to disable the class if speed was suppressed.

Peeng!

Faker threw smoke bombs.

Due to the thick smoke, Bondre and the magicians were unable to see Faker.

Bondre laughed.

“Kuhahahaha! This guy! You can’t do anything with the Ice Spider Web pressuring you!”

The magicians used magic of the wind attribute. A gust of wind blew away the smokescreen, revealing Faker who would be stuck in the Ice Spider Web...

“...Where did he go?”

Bondre and the magicians were stunned. How did he conceal himself on flat ground without any cover?

‘Hide!’ It was clear that he dug a tunnel to hide in. ‘Such a pathetic method!’

Bondre used detection magic.

“...Eh?”

Sweat trickled down Bondre’s cheek. The detection magic was telling him that Faker was behind his back.

Suuk.

A sharp dagger aimed towards Bondre’s neck. At the same time, Faker released the white hoodie he was wearing.

“Invisibility cloak...!”

At this moment. The Ice Flower Guild were reminded. Faker was an Overgeared member. In other words, this meant that Faker was equipped with the power of items.

“Shit.”

Bondre cursed as the dagger was stuck in his neck.

Under the blazing sun. Red flowers bloomed on the gleaming spider webs.

\*\*\*

Bunny Bunny.

He was once the world's best gaming BJ. The average number of people who watched the broadcast in real time was close to 150,000. But that was a story of the past. Currently, the average number of viewers had dropped to 30,000.

In order to overcome this crisis, it was necessary to renew his viewers and gain some publicity. He needed new broadcast material that attracted people's attention. More provocative material.

Bunny Bunny used his network and was able to obtain the best information that the seven guilds would unite and attempt to invade Reidan.

“Okay. Good video quality, good angle.”

The fortified city, Patrian. Beyond it was the west of the Eternal Kingdom.



Bunny Bunny activated the video recording feature and filmed the Yak Guild and Zeraph Guild. The two guilds had approximately 200 members. Bunny Bunny checked that there was nobody around and whispered as he relayed the situation.

“Can you see them? Their IDs can’t be confirmed because they are wearing masks, but considering their features, they are surely the Yak Guild and Zeraph Guild. The information I obtained was true.”

Bunny Bunny was cautious.

“Oh, the two guilds have started moving. I will follow from a distance so that I won’t get caught.”

It wouldn’t be good if he was discovered. The seven guilds didn’t want it known that they united and were going to invade Reidan. Why? It was shameful. The seven guilds that represented Satisfy had joined forces to invade just one city.

“The master of the Yak Guild, Bubab is covering his face, but it is easy to guess his identity. It is because his size is as big as a bull. Huh? What is this situation?”

Bunny Bunny was following the two guilds at a reasonable distance when he suddenly stopped. Dozens of knights were blocking the march of the two guilds.

“Wow, what is this? Why are the knights stopping the Yak Guild and Zerah Guild? Isn't it curious? Right? Should I go closer? Okay. I will risk my life and narrow the distance in order to get rid of your curiosity.”

Bunny Bunny was a level 209 assassin. He used Stealth and hid behind cover, so both guilds couldn't detect him. In the first place, they were busy concentrating on the knights.

“What are you guys? Why are you blocking our way?”

“What is this? Huh?”

The guild members questioned the knights, but they stayed silent. They stood like an iron wall to block the guild members. In the end, Bubba couldn't bear it and went forward directly.

“Why are you preventing us from using the gate? If you don't give a reasonable explanation, I will break through by force.”

At that moment.

“You have no right to ask questions.”

A middle-aged man with white robes emerged. The name above his head was Ashur. The master of the city.

‘Earl Ashur...!’

Earl Ashur was one of the 10 great magicians on the continent. Why was such a big person blocking their way?

Earl Ashur asked the curious guild members. “Why do you want to go to the west?”

“There is no reason to answer the question.”

“Reason?” Ashur snorted. Then he released his overwhelming magic power.

“Eek...!”

The faces of the guild members turned white. The strong magic power felt like steel crushing their bodies. Earl Ashur’s golden eyes sunk.

“It is natural for you to answer my questions. There is no need to discuss why. Understood?”

“Ugh...! What the hell was this? Why is this happening?”

It was absurd. Bubab couldn’t understand the current situation. Earl Ashur raised his voice and asked again, No, he ordered.

“Tell me why you are going to the west.”

The magic balls installed throughout Patrian were Earl Ashur's eyes and ears. Through the magic balls, Earl Ashur already knew that they were going to invade Reidan. Nevertheless, it was a type of game to listen to their answers.

Bubat lied. "We are just going hunting..."

"Hunting? Kukuk, that is an obvious lie. Another lying bastard from the past just came to mind."

Earl Ashur's precious son was being held hostage in Reidan. He had no intention of letting these guys go, when they might harm his son.

"I'll give you a choice. Return the way you came, or have your bones buried in my city."

Chaeeeeeng!

Dozens of knights drew their swords, while the soldiers on the wall pulled back their bowstrings. Earl Ashur's expression was arrogant as he stood behind them. Bunny Bunny was thrilled as he recorded the situation while hiding.

'Doesn't it seem like Earl Ashur is Duke Grid's ally?'

One of the continent's 10 great magicians was loyal to a user! This

was a scoop above all other scoops. He was convinced that if he broadcasted the current scene, he could get a lot of viewers.

# Chapter 249

---

The Yak Guild's master, Bubat.

He combined bold judgments and powerful CCs to be called Satisfy's best initiator. The battlefield was always favorable to his allies when he was fighting in the lead. His nickname was 'Yak who Promises Victory.'

But at the time of the National Competition, Bubat was helpless. He didn't live up to his reputation and disappointed people. Was it because he was in a bad condition? No. It was because he met Yura and Grid in succession. In the case of Yura, his CC was destroyed by her excellent physical abilities. Grid was too bad because he resisted all CCs.

Bubat was frustrated because it couldn't be helped. Now it was a few months later. Bubat tried. He raised his level during hunting, acquired new skills, and maximized his control. He had the ability to fight against Yura and Grid. If he were to face them again, he had the confidence to grab hold of their ankles.

However,

“Dammit...!”

Before he met Yura and Grid, he once again experienced helplessness and frustration. For Bubat, reality was terrible.

Earl Ashur ridiculed him, “Your skills are pathetic.”

“Ugh!”

Bubat couldn't say anything to the Earl's words. Earl Ashur was really brilliant. Regardless of his skill, his ability to respond with appropriate magic was beyond the scope of common sense. In this battle, Bubbat was already wounded, while Earl Ashur didn't have a single speck of dirt on his white robes.

One of the continent's 10 great magicians. A monster who deterred war just by being present. In modern society, he was equivalent to a nuclear warhead. However, he was more than the rumors.

‘Far stronger than Yura.’

It wasn't an exaggeration. If Earl Ashur and Yura had the same level and stats, Earl Ashur would have the advantage. There was the named NPC compensation effect.

Named NPCs that had a profound effect on the worldview and story of the game, like Earl Ashur, had all their abilities (attack, defense, magic power, health, mana, skill cooldown, etc) set higher than a user.

This was a type of protection system applied as a fixed effect, regardless of stats. Earl Ashur and Piaro were both named NPCs, but because it was divided by grade, Earl Ashur was defeated.

“I’m not someone that small fries like you can dare to look at.”

Kurururung!

In one hand, lightning.

Suuuk.

In the other hand, Earl Ashur manifested water vapor. The destructive power of a magician who mastered various types of attribute magic became more evident when dealing with a large group.

“I will bury your bones in this city. Your bodies will be fertilizer to help the roses bloom.”

Kwarururung!

The water vapor spread and a thunderstorm formed. The Yak and Zeraph Guild members that were in range were electrocuted. Arrows from the soldiers poured from above them like rain while the knights continued the onslaught.

“Ohhhh!”

The top-ranked players, including Bubab, fought desperately. They overcame the electric shock as soon as possible and smashed



the knights. In particular, Bubat's activities were dazzling. He was like an angry yak as he blew away two knights with his shoulders. The knight with a blue rose in his mouth, Dio was only able to compete with him for a while.

But Bubat was still insignificant in Earl Ashur's eyes.

“Planning to invade Reidan with such skills, you should reevaluate. Don't you know? There is a monster at Reidan.”

Ttaak. Hwaruruk! Hwaruk! Hwaruk!

Earl Ashur started to generate continuous fire arrows from his fingers. He proved that C-grade magic could be as overwhelming as A-grade magic with his speed and magic power.

Pepepepeong!

“Kuaaaak!”

People burned like straw. The earth shook and a storm appeared. The unrealistic scene of two of the seven guilds representing Satisfy collapsing was recorded by Bunny Bunny in high definition.

“Amazing...! Amazing! Puhahaha!”

One of the 10 great magicians on the continent was protecting Grid! Bunny Bunny was convinced that he could break his record

of maximum viewers with this broadcast. He would also be inundated with interview requests from various media.

It wouldn't be long before he returned to his days as the world's best gaming BJ.

\*\*\*

“Ku... Kuock...!”

The Ice Flower Guild's last survivor, Reis. The struggling man eventually collapsed. One of the seven guilds had been completely wiped out by Faker. Why did something so ridiculous happen?

The timing worked out well for Faker. This was the time when the difference between the third and second advancement classes was beginning to emerge. Out of the 30 Ice Flower Guild members, only Bondre had a third advancement class. In other words, it meant Bondre was the only one able to face Faker.

But Bondre was a magician. Faker was an assassin, so he perfectly countered Bondre. It was the difference in classes. This difference meant that the Ice Flower Guild was easily handled by Faker.

It might've been different if this moment occurred three months ago. Or after some more time. No matter how great Faker was, he wouldn't have been able to smash the Ice Flower Guild then.

[Your stamina is depleted.]

[You won't be able to take any action.]

Flop!

Faker sat on the ground like a puppet whose strings were cut. Master of Swiftiness had a fatal weakness. It was fast moving, but the stamina consumption rate was unmatched. It was a difficult challenge to overcome. Grid was trying to solve it somehow, but the result was still unknown.

Shake shake.

Faker got up with great difficulty. His stamina was fixed at zero. Despite finding it difficult to lift even one finger, he attempted to move his feet with the belief that he should protect Reidan.

‘Only me.’

Based on the conversation of the Ice Flower Guild members, the fore invading Reidan was the seven guilds. Faker knew that Reidan was empty due to the Overgeared members being busy with the mine development, so there was no one else able to defend Reidan.

But.

Flop!

Faker couldn't move a single step and fell to the ground. Stamina depletion wasn't a problem that could be overcome with mental power.

“Grid...”

It would've been nice if he was the one here right now. Faker was sad. His expressionless face distorted with despair and frustration. Suddenly, the hiding Ul Clan ran over to him with worried expressions.

At first, they were afraid of Faker. However, now they trusted him.

On this day.

Faker became a legend. A living god who exterminated one of the seven guilds alone. It was extremely natural that having a famous subordinate would increase Grid's reputation.

\*\*\*

Just before Faker attacked the Ice Flower Guild. Faker sent a shocking whisper to Lael.

–The seven guilds are heading to Reidan. The Ice Flower Guild's currently location is the thorny vine forest. In addition, I don't know the location of the other six guilds.

‘What?’

There was a massive raid when Reidan was empty? It meant that the enemies accurately grasped Reidan’s situation.

‘I was too relaxed.’

He had to be more thorough when it came to blocking spies. But he didn’t, so this was all his fault. He was incompetent as the lord’s representative.

Kwaduduk!

He was angry at himself. Indeed, a lot of people were trying to restrain Reidan, but he couldn’t stop this situation anymore. Lael didn’t want to communicate this to Grid, who trusted him and put everything into his hands.

“Shit...! Shit!”

“Lael? What happened?”

Alzar Mountain. The Overgeared members, who were clearing the monsters around the mine, heading over to Lael. Lael was rarely so agitated, so they felt anxiety.

Lael took a deep breath and explained the situation. “The seven

guilds are heading to Reidan.”

“What?”

The Overgeared members cried out with shock. Among them, Vantner was especially angry.

“Those damn bastards...! Damn! What should we do? It will take at least half a day to get to Reidan!”

Lauel turned his attention to Huroi.

“Huroi, how many people can board your drake?”

“Three people.”

Given the speed of a drake, they would be able to reach Reidan in three hours. Lauel examined the Overgeared members. It was to select two people that would arrive in Reidan first with Huroi.

“...”

It was regrettable.

The strongest members of the Overgeared Guild, Pon and Regas were off on the dungeon mission (and incommunicado), while Faker was on a private mission. Jishuka was all the way in Bairan.

Then the next most powerful...

“Vantner and Toon. Please move to Reidan first with Huroi. If the enemies haven’t invaded yet when you arrive, cooperate with Jude to increase the defense. If they are already in battle...”

Lauel stopped speaking and closed his eyes. Then he spoke difficult words.

“Discard Reidan. Focus on saving Khan, Rabbit, Piaro, and Jude.”

It was a realistic judgment. It was virtually impossible to resist the seven guilds with a small number of people. They needed to be prepared for the destruction of the internal facilities. For now, the priority was saving the people who shouldn’t be lost.

“I understand...”

To be honest, Vantner wanted to say, ‘Why should we give up on Reidan?’ He wanted to shout that he would protect Reidan on his own. But Lauel was acting on behalf of Grid. Vantner chose to remain silent and obey the command. It was because Vantner recognized Grid as his leader.

“Let’s go!”

Huroi, Vantner, and Toon boarded the drake and began their

journey to Reidan. The remaining members moved with Lael.

“Let’s go. Don’t worry about your stamina and mana. Our goal is to arrive at Reidan quickly.”

Reidan would already be ashes when they arrived.

“We must kill the invaders.”

Grid would be the first user to become king. He was off limits. The enemies dared to aim at him? There were no thoughts about forgiveness.

\*\*\*

Reidan.

Zibal looked at the vast wheat fields with derision.

“Developing such a large city as an agricultural city, Grid has no talent for internal affairs.”

Indeed, Grid was incompetent. The only thing he could boast of was that he had a legendary class. The user who could become the first king? Not this guy.

“First of all, shall we turn these fields to ashes?”



There were many guilds that hadn't arrived yet, but Zibal didn't care. He instructed the magicians to burn everything with fire magic.

“Who are you?”

“...?”

Four farmers appeared.

# Chapter 250

---

Reidan's golden wheat field.

'It's hard...'

[Goddess' Agent]

The owner of the unique class, Damian, was working hard in the fields. He wore a straw hat to protect him from the sun and harvested wheat with a sickle, looking like the very image of a skilled farmer.

Why? Why was a pope candidate working in the fields during such a busy time? In order to explain, they had to go back in time to one week ago.

One week ago.

"You can't enter Reidan unless you knock me down first."

Damian looked at the strange farmer and realized that he had stepped on nasty poo.

'It's sad.'

Piario. This farmer was crazy. It was an undeniable truth. He grabbed a random stranger passing by and applied for a duel. Now

the farmer was acting like a gangster after being rejected? This aggressive and stubborn temperament was far beyond the norm. He was also strong. It was difficult to avoid a strong person who was crazy.

‘I was wrong.’

Damian sighed with regret. He came to this distant place to meet Grid. But before he could even meet Grid, he felt like reality was harsh because he was grabbed by someone crazy.

‘Sigh... I can’t avoid this fight.’

Damian had to meet Grid. It was to ask Grid to seal Lifael’s Spear. He needed to knock down this crazy farmer who was blocking the road. He decided and triggered Light’s Blessing.

Chaaeng!

A golden pillar dropped from the sky. Damian’s attack, defense and accuracy instantly rose by 80%. Light’s Blessing. The disadvantage was that the cooldown was long, but the effect was excellent. No, this was the strongest buff skill that went beyond excellence.

Piara admired it. “This is truly amazing divine power!”

Damian glared at him. “I will listen to your request. Be careful not to die.”

“A good fighting spirit.”

No more dialogue was necessary. The two men immediately collided. Damian was a stable one-handed sword fighting machine. Piaro dropped his hand plow and hoe and started using his sword. The confrontation between the two seemed fierce at first glance.

The result?

Damian was defeated in 10 minutes.

“Your defense is stronger than the emperor’s royal guards and your healing power is almost equal to a priest. You are the first to stand up against me for so long. This taste... No, it will be fun to train my swordsmanship.”

Piaro’s praise followed. But Damian couldn’t hear his voice.

‘This can’t be.’

Thanks to Grid, Damian had been the Goddess’ Agent until now. How many times had he won in battle? He couldn’t count the number of monsters that he had one-sidedly slaughtered. The infamous boss monsters? He could survive their attacks for several hours.

Damian was the peak of the paladins. He had such pride. Yet he

was defeated by a farmer. And in only 10 minutes!

“This is ridiculous!”

Damian was shocked. He couldn't understand it. Surprisingly, another farmer approached him after the first battle was won. It was Kraugel, who hid his identity.

“Let's also fight.”

“...Shit! Okay! Fight! Let's fight! Damn! These farmers don't get tired!”

Damian was extremely agitated. Sadly, he was forced to accept the confrontation with Kraugel. The result? This time, he was also defeated. Fortunately(?), he persisted for 20 minutes this time. However, this wasn't comforting either.

“Unbelievable!”

It was his second consecutive loss to a farmer. Damian was frustrated. He had no doubt that he had become a protagonist, but he was merely an extra. Piaro made a suggestion to him. “In fact... Duke Grid is currently away from here. He won't be back for at least three weeks, so why don't we do this task together?”

Together?

‘What?’

Damian couldn’t understand, so Piaro pointed to the wheat field.

“Work in the morning, spar in the afternoon.”

“...?”

Why? Indeed, this farmer was crazy. Damian naturally was going to refuse. At that moment, the quest information window popped up. It wasn’t a normal quest. It was the rumored ‘hidden’ quest.

[Fun and Enjoyable Training!]

★ Hidden Quest ★

Live with the farmer Piaro in Reidan. If you join him, you can grow significantly.

Quest Clear Conditions: Live together with Piaro for three weeks. You must perfectly follow Piaro’s schedule.

Quest Clear Rewards: Strength +30. Stamina +60. Advanced Sword Mastery will rise by two levels. The skill ‘Farming’ will be obtained.

“Heok.”

In the case of advanced Sword Mastery, a minimum of three months training was required to raise one level. This was under the assumption that they hunted without rest. Yet he could gain two levels of sword mastery in only three weeks? His stats would even increase by 90 points. This was the same as gaining nine levels.

‘There is the farming skill... No, isn’t the farming skill useless?’

Anyway, the quest was too attractive to refuse. The quest name sounded unlucky, but it wasn’t bad. This crazy farmer wasn’t just blowing smoke. In the end, Damian accepted Piaro’s offer.

It had been a week since then. Damian became stronger. He hadn’t completed the quest yet, so his skill level and stats hadn’t risen. However, he sparred against the two farmers (Piaro and the still nameless person), and his control skills made a breakthrough.

Now he could hold out for 15 minutes against Piaro.

‘I should be happy, but...’

Damian was confused because he still didn’t know Piaro’s true identity. He was also worried about forgetting himself. But Damian had to meet Grid. There was no need to fret while waiting for Grid to come back. Damian cleared his mind and worked hard. He carried 10 stacks of harvested wheat on both shoulders.

“Huh?”

Far beyond the wheat fields. A group of people seemed to be approaching. Damian cocked his head.

“Who?”

There had been no visitors to Reidan for the past week. Reidan was a completely isolated city. So why was there suddenly a group of hundreds? Damian questioned this.

“Very welcome guests came.”

Piario laughed. Damian was uneasy because of his enthusiasm.

\*\*\*

The Libra Oasis.

It was the gathering place of the seven guilds.

“They don’t have the concept of time.”

The promised time to meet had passed. Originally, the six guilds apart from the Giant Guild, who didn’t participate in this, were supposed to have gathered here 10 minutes ago. But the Ice Flower Guild, Yak Guild and Zeraph Guild hadn’t arrived yet.



The master of the Golden Guild, Seuron, complained. “Hey Zibal. How much more time should I waste? Do you think the time of our guild is so trivial?”

The Golden Guild.

It was the next largest guild after the Snake Guild and Giant Guild. Their self-esteem had recently risen into the sky. The guild master Seuron had acquired a unique hidden class. He was 70th on the unified rankings during the National Competition, and was now ranked 23rd.

The possibilities for further development in the future were endless. It was evaluated that the fighting ability of his class, ‘Soul Predator’ was much higher than Pagma’s Descendant.

“We will wait 10 more minutes. We shouldn’t act on our own.”

The guild master of the Hades Guild, Hao, also reached the limits of his patience. Hao was 16th on the unified rankings. He was a top player who Yura had pointed out as one of the people she couldn’t beat. Zibal didn’t want to have a dispute with them.

‘Anyway, Reidan is vacant.’

In fact, the Snake Guild alone was sufficient to decimate Reidan. But Zibal requested the aid of the seven guilds in order to promote their friendship. In particular, the Giant Guild, the Golden Guild

and the Hades Guild. He could rest assured if he was in an alliance with them. For now.

“Okay, we’ll go trample and plunder Reidan.”

The Snake Guild had 275 people. The Golden Guild had 211 people. The Hades Guild had 70 people.

They stepped towards Reidan without hesitation. A plan to take care of Reidan’s defense troops? There was no need. An army of NPCs wasn’t a match against them.

“Developing such a large city as an agricultural city, Grid has no talent for internal affairs.”

Zibal looked at the vast wheat fields and ridiculed. He turned his gaze towards the strongest magician in the guild.

“First of all, shall we turn these fields to ashes?”

“Leave it to me.”

The magician, Big Boy was about to summon his flames, when...

“Who are you?”

“...?”

Four farmers appeared. The farmers held hand plows, scythes, hoes, etc, in their hands. One of the farmers in a straw hat spoke as he stepped forward.

“You’re filled with killing intent. Are you an enemy of Reidan?”

“Puhahahat!” Zibal started laughing. A farmer dared to question the march of this great army so confidently. “Are you like your master? Even the farmers in this area are dumb.”

Zibal laughed for a while before a cool expression appeared.

“Kill.”

Zibal ordered. It was as easy as catching a fly. To him, the farmers were nothing but flies. Big Boy launched magic towards the farmer.

[Flame Tsunami]

In order to burn the wheat fields at once, he cast a large scale A-grade magic towards the four farmers. The tsunami of flames caused the whole area to become hot, and the four farmers would turn to ash...

“Eh? Ehhhh?”

Big Boy was shocked. It wasn't just him. Everyone here was shocked. When the farmer swung his hoe, the fierce flames disappeared like they were a lie.

“What's this?”

The members of the three guilds couldn't believe what they saw. Piaro threw off his straw hat and laughed brightly. “Welcome to Reidan.”

“Get ready for battle! Heok?”

Zibal realized that something was strange and quickly ordered the guild members. But it was too late. Piaro had already approached.

“Fated to Perish.”

Kwarurung!

Thunder was heard as the hand plow moved.

Puk!

The sharp end of the hand plow was stuck in Zibal's forehead.

[You have suffered fatal damage!]

[You have died.]

“???”

The 2nd ranked user died with a single blow. The more than 550 guild members couldn't recognize the situation properly. On the other hand, Kraugel and Damian were astonished.

“A instantaneous death skill...!”

It was a scam. Piaro was more powerful than they thought.

‘Who the hell is he?’

As Kraugel and Damian felt deep doubts, the members of the three guilds were in great confusion.

“W-Who are you?”

It was a strange sight to see hundreds of guild members step away from one farmer. Piaro introduced himself.

“I am a farmer of Reidan.”

It wasn't a lie. Now he really was just a farmer. In fact, he received a monthly salary of 73 silver from Administrator Rabbit.

It was fun to save the money. For reference, Rabbit received 5,300 gold every month.

# Chapter 251

---

“I am a farmer of Reidan.”

‘Bullshit!’

It wasn’t convincing that the monster who killed Zibal was a farmer. What idiot would believe him? The members of the three guilds thought Piaro was mocking them. But their emotions were more fearful than angry.

In the case of the Snake Guild, they wanted revenge for their murdered master, but were unable to move. It was because their legs were shaking after seeing the hand plow covered in their master’s blood.

‘Stronger than a boss monster! I will die if I get hit by that hand plow!’

The penalty that occurred due to death was fatal. Experience dropped and there was a chance of losing items. They had to deal with such a monster? The executives cried out to the guild members who were overwhelmed by Piaro’s strength.

“What are you doing? The opponent is your master’s enemy! Get revenge, even if you have to sacrifice your lives!”

If they stepped back with fear, they would lose their prestigious status. They would become a laughing stock and eventually

dissolve. The guild members recognized this fact. They no longer hesitated and besieged Piaro.

‘Fuck. Yes! I’d rather die! It’s better than the guild being ruined!’

‘I will kill him, even if I have to die!’

The benefits that the guild gave them were astronomical. The guild couldn’t be lost. The determination of the Snake Guild members was passed onto Piaro.

Piario smiled.

‘How many battlefields have I been on?’

In the days of the Red Knights, Piario’s life was war and the battlefield was his home. He felt joy as he recalled the days when he was surrounded by hundreds of enemies and his colleagues. His blood was boiling.

“This is exciting.”

It was different from a spar. There was no need to suppress his strength. It was a chance to unleash the Supreme Swordsmanship that had grown by working in the fields for several months and training with strong people.

He went on a rampage.



Puok!

“Keok.”

A Snake Guild member was pierced in the heart with a hoe. Piaro was proficient in the hoe after using it for several months. He narrowed the gap and killed the opponent before they realized.

“This bastard!”

After their master, their colleagues were killed(and by farming equipment), so the Snake Guild members were outraged. Their anger now outstripped their fear. This was what Piaro wanted.

He withdrew his hoe and used Supreme Swordsmanship, 5th style. The waves of light formed a square and swirled around the enemies. It was a wide-range skill that couldn't be defended or avoided. Blood flew from all sides, like a spider web. It was an unbelievable sight because there wasn't a single drop of blood from Piaro in the center.

Piaro's gaze headed towards Asuka.

Asuka. In the past, she was the berserker who drove Grid to the defensive. Piaro could see her strength with one glance.

“How dare you aim for the Young Lady!”

Black Teddy summoned five bears to block the rushing Piaro. They were white bears wearing sunglasses. Their red cloaks flapped nicely as they unfolded their martial arts and intercepted Piaro.

Kuwaaah!

They were very fast and strong. It was also difficult to find a gap in their solid formation. They could even fight against a 3rd advancement class. However, they met the wrong opponent.

[Cola Bear 1 has disappeared.]

[Cola Bear 3 has disappeared.]

“Heok.”

After blocking the attack with the hoe, he counterattacked with the hand plow. Piaro repeated this process and the bears fell helplessly before him. They weren't bears, but puppies. Black Teddy was able to realize it.

‘H-He is on a different dimension.’

The executives of the Snake Guild were going crazy.

‘Where did Grid pick up this monster?’

A named NPC. It wasn't easy to meet them, and impossible to capture them. They had a huge influence on Satisfy's world, so it was virtually impossible for a user to obtain one. However, Grid had one as a subordinate. He even seemed to be a farmer.

The executives couldn't even be jealous. It was amazing. No, it was a surprise that was beyond awe. Grid was incredible.

Puk! Puk! Puk!

Piaro completely destroyed Black Teddy's bears and immediately hit him with the hand plow.

[You have suffered 7,350 damage.]

[You have suffered 7,350 damage.]

[You have suffered 7,350 damage.]

“Heeok?”

It was fixed damage that ignored defense. It was the manifestation of qi.

Black Teddy died. The first ranked user in the pet rankings died because of a hand plow. But he wasn't ashamed. Hadn't this hand plow killed the second ranked user? It was fortunate that the

rumor ‘Black Teddy died from a hand plow!’ was suppressed by ‘Zibal died by a hand plow!’

[You have died.]

Black Teddy couldn’t read the orbit of the hand plows and eventually died. Everyone watching was at a loss for words.

Zibal was killed first by a hand plow, but people thought it was due to the ‘instantaneous death’ skill being activated.

But they could see that the instantaneous death skill wasn’t the problem. Piaro’s basic attack power was too strong. It was like an upgraded version of Hurent’s Aura Master. Who could endure it?

Among the people standing like a stone statue, Asuka burned with determination. She was a berserker. She was strong in a crisis. Due to the correction effect of the ‘Berserk’ passive skill, fear began to change into pleasure. Her aggressive tendencies were maximized.

“I will get revenge for what Grid did to me in the past by killing Grid’s subordinate!”

Asuka proclaimed and grabbed her legendary item ‘Ainas’ Sickle.’

Piario encouraged her, “Please have strength.”

He wasn't Duke Grid's subordinate. Well, this misunderstanding didn't matter.

Chwaruruk!

Asuka threw the sickle as hard as she could. As the chains unfolded, the tip of the sickle dropped like lightning.

“Hoh, good skills.”

Piario admired and defended against the sickle with his hoe.

‘He was caught!’

Asuka smiled with satisfaction. She grabbed the chain and pulled the hoe towards her.

“This is great technique and strength.”

Piario praised. After pulling him close, Asuka swapped to Euprates' Greatsword. Indeed, the power was brilliant. As a tycoon's daughter, she owned several legendary items.

“Die!”

Euprates' Greatsword distorted the atmosphere. It was the

moment when the ultimate skill of the 3rd advancement berserker, Madness' Wrath was unfolded through the greatsword. Piaro's excited expression cooled.

“Your greatsword techniques are lacking. Especially when compared to Duke Grid.”

Asuka was the guild's number two and ranked 31st overall. It meant she was as strong as the Overgeared members. But no matter what she did, she wasn't a match for Piaro. Supreme Swordsmanship's 4th style completely neutralized Madness' Wrath, then he linked it with the 1st style.

Peeng!

Cracks appeared in the greatsword and the hand plow struck Asuka.

[You have suffered fatal damage!]

“Kyak!”

A berserker's defense was weak. She invested all her points in strength and agility, and neglected stamina. But even so, for a skill to decrease her health by two-thirds? Asuka was unable to deal with the destructive power and collapsed. But she quickly stood up. A berserker's physical ability rose in proportion to their lost health. She became stronger the more injured she became.

“The real fight is from now on!”

Asuka swapped out the broken greatsword to ‘Heroic Death Spear.’ Then she moved the spear in a dazzling manner. Piaro was disappointed again.

“Your spearmanship is unremarkable compared to Viscount Pon.”

Chaaeng!

His hoe blocked the coarse spear. It was followed by his hand plow. It was a technique that combined dual wielding the hand plow and hoe with his judgment. Asuka couldn’t believe it.

Puk!

“Ahat!”

Asuka cried out as she was hit in the forehead. She was hit twice by the hand plow and her health was now at the bottom. It was truly absurd. She gritted her teeth. Then she lifted the sickle again and pushed on with her increased physical abilities. But her lacking control skills couldn’t deal any harm to Piaro. She attempted to take his bones and flesh as a last resort, but Piaro wasn’t easily hit.

The hoe and hand plow barrier only gave Asuka despair. In the end, she also died. It was the moment that embarrassing rumors

about ‘dying from a hand plow!’ spread.

The Snake Guild’s chief of staff, Box, quickly grasped the situation.

‘We can’t beat him.’

Piaro was an absolute existence. The perfect combat ability combined with high stats was a wall that couldn’t be crossed with the users’ current level. Box bet that even if the 1st ranked Kraugel was in this place, he wouldn’t be able to hurt Piaro.

‘The user’s level must be at least 360 in order to compete with him. Then...’

He gave up on killing Piaro. Box made a decision and shouted to Seuron and Hao, “We will tie up his feet! You must smash Reidan during that gap!”

Yes, they couldn’t go back with only losses. Their initial purpose was to devastate Reidan. They had to slow down Grid’s expansion. For that, Box would sacrifice anything. Box’s decision made Seuron and Hao laugh.

“Good judgment.”

To be honest, Seuron and Hao were reluctant to deal with the NPC called Piaro. They wanted to retreat, but they no longer needed to thanks to the Snake Guild’s decision. The Snake Guild



would tie up Piaro's feet while they headed towards Reidan.

So what if three farmers were blocking their way? Were named NPCs so common? The other three farmers were clearly weaker than Piaro. Maybe they were just ordinary farmers.

Soul Predator Sueron led the way. He had already recovered the souls of the Snake Guild members who died, and summoned and fired three soul spears.

“Get lost.”

The unique skill, Soul Spears, had the ability to deal a deadly blow. It was difficult for even top rankers to deal with the attack power, so the three farmers would be killed instantly. However.

Peeng!

One farmer biting a potato summoned magic and destroyed a soul spear.

“What?!”

The eyes of Seuron and the 211 Golden Guild members widened. However, that wasn't the end. Another farmer took out a shield and gently blocked two soul spears.

“W-What are these guys?”

The named NPC called Piaro wasn't the only one! Seuron had to find a hole. He targeted the only farmer among the three who hadn't moved.

“That fellow!” He must be an ordinary farmer! Break through him!”

“Yes!”

The Golden Guild vigorously replied. The farmer, Kraugel, faced them and laughed.

# Chapter 252

---

Sueron jumped with surprise. Rather than the farmer panicking...

‘Laughing?’ Why was he acting so freely? ‘It can’t be!’

He was a named NPC as well?

“Stop!”

Seuron sensed something and urgently shouted. But it was too late. Three vanguard members came close to the farmer and brandished their swords. The ominous prediction was true.

Kwakakakang!

A small sickle that was less than 40cm long. The farmer blocked the attacks coming from three directions with a single swipe of the sickle. He predicted where the opponent would attack and easily responded. The Golden Guild members were baffled. It felt like their minds were being read.

Chaaeng!

The farmer pushed away the three swords that were in contact with the sickle. Then the owners of the swords had both arms thrown into the air, exposing a gap. One farmer overwhelmed the

strength of three people alone.

No, it wasn't just that. This was just a trick. He maximized his strength by exerting the enemies' original strength.

‘Does this make sense?’

The Golden Guild members were confused. The farmer's palm... No, it felt like they were dancing on Buddha's palm. The farmer attacked them.

Puk!

“Kuaaaak!”

The sickle precisely entered the gaps in their armor and injured the Golden Guild members. However, it didn't cause any fatal damage. The attack power was minuscule compared to Piaro, who was furiously killing the enemies.

“This isn't a match for my skills.”

Kraugel complained and abandoned his sickle. Then he pulled out a silver sword and cut the necks of the Golden Guild members. It was the moment when Kraugel showed no mercy to his enemies. The dying Golden Guild members felt resentment towards Seuron.

‘Calling him a hole...’

‘Master, how is that a hole...? Damn...’

“Crazy!”

The three people lost their lives and Sauron cursed. He couldn't understand it at all. What the hell was this area? Why were the farmers so strong? It was frustrating. It felt like this was Alice in Wonderland. He lost his sense of reason and shouted curses.

“How rotten! What is this farmer? Does this mean soldiers can be dragon slayers? Dammit! Does this make sense?”

What magic did that bastard Grid have to attract all these talented people? And why were they working as farmers? He couldn't understand it, no matter how much he thought. He couldn't make heads or tails of it. It felt like his heart was going to explode.

His eyes became bloodshot as the farmer suggested to him.

“The damage will only increase if you send out your members. Isn't it better for the master to go out directly?”

That's right. The three vanguard members were level 230. They were higher than the average level of the guild members. There would be a tremendous loss if he made his members face this man. But how could he retreat?

It wasn't possible. Their enemy was in front of them. If the guild master showed his back, he would lose his dignity and sincerity. Seuron had to go. He was confident that he could bring down that farmer. This farmer was definitely weaker than the monster Piaro.

Seuron responded to the suggestion. "Come, I will kill you myself."

First, he would strip the farmer of the straw hat. Then he would watch him die! He took the souls of the dead guild member with Soul Exploitation, and summoned Soul Arrows.

Pepepeng!

Three soul arrows emanated a green light and were fired. It was a formidable speed. However, it didn't reach the speed of Jishuka's arrows. It wasn't at a level that could threaten Kraugel. Kraugel moved his head to avoid the arrows.

Sueron didn't panic. Rather, he smiled.

"Soul Explosion!"

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

The three soul arrows that passed by Kraugel exploded. It was the moment when a unique skill that inflicted damage in proportion to the caster's attack power and magic power was activated.

Sueron anticipated that the farmer would be torn to rags. However, the smoke from the explosion dispersed and the farmer only suffered minor damage. The farmer advised Seuron, “Your skill linkage is delayed. So it’s easy to react. Would you like to practice so you can link it faster?”

“Nonsense!”

It was impossible to speed up the linkage of skills. It was fast enough right now. And the timing was perfect. The other opponents normally died from this combo.

‘You are the strange one!’

Seuron barely swallowed back the words.

“What are you trying to teach me?”

Seuron’s pride was wounded. He summoned a weapon from the inventory.

[Brutal Heavy Sword]

It was the weapon he obtained after clearing Vasco’s labyrinth with his guild members. It was a legendary one-handed sword that increased the wearer’s strength and intelligence simultaneously. It was good since a Soul Predator’s skills were affected by both attack

power and magic power.

Sueron wielded the sword firmly. Kraugel defended with White Fang.

Kaaang!

Sparks flew as the two men's weapons collided.

Chaaeng! Chaeeeeeng!

The two people exchanged 13 blows on the ground and in the sky. Seuron's cloak and Kraugel's straw hat crossed several times as a brilliant battle was staged. Kraugel's eyes shone.

‘He is a good swordsman and his Sword Mastery level is high.’

Soul Predator. The skill tree seemed like a magician type, but it was closer to a magic swordsman type. Seuron strengthened himself with Soul Transference.

Chaaeng!

The enhanced attack power increased Seuron's momentum. The sword became much heavier than before. Nevertheless, he couldn't overwhelm Kraugel. Kraugel taught himself how to handle steel. He moved like water and subdued Seuron.



“Eek!”

Seuron became angry as the fight didn't proceed the way he wanted. But it was a basic thing to not lose consciousness during a battle. He tried to be as calm as possible. There was a conflict between reason and emotion. In that moment, reason barely triumphed.

Seuron's sword regained its tranquility.

“I will win! Soul Plundering!”

[Soul Plundering]

Takes away some of the soul of the living target. The opponent who lost a part of their soul will find their body hard to control for a certain period of time.

‘A good skill.’

Kraugel admired it as the heavy sword struck his shoulder. It was originally a blow to the heart, but Kraugel minimized the damage.

‘Moving without a soul!’

The farmer felt stronger the more Seuron thought about it. Seuron started to shake.

‘I thought I was stronger...!’

Soul Predator was a combat specialized class that had a variety of useful combat skills.

Kraugel and Agnus weren’t involved in external activities, so they were excluded. However, if he was compared to the current Overgeared members and Grid, Seuron was convinced that he was the strongest.

But now he realized he still had a long way to go. An NPC was grabbing at his ankles. Maybe he was weaker than he thought.

‘I need to focus on levelling up for a while.’

Seuron decided, while Kraugel became more thrilled after seeing his injury.

‘It is more than rumored.’

Kraugel highly appreciated the Soul Predator class and Seuron’s swordsmanship. It was enough to say that Seuron was one of the strongest among the users he met.

‘Fun.’

Originally, Kraugel wasn’t interested in PvP. His only concerns were adventuring, hunting, and raids. But living with Piaro

changed this. It was fun to battle the strong. PvP had a different flavor from raids. This process was clearly connected with becoming a sword saint. Next year, it might be good to participate in the National Competition.

“Kukukuk.”

‘What is this?’

Seuron looked at the farmer who seemed crazy because he started laughing at his blood. Kraugel approached him. The sky above the sky. This title referred to the person with true talent who reached this infinite ground.

“Moonrise Sword.”

“...!”

At this moment. Seuron realized it. The farmer in front of him hadn’t used any skills until now!

Susuk. Sususuk.

Two moons were in the night sky. Kraugel activated the stealth function as he stood under the moonlight. Seuron had to concentrate in order to not miss the disappearing Kraugel. But how could he detect Kraugel, when even Piaro couldn’t?

Kraugel completely faded away. Seuron was frightened as he consumed the souls of five Snake Guild members and activated Soul Armor.

Pahat!

A transparent green armor was laid over Seuron's armor. Seuron was prepared for the attack that he knew he would face.

Jjeejeeong!

“Ku...heok!”

Sueron received a strong pressure from an unseen place. He would've been dealt a fatal blow if it wasn't for Soul Armor. He barely withstood the offensive and started sweating.

‘My Soul Armor was destroyed!’

The damage that Soul Armor Lv. 2 could absorb was 17,300 damage. It was destroyed with one blow and he was also damaged.

‘This monster!’

Seuron was stumbling with agitation when a straw hat appeared. The eyes shining under the hat was enough to cause a chill to go down Seuron's spine.

“Mole Ascension.”

Pahat!

White light soared from the ground. Seuron was astonished but he couldn't react. Had he ever felt this helpless since becoming a Soul Predator? Absolutely not. This was the first time.

“Sh...it! You! Who the hell are you?”

Seuron questioned Kraugel as he coughed up blood. Then Kraugel was reminded of Piaro's introduction and replied, “I am a farmer of Reidan.”

“That term...!” It was spoken like it was the same as a knight or magician. “You can't just be a farmer!”

Kraugel nodded at Seuron's question.

“That's right. I am a farmer.”

It was true. For the next two weeks, Kraugel was a farmer. He was provided three meals a day and a snack, just like other farmers. Accommodation was provided because it was a short-term contract. However, there was no salary.

“Dammit!”

Seuron was tired of the joke and used 11 souls to activate Soul Prison in an attempt to restrain Kraugel. This was the strongest binding skill that could trap even a level 280 boss monster for 5 seconds.

“Taste inevitable death.”

Seuron squeezed out all his mana and created 39 Soul Spears. Then he launched it towards the farmer. Once he linked Soul Explosion, the farmer was destined to be scattered to pieces. At that moment.

“White Light Sword.”

Kraugel’s White Light shone with an intense light. The light was glorious enough to eradicate the darkness for a moment.

“Kuk!”

It was like a flash shot. Seuron couldn’t open his eyes at all. It was difficult to control the Soul Spears. The 200 members of the Golden Guild tried to help Seuron, but they couldn’t move. They stopped in place. Hao and the Hades Guild members watching the battle were also forced to bow their heads.

After a moment.

Seuron was dead when the white light faded away and everyone opened their eyes. His heart was pierced by the farmer’s sword and

he screamed as he turned into grey light.

“Run away.”

Hao’s judgment was quick.

# Chapter 253

---

The peak of two billion users, Kraugel.

Hao had met him before. It was one year ago in Elgad Forest.

Elgad's Forest. At the time, the users in the top 100 rankings had to form a party of at least seven rankers to hunt in the forest. Kraugel was playing solo there. He slaughtered the killer spiders and butterflies in Elgad's Forest alone, and Hao realized it.

‘This is a mountain that can't be climbed.’

The dimensions they were in were completely different. The battle sense that perfectly used the terrain, as well as the godly control skills. Hao couldn't even think ‘I want to be like that.’ Kraugel was an awe-inspiring figure and a wall that couldn't be surpassed.

Him.

Hao was praised as a genius, and this was the first time he got a sense of inferiority.

‘Why?’

He was in Reidan. The mysterious farmer fighting Seuron. He was Kraugel. Hao could see it. He had repeated Kraugel's moves



that he saw one year ago over and over in his head. He was able to match Kraugel's movements to the farmer.

“White Light Sword.”

A large-scale attack skill that caused blindness was triggered. Hao stood still as he closed his eyes. Then he opened his eyes to see Seuron turn into a grey light.

“Ha... haha.”

Hao could only laugh. Kraugel easily handled Seuron, who was on the same level as Hao. Indeed, the sky above the sky. Kraugel was still strong. No, he became stronger. His legs trembled as he felt a thrill again.

“Run away.” He commanded the guild members.

Invade Reidan? It was impossible. As long as Kraugel was here, it was an impregnable fortress.

“Run away!”

The Hades Guild retreated.

\*\*\*

“Should we just let them go?” Damian asked.

Kraugel replied, “Then should we chase them?”

“Um... There is no need.”

There was no reason to pursue those running away. They were farmers, not Reidan’s guardian knights. They just needed to protect the fields.

‘I don’t need to fight.’

That’s right. Reidan’s defense was left to Grid and the Overgeared Guild, not their problem. They became involved in the battle in the first place due to Piaro. Reidan was unharmed. It would’ve been big if they hadn’t moved.

‘Anyway, it’s okay now.’

He was also a bit proud at helping protect Grid’s estate.

“By the way, who are you?”

Damian was well aware of Seuron’s fame. He was evaluated to be stronger than Grid. Damien wondered about the identity of the farmer who easily defeated him. The straw hat that hadn’t been taken off over the past week was especially annoying today.

Kraugel smiled. “You aren’t the type of person who will be interested.”

“That’s right.” Damian didn’t deny it. Damian was only obsessed with Rebecca’s Daughters.

“Shit! You damn bastards! They’re running away!”

“Let’s go!”

“How rotten! I won’t step foot on this land again!”

Once the Hades Guild quietly escaped from the farmer, the Golden Guild also started to run away. They knew they weren’t in a position to defend the guild’s honor.

Bland, who was eating his third rainbow potato, expressed his anxiety. “Isn’t dinner time over? Do we have to starve this evening?”

“...”

Damian and Kraugel felt sorry for Bland. They heard he was from a prestigious noble family, but the stress of being taken hostage must be quite large.

\*\*\*

Box, the Snake Guild's chief of staff. The first ranked linker was the last survivor of the Snake Guild.

“This ability is very interesting. It is really great that you can blend the skills of your colleagues, making them more powerful and efficient.”

Piario complimented, but Box wasn't glad. Many of his colleagues killed earlier were also highly praised. But they were eventually killed. In any case, he would die. Box tried a last hurrah. The linker's ultimate skill, Puppet, was deployed as he tried to control Piario.

But it was useless. Piario had grown further through this battle. He approached before Box could use the skill and overpowered him. Even if the skill was activated, he couldn't be controlled by Box.

Puk!

The hand plow was covered by a colourless qi and stuck in Box's forehead. ‘Dying by a hand plow!’ It was the moment when the 275th protagonist of the rumor was born.

“K... Kuock...!”

Box turned into grey light. Piario's eyes were as deep as the sea as he watched silently. Piario had grown steadily since he began his field work in Reidan, and he gained enormous awareness based on

today's battle.

‘I'm not Muller.’

That's right. He was Piaro.

Noble of the Saharan Empire, Piaro.

Captain of the Red Knights, Piaro.

Traitor Piaro.

Great Swordsman Piaro.

Farmer Piaro.

Piaro, friend of Grid, the Overgeared Guild, Kraugel, Damian, and Bland.

Yes, he was Piaro. He was distinctly different from Muller. There was no need to follow Muller's specter.

‘I am enough by myself.’

Shaaaaaah.

The light from the two moons shining on Piaro's body was reminiscent of the Milky Way. An intense and unsteady energy rose, causing the atmosphere to shake around Piaro. At this moment, Piaro became a legend. Was it the sword saint status he had been craving?

No. Piaro already deemed that a 'sword' wasn't necessary. He was able to achieve a lot with a whole range of agricultural equipment such as a hand plow, sickle and hoe. There was no need to be obsessed with the title of sword saint.

[A legendary farmer has been born!]

[Every farmer in the world will look up to him and praise him!]

The notification window about the birth of a new legend appeared in front of all the users connected to Satisfy. It was breaking news in the international media. On the other hand, Damian and Kraugel saw Piaro's evolution directly and were confused.

'Why a farmer?'

Piario was a swordsman. But he became a farmer...

It was shocking. However, Piario was happy. What did it matter if he was a farmer or sword saint? He was already enough. There was no need to discuss titles.

“Pagma... Were you also like me?”

The great swordsman who became a legendary blacksmith, Pagma. Piaro smiled at the thought. A farmer was supreme. If he plowed the land, the land would become fertile. When he wielded the farming equipment, he could destroy hundreds of enemies.

The new legends were a blacksmith and a farmer.

\*\*\*

“Pant pant... Shit, it’s hard to move.”

The desert at night was cold enough to freeze their bones. The morale of the surviving Golden Guild was completely low as they crossed the desert.

‘We were hit by a farmer.’

‘Surely they won’t chase us?’

The confusion and fear from the unrealistic experience became increasingly heavy. The endless desert made the Golden Guild nervous.

Kuwaaah!

Kyaoooooh!

Giant worms and desert toads constantly appeared.

“Shit...! If only Master was here!”

The Golden Guild just barely managed to win against a giant worm. For those with an average level below 230, the western monsters were too strong. They once again realized how strong Seuron was. What type of monster was that farmer to kill Seuron...?

“Pay attention! Or else we will be wiped out!”

The Golden Guild were filled with a desire to live. They gritted their teeth and fought the monsters continuously. But there were some things that couldn't be overcome by effort alone. In the end, there were less than 100 survivors of the Golden Guild remaining. Those who survived had almost all their health, mana and stamina gone.

Where did it go wrong? Why was one of the strongest guilds in Satisfy suffering like this? As all of them fell into deep despair, someone muttered.

“We shouldn't touch Grid...”

“...”



The Golden Guild members hadn't even seen Grid. But Grid was the cause of all of this. Grid was expanding his forces, so the seven guilds felt the need to contain him and invaded Reidan.

The result was this. They were screwed. Their fear of Grid grew. The Golden Guild members were now sick of even seeing the initial G. They pledged several times that they wouldn't step on Grid's shadow in the future.

Kuoooooh!

Something huge was flying in the sky. A red drake.

“This!”

The Golden Guild members were exhausted to the limit, and now they were being troubled by a drake.

“Keep your formations!”

“Aaaagh!”

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

It lost some of its majesty after the advent of Noe, but the drake was still classified as the strongest pet. As it shot out fire, the cooled down sand of the desert burned red. Three men appeared

before the Golden Guild, who were screaming in the sea of fire. They were familiar people to the Golden Guild.

“These bastards... Are they already going back after destroying Reidan?”

A distraught bald man flushed red. He was extremely angry as he wielded his axe at the Golden Guild.

“V-Vantner...!”

The first ranked guardian knight. A monster that boasted an overwhelming tanking ability and had the same strength as an ogre. He defended from the attacks of the Golden Guild with a shield, then slaughtered the members with twin axes.

The destructive power of Beast Master Toon was even scarier.

“You guys dare do something to our city! Grid’s city!”

The silver wristblades became bloody in an instant. It was the blood of the Golden Guild members. The Golden Guild members were falsely accused. They would’ve felt less wronged if they really had shattered Reidan. But they couldn’t even invade properly, let alone shatter Reidan. They were defeated by farmers and ran away before they could even enter Reidan. However, the Golden Guild members were slaughtered because it was believed that they destroyed Reidan.

A savior was needed. The eyes of the Golden Guild rolled back and forth before finding one. Unlike Vantner and Toon, Huroi was watching the situation with a fairly calm expression. He seemed to be the only rational person here.

The Golden Guild members asked him for assistance.

“Huroi! Please spare us! We didn’t do any damage to Reidan!”

“We are greatly reflecting! Please calm those two people down!”

Huroi stared at them begging and crying before speaking.

“Your parents should live a long and happy life.”

“Heok...”

There was a line that shouldn’t be exceeded. It was to mention parents. The Golden Guild members abused by that spiteful tongue realized it.

Huroi was worse than Vantner and Toon.

# Chapter 254

---

‘Genius at fighting’

Hao. He was a ranker who represented the Chinese people. The members of the Hades Guild, who he selected and trained himself, were very strong. They tended to be evaluated lower because of their small size, but that was just from people who weren’t aware.

The Hades Guild’s presence was assured within the seven guilds. They had an average level of 253. This was overwhelming high, despite their small number. A perfect unit of individuals. There was a hierarchical relationship like in the army, and there was excellent teamwork and tactical abilities...

The combat power of the Hades Guild was among the top in the seven guilds.

Kieek!

Kyaak!

The moonlight that shone on the night desert. The Hades Guild marched unceasingly under Hao’s command. The cold temperature, sandy terrain and strong desert monsters didn’t slow down their march.

[Your level has risen.]

“Isn’t this place the best hunting ground?”

“It’s the reason why the levels of the Overgeared members soared.”

The desert monsters were over level 300, so they gave a lot of experience. It was more than imagined. Thanks to this, the level of the Hades Guild members quickly rose. The Hades Guild wanted to stay here to level up.

Hao prompted them. “Don’t be immersed in battle and speed up your march.”

Hao was still nervous. He wondered if pursuers would catch up with them and kept looking back. He was clearly on the edge. The farmer called Piaro killed Zibal in one shot, but the Hades Guild couldn’t understand why their master was afraid of the farmer who took a while to kill Seuron.

“The farmer who defeated Seuron is strong, but isn’t he less than the one called Piaro? I don’t know why you’re so afraid of him.”

Hao spoke the truth. “The farmer who killed Seuron is the sky above the sky.”

“Sky above the sky...?”

Only one person came to mind.

“Do you meant Kraugel?”

“Yes. The straw hat hid his identity, but I was able to recognize him.”

Kraugel. He was the only one who Hao admired and was afraid of. The Hades Guild could understand why their master was so irritated. The Hades Guild members made a fuss.

“This is a serious problem. If Kraugel is Grid’s subordinate...

Grid was already laying the groundwork to be the best force. If Kraugel was added, the growth rate would be unmatched. Hao calmed the guild members who were greatly concerned.

“Kraugel isn’t Grid’s subordinate. They are just cooperating a while for some reason.” Kraugel was the sky. “He is an individual existence who won’t be under someone else.”

“ ... ”

Hao promised, but the Hades Guild members were still worried. Grid had already absorbed the Tzedakah Guild... They wondered if he really could obtain Kraugel as well. But they didn’t speak these thoughts out loud. It was only a guess and they didn’t want to worry Hao.

“Hurry.”

“Yes.”

They moved away from Reidan. They would soon reach the end of the desert and enter the empire’s territory. Then they would be safe. The Hades Guild’s march accelerated. Nobody seemed able to stop them as they slaughtered the desert monsters while moving forward.

But life was a series of walls. Once they crossed one wall, a new wall was waiting for them. This was a story that applied to everyone.

“Stop here.” A voice stopped the Hades Guild, as if the person knew they would come here. “Even if you are leaving, shouldn’t you be punished?”

The youth with silver hair. Lauel. One of the 10 Rookies. No, it was funny to call him a rookie now. He had grown at a monstrous rate after joining Overgeared and was now one of the powerhouses in this world.

“The price for stepping on Duke Grid’s territory with your dirty feet, pay it with your lives.”

Lauel spoke coldly while the Overgeared members stared grimly from behind him. Hao looked at their faces and stiffened.

‘They might have fewer people, but...’

There were 28 members in the Overgeared Guild. However, Grid was in the empire, Ruby and Sexy Schoolgirl were novices, and Jishuka was active in Bairan with three other members. In addition, Pon, Regas and Euphemina were on separate missions, while Vantner’s group was engaged with the Golden Guild. Except for Lauel, there were only 15 people present.

Meanwhile, the Hades Guild had 80 people. The Hades Guild clearly had the advantage. The difference in numbers was too big. But battles in Satisfy were more about quality than quantity. Hao was reminded of this truth.

The 15 members of Overgeared were 3rd advancement users, while the 80 members of the Hades Guild were 2nd advancement users. The Overgeared members’ victory was obvious. Hao made a judgment call and ordered the guild members.

{All of you, run away.}

The Hades Guild members were upset by the command.

{Run away?}

{What are you saying?}

{I will stop the enemies. Run away through the gap.}



Once again, the Hades Guild members didn't like the order. Surviving by sacrificing their master? Their loyalty couldn't allow it.

{Master should escape while we buy some time.}

{We can't pass Master to the enemies.}

Hao scolded the rebelling Hades Guild members.

{The power of the guild will fall rapidly if all of you are wiped out here. Retreat.}

Sacrificing 79 people or sacrificing one person. Looking at it, the latter was clearly the wiser choice. The Hades Guild knew this better than anyone else. But Hao was 16th on the unified rankings. The level difference between the 11th rank and 50th rank was only four levels, so Hao's ranking would fall exponentially if he died and lost experience.

{The rankings is a mere symbol, so don't get bogged down with it. Run away. We can plan our revenge later.}

The Hades Guild would eventually get their third advancement classes. Once the gap of power was reduced, it would be possible to crush the Overgeared members. The present disgrace would be paid back at that time.

{...I understand.}

The Hades Guild members backed off as they saw their guild master's determination.

“Where are you going?”

The Overgeared members couldn't let them go. No mercy could be shown to the invaders. They tried to chase after the Hades Guild members running away, but Hao blocked their way. He pulled out an iron bar and drew a line in the sand.

“...?”

What did this line in the sand mean? The Overgeared members couldn't understand. Hao let them know the meaning of the line.

“For the next five minutes, you can't cross this line.”

Satisfy didn't have a species selection function. When a character was created, users unconditionally started the game with the 'human' species. If so, did this mean that all two billion users were humans?

That wasn't the case. It was a minority, but a few users were different. There were certain quests that would change a user's species. Hao completed one of them.

Jjejeok! Jjejeok!

The sides of Hao's shoulders and back, as well as the skin near the chest and abdomen were split open, revealing the red scales hidden inside.

Flap.

A pair of wings emerged from his back, while the whites and the pupils of his eyes turned gold. Half draconian. That was Hao. The power of a draconian increased his strength, agility, health and resistance by 10%. He also got an incomplete flying ability and fire ability. The disadvantage was that he couldn't use most of the skills available to humans, but the draconian Hao was less likely to rely on skills.

He had the ultimate physical form, so he relied on this and secondary weapons to win. The transformation into a draconian maximized his combat power.

{Toban, Laella and Zednos. The three of you, please handle Hao. The remaining personnel will chase after and destroy the enemies.}

Lael ordered. Hao was one of the strongest PK users, so three people should be enough to handle him. Lael judged the situation and issued the command.

“Only three? Are you looking down on me?”

Hao scoffed as he saw the three people take a triangular formation.

Chwaruruk!

Hao suddenly used a chain and pulled Toban's shield towards him. It was very fast and delicate control. Toban wasn't prepared and his body leaned heavily forward. Hao hit the back of his head with the iron bar then aimed at Laella.

The bewildered Laella defended with magic stored in her orb, but her mistake was using non-targeted magic. It was virtually impossible to hit Hao with non-targeted spells. This was the reason why the 5th ranked Yura evaluated that she wouldn't win against Hao.

Peeok!

“Kyak!”

The weapon accurately struck Laella's heart. She suffered a great deal of damage and sat down. Hao didn't hesitate as he linked a combo to kill her.

“Shit! Stop it quickly!”

Laella cried out and Ibellin moved. The blue flamberge that Grid

made for him after his third advancement class tore towards Hao.

“Newbie.”

Hao burst out laughing. Ibellin came at him from the front with such a low level of skill.

Chwaruruk!

A secondary weapon. They were difficult to control, so most users didn't use them.

Hao had the Secondary Weapons Mastery. He threw a chain and tied up Ibellin's wrist. Then he used the power of the draconians to blow him away, before aiming his iron rod at Laella's belly again. Laella's body was thrown into the air, then the iron bar rotated and hit Laella's slender neck.

“Uh...!”

Laella groaned as her blood soaked the sand. As a magician, she couldn't bear Hao's attack power. She would've died already if it wasn't for Toban's defense buff and Zednos' shield. Hao saw that she was stunned and aimed at Zednos. Zednos didn't have time to cast a spell due to Hao's speed, and had to concentrate on defense. Then a shield appeared before him.

Toban had recovered and protected Zednos.

Peeeeeeong!

Something unbelievable happened the moment the iron bar collided with the large shield. The Overgeared Guild's strongest tanker. No, the best ranker in Satisfy, Toban was pushed back two steps.

Toban expressed his displeasure.

‘This guy!’

Hao was able to pinpoint exactly where to hit on Toban's shield to apply great pressure. Toban felt like he was facing Piaro. Hao's skills were truly amazing. At the very least, he was on the level of Pon and Regas.

Hao looked around at the Overgeared members and declared, “Four minutes. I can endure for four more minutes.”

It was already one minute after his five minute declaration. The Hades Guild was gradually moving away from this spot. After four minutes, it would be too difficult to chase them.

Lauel was irritated and changed his order. “First of all, take him down first!”

The Overgeared members aimed all their power at Hao.

# Chapter 255

---

Strength was relative.

The Overgeared Guild was called a group of powerhouses, but it was possible to distinguish between the weak and strong within them. Based on the Overgeared members, Lael was part of the weak group.

Grid, Pon, Regas, Jishuka, Faker, Euphemina, Toon and Vantner, all the strongest ones were missing.

‘But even so...’

15 against 1. Hao really endured for five minutes. To be exact, it was five minutes and three seconds. It was something that even Pon or Regas couldn’t do.

‘The two of them would’ve killed almost half of us in three minutes, then they would’ve died.’

If it was Grid?

‘...We would be wiped out in a few minutes.’

Grid’s abilities had grown by leaps and bounds since the doppelganger raid. Lael didn’t want to imagine it. He clicked his tongue. Then he analyzed Hao.

‘Clever.’

A person who transformed into a draconian. Hao fully utilized the characteristics of a half draconian as well as the desert landscape. Aiming Flame Explosion at the sand constantly caused a sandstorm to appear, obstructing the vision of the Overgeared members. He also used his flying ability to avoid fatal skills.

Rather than killing his enemies, he thoroughly fought in order to buy time. His persistence and control of the chain that tied down the Overgeared members was enough to cause a thrill.

“Kill me.” As Lael was deep in thought, Hao was caught by Ibellin and spoke proudly. He didn’t fear death. He was satisfied that he allowed his guild members to retreat safely.

On the other hand, the faces of the Overgeared members were completely twisted. 15 people were tied up by one person for more than five minutes, causing their pride to be crushed. Hao comforted them. It was the attitude of a winner.

“You aren’t weak. You are stronger than the rumors. However, I am just exceptional.”

It wasn’t arrogance. Hao’s words weren’t wrong. The Overgeared members were stronger than in the past due to Piaro, but Hao surpassed them.



‘Hmmm.’

A smile appeared on Lael’s face. In fact, in this battle, Lael felt a bigger sense of defeat than anyone else. He was the one who led the group. He was proud of the tactics that he could carry out.

The chief of staff, Lael, was unable to cope with Hao properly. Lael was tactically defeated by Hao. But.

‘I won.’

Lael’s smile widened. He told Hao the truth.

“The Hades Guild’s retreat failed.”

“Bah, what benefits are there to lying now?”

“It isn’t a lie. Check the guild chat if you don’t believe me.”

After a moment. Hao’s eyes trembled.

“You..! What did you do?”

Lael explained. “I guessed the retreat route of the Hades Guild and left someone there. I also ordered the team wiping out the Golden Guild to head there when they finished.”

A separate force. There was Faker who had recovered from wiping out the Ice Flower Guild. Currently, the Hades Guild was isolated by Faker and Huroi's group at the border between the empire and the western part of the Eternal Kingdom.

“Dammit...”

Hao was frustrated. If they were going to die anyway, he should've at least taken out one more enemy. He was feeling regret when Lael suggested, “Are you willing to serve Duke Grid?”

“What?”

The leader of one of the seven guilds, the one in the lead of billions of people, why should he go under someone? In addition, it was under a trivial guy, whose only advantage was his legendary class?

“A dragon can't serve a dog.” Hao refused.

The faces of the Overgeared members turned red as Grid was called a dog.

“Don't bother with anything unnecessary and just kill me!”

Ibellin had suffered from being dragged by chains throughout the battle, so he was angrier than anyone else. Lael restrained him as he was about to stab his flamberge through Hao's heart. Then he asked Hao.

“Grid is the sky, not a dog... If he proves this fact, will you serve him?”

Lauel coveted Hao. It wasn't just due to his powerful force. The noble spirit that sacrificed himself for his subordinates, as well as the appropriate tactical abilities were all coveted by Lauel. He was a necessary person to the Overgeared Guild, who only tended to focus on individual power.

Hao snorted. “There is already a sky.”

Yes, the sky. The sky they were talking about was Kraugel. Grid wasn't a match. Lauel laughed at Hao.

“Okay. I am looking forward to it.”

“...?”

Hao was stunned as Lauel released him. He couldn't understand the situation as Lauel continued speaking, “I'm looking forward to the day we're reunited. I will let all of your guild members go safely, so please don't worry.”

“I won't be willing to serve Grid, even if you do this.”

“Will you serve Grid if he proves that he is the sky?”

“Yes, but...”

How could a dog or cow become the sky? Lauel grinned triumphantly at Hao.

“Watch his path. You will soon know that he is the only sky.”

“...Hah.” Hao laughed. Was this the level of a fanatic? It felt like there was a pseudo-religion based on Grid. “Okay, I understand. I will watch.”

Hao wasn’t expecting anything. He accepted the favor and immediately left this place.

Ibellin didn’t like it and asked Lauel.

“They are the bastards who invaded Reidan for no reason! Why are you letting him go? Are you crazy?”

“Didn’t you hear the report from Huroi? According to the Golden Guild’s statement, isn’t Reidan safe? You should think more practically, rather than being overcome by petty grudges.”

“Shit! What will happen if they try to strike again?”

“At that time.” Lauel’s blue eyes froze over. “After we kill them, we will trample on their estates.”

He wouldn't allow an invasion a second time, and there would be no more forgiveness.

\*\*\*

Day arrived. Reidan's fields. In the early morning, the Overgeared members came to where the farmers were sweating. Lael bowed deeply to Piaro. "Thank you for saving Reidan. This great grace, I will spend the rest of my life repaying it."

Piario laughed. "It's okay. I just acting according to the value of the meals."

"Value of the meal..."

The price of a meal for a farmer was 73 silver.

'Reidan is worth 73 silver...'

Lael's feelings were complicated. Lael looked around at the vast farming fields. The harvest was in full swing. Good quality wheat was being produced in large quantities. In the future, the people of Reidan would be able to eat bread, not just potatoes.

This was all due to Piario. Not only did he do the work of 100 people alone, he kept finding sources of water and bringing life to the fields. Despite being a great swordsman, he wasn't arrogant, faithfully carried out his duties, and showed respect.

“However... I heard there were a lot of enemies. How did you repel them by yourself?”

Lauel heard it from the enemies, but he honestly didn't believe it. In particular, there were many people with a strong reputation among the enemies, such as Zibal, Seuron and Hao. Piaro repelled all of them? It was impossible unless Piaro was a legend on the level of Pagma or Muller.

‘It can't be...’ He couldn't imagine that the ‘legendary farmer emergence’ message that appeared last night was referring to Piaro. Piaro aimed for a sword saint. He wasn't a farmer. As Lauel was feeling puzzled, Piaro pointed to three farmers.

One was Bland and the other two were wearing straw hats, so he couldn't see who they were.

“They helped me.”

“Is that so?”

There were more farmers in Reidan who were great warriors? Lauel approached them. The two farmers cutting the wheat with a sickle panicked.

‘I don't want to meet you...’

The 1st ranked Kraugel. He didn't want to let others know that he had been working in the fields for two weeks already. It would be a big nuisance. So he...

“My mother is calling me. I need to go. Logout.”

“...”

Logging out to a parent's intervention. It was a phenomena that frightened many of Satisfy's users. There were people who were forced to terminate the game during a raid because their mother told them to eat. In such cases, the users were registered on a blacklist and it would be difficult for them to participate in a raid group again. Anyway, this happened, so Damian was left alone.

“Eh? Who was just here?”

Lauel was very surprised to see the person he thought was a NPC log out. A user was working as a farmer in Reidan? He must have a high level, so why was he working as a farmer...? Lauel's confusion and doubts poured onto Damian.

“Who are you? Why are you doing field work here?”

“...”

Damian wasn't prepared. He was embarrassed to reveal that a high ranking paladin was acting as a farmer. He wanted to log out. However, he soon changed his mind.

‘He is the person closest to Grid.’

If he explained to Lael why he had to meet Grid, it would be easier to arrange a meeting with Grid.

Suuk.

Damian took off his straw hat. The dark blue, purplish hair caught Lael’s attention.

“Y-You...”

Lael’s eyes shook as the attractive appearance was revealed.

Damian. An exceptional person who rose to become the number two paladin, despite being a paladin of the Rebeccan Church. But one day, he suddenly disappeared from the rankings list so there were rumors that he obtained a hidden class. And he was an otaku. Why was such a famous person doing field work here?

Damian awkwardly greeted the speechless Lael and Overgeared members.

“Hey.”

“ ... ”



# Chapter 256

---

The VIP room in the lord's castle.

Damian sat facing the Overgeared members and opened his mouth. He talked about how he met Grid and the circumstances behind his arrival in Reidan. Damian explained all the facts as much as possible. There was no reason to hide it from the Overgeared members.

The silently listening Vantner started tearing up.

“Struggling to save a beloved woman...! It's truly a beautiful story!”

It wasn't good seeing a big bald man crying. If Pon was here, he would definitely tease Vantner. But Pon was still on the mission with Regas. They had already disappeared for two days. It was estimated that they discovered an instance dungeon and were cut off from the outside world.

Lauel ignored Vantner's runny nose and asked Damian.

“I understand that you have to meet Grid in order to save Rebecca's Daughters. But why were you working in the fields? Someone like you would've been treated very well if you visited the administrator, and then we could've been contacted quickly.”

There were dozens of large and small religions in Satisfy, but the

Rebecca Church was unequaled. The number of members was estimated to exceed 80 million. Damian was a pope candidate, so he would be given VIP treatment wherever he went. So why was he farming?

“That...”

Damian wanted to throw up as the Overgeared members looked at him with confusion.

‘Why didn’t he meet the administrator of the city?’ This was all due to Piaro. But he was too embarrassed to tell them the truth. In addition, his grudge against Piaro disappeared after receiving the hidden quest. Rather, they were friends now.

He covered up the truth. “I originally liked doing farming work.”

“I see.”

People always had a variety of hobbies. There was no reason to lie, so the Overgeared members didn’t doubt Damian’s words.

That’s right. The Overgeared members didn’t know about the atrocities Piaro was committing outside. They couldn’t imagine that Piaro would fight people passing them, then make them become farmers. Damian felt sorry for the second and third victims who would appear in the future.

“Who was the other person with you?”

“An outsider. I don’t know who he is either. He never revealed his identity until the end.”

“I see...”

‘Perhaps I should put the Eyes of Surveillance on him.’

Lauel wasn’t too wary. Piaro would’ve filtered out anyone who wanted to harm Reidan. Lauel trusted Piaro. Now Lauel’s concern was focused solely on Damian.

‘If Grid is the benefactor of the pope...’

The relationship between Reidan and the Rebecca Church would become closer, and there would be an active exchange. If they could build a Rebecca Temple in Reidan, all residents would get the buff effect and there would be priests present. The number of people would also naturally increase.

Lauel grabbed Damian’s dirty hands.

“Damian, the Overgeared Guild is wholeheartedly committed to helping you. I will help you win the pope election, as well as persuade Grid to save Rebecca’s Daughters. Just tell me if you have anything you need.”

This was a pumpkin vine that rolled over. Lauel absolutely

wouldn't miss it. Lael smiled as kindly as possible. It was the smile of hospitality workers. However, Damian wasn't familiar with Lael and was genuinely thrilled.

“So kind...! Thank you! Thank you so much! I will give you a pillow printed with an image of my beautiful Isabel-chan as a present!”

“Huhuhut... I'm glad to be able to help you. The alter ego that I sealed in the past is dancing.”

‘What are they saying?’

‘I don't know.’

The Overgeared members couldn't properly interpret the conversation between Lael and Damian. It was hard to crack.

\*\*\*

Rabbit was aware of Piaro's abilities, even before the Overgeared members knew Piaro's identity. It wasn't difficult to grasp the reality of a person with his discerning eyes. Even so, there was only one reason why he left Piaro as a farmer.

Reidan's finances. If he acknowledged Piaro's skills and gave him the right position, Rabbit would have to pay him a high salary. This would increase Reidan's financial burdens. Rabbit pretended not to know Piaro's true abilities and kept him as a farmer.

As a result, Rabbit got the maximum efficiency for a minimum wage. In addition, the wheat fields were a farmer's domain. The farmer Piaro, who received a salary of 73 silver, defended Reidan by defeating the enemies who invaded his territory.

The result was more than expected. It was truly amazing. But at the same time, it was frustrating.

‘I need to reward him for his performance...’

If Rabbit converted the value of Piaro's work to money, it would be at least several hundred million gold. Of course, Reidan didn't have those type of funds.

‘I have to give him something.’

A granting of a prize was the domain of the lord, not the administrator. Grid was currently away, so it was impossible to give the right compensation to Piaro.

‘Then...’

Rabbit showed the utmost sincerity to Piaro within the scope of his current authority.

[I, Administrator Rabbit, appoint the farmer Piaro to become the wheat fields manager.]

It was the moment when Piaro's salary was raised to 2 gold and 30 silver. It was a wage increase of more than three times. This was the amount of money that Rabbit's conscience allowed.

\*\*\*

[One of the continent's 10 great magicians fighting for Duke Grid!]

The provocative title heated up the Internet all over the world.

The real-time search queries were taken up by 'Grid,' 'Earl Ashur,' '10 great magicians of the continent,' 'seven guilds,' 'Reidan's invasion,' and so on. The news about the emergence of a legendary farmer was buried under all of this.

Bunny Bunny, the one who spread this incident, received a huge jackpot.

'The seven guilds except for the Giant Guild conspired to invade Reidan. In the process, the Yak Guild and Zeraph Guild were ruthlessly trampled on by Earl Ashur.'

The contents and images meant that Bunny Bunny's live internet broadcast reached 300,000, and the cumulative viewers rose to 600,000 in one day. Bunny Bunny not only accumulated an enormous wealth, he also recovered his reputation.

The world's best gaming BJ succeeded in a splendid recovery.

-Grid is amazing. He has Earl Ashur as a subordinate. □ □

-Isn't Earl Ashur the strongest person in the Eternal Kingdom...?  
Wow, really? He really is God Grid.

-I'm living in the US and Grid appears on TV every day. ⇒ ⇒ ⇒ I don't think there is anyone in the US who doesn't know about Grid. ⇒ ⇒ ⇒

-I'm going to school in Japan. After the National Competition, all my Japanese friends ask me about Grid. I am proud to be Korean thanks to Grid-nim. ㅎ

-But what about the four guilds apart from the Yak Guild and Zeraph Guild?

-My friend's cousin's wife's friend is part of the Golden Guild and according to him, the seven guilds were wiped out by the farmers of Reidan.

-Sigh... ㅅㅅ There is a fantasy novelist everywhere. If you are writing a novel, it should at least make sense.

The Korean netizens were particularly excited. They were proud to be Korean every time Grid did something that caught the attention of the world.

But in fact, Grid himself didn't know about Reidan's invasion. The Overgeared members didn't report anything to him because they were afraid it would interfere with his quest. Thanks to that, Grid was able to solely concentrate on his quest.

\*\*\*

The capital of the Saharan Empire, Titan.

Grid arrived in front of Asmophel's mansion after a three week journey and opened his status window.

Name: Grid

Level: 291

Class: Pagma's Descendant

...

Strength: 2,770(+140) Stamina: 1,246(+120)

Agility: 1,626(+110) Intelligence: 711(+310)

Dexterity: 1,634(+660) Persistence: 958(+110)



Composure: 658(+110) Indomitable: 913(+220)

Dignity: 1,566(+110) Insight: 1,406(+110)

Courage: 602(+110) Demonic Magic Power: 31

...

The stats were beyond overwhelming. Due to the penalty that happened when producing his fifth legendary item, his stats growth rate was several times slower than it was in the past, but he wasn't disappointed.

He still grew when making items and the titles he acquired after much hardships also significantly increased his stats. He had items, skills, and now control. Grid could confidently assert, 'I am the best.'

He had reached his peak after living 28 years. His confidence and motivation boiled over.

"Asmophel." The person who framed Piaro as a traitor. "Now it's time for you to lose."

The red light of the Slaughterer's Eye Patch shone as he put on the white Hooded Zip Up.

\*\*\*

Asmophel was a noble and sincere man. He was born as the eldest son of Earl Pedro, one of the three fingers of the emperor and loyal to his role while suffering from severe pressure. He didn't neglect training in the sword according to the laws of his family. As a result, he joined the Red Knights at a young age and raised his reputation.

This was a life of fragility. He built new achievements almost every day and expanded his social network. Amosphel was praised as a pillar of the empire along with his closest friend, Piaro. But he lost everything the moment he fell for Empress Marie's trick.

He stabbed the dagger in the hearts of his friends and colleagues. Every day was a nightmare.

“Damn bitch!”

Ku tang tang tang!

Amosphel knocked over the table filled with alcohol.

Empress Marie. He borrowed the power of alcohol to forget about that damn woman, but he couldn't forget. Her intense beauty couldn't be erased from his mind.

“Piaro...! My friend!”

He was sorry. Really sorry. He had shouted it over a hundred times already. But he was well aware that his heart couldn't be passed onto Piaro. That made his heart more pained.

“What’s going on?”

The knights heard the fuss and came running. They wore red armor. They were knights loyal to Marie, who watched over Asmophel under the name of protection. Due to them, Asmophel was trapped in this mansion for years.

“Dog scum...”

Asmophel didn't hide his hatred and anger. He looked around to find a weapon. But there were no weapons. The knights whispered to each other before bringing over a magician. It was a black magician. Asmophel trembled as soon as he saw the black magician.

“S-Stop!”

He tried to resist, but it was useless. He suffered a serious injury from Piaro and his body and mind had been compromised by drugs and black magic for years. Therefore, he now had a weak iron will.

Teong!

A powerful brainwashing magic was used and Asmophel's angry and fearful face became expressionless.

“Who is Piaro?”

“A traitor of the empire and your enemy.”

Asmophel's eyes became wet as he answered the questions without hesitation. It was the remnant of the tears he shed before being brainwashed.

# Chapter 257

---

The task of the Yatan Church was to create chaos in the world.

It was to create an environment where dark magic was activated by drawing out the pain and despair in people's hearts, then bringing the 33 great demons to the earth.

It was the will of God Yatan.

\*\*\*

Three years ago.

Emperor Juander recruited top healers and priests from all over the continent. It was to save Empress Aria, who was on her deathbed. But nobody could heal Aria. The healers and priests said it was impossible unless the legendary Saintess appeared.

The gold piled up like a mountain and the imperial treasures didn't help. Aria, the mother of the imperial princes and princesses. Juander had to watch as his dear wife died.

After Aria died.

Juander truly loved her, so he fell into a deep sorrow. He neglected the affairs of the empire, drank every night, and became ill. It was his 2nd Empress, Marie, who comforted him. She was

the mother of the 4th Imperial Prince and had an intense beauty.

Thanks to her devotion, Juander managed to overcome his grief. From then on, Marie's world opened. Juander overcame his sense of loss thanks to Marie. Therefore, he favored Marie and her power skyrocketed into the sky.

It was the prelude to a common story. Marie did all types of things in order to make her son the next in line. Using her beauty, power, and the black magicians under her, she did all types of wicked things, including dissolving the Red Knights and nobles who supported the 1st Imperial Prince.

Now three years had passed. Marie had an incomparably strong support base compared to the past. Numerous nobles supported her and the 4th Prince, while the reorganized Red Knights were loyal to her.

Marie was satisfied. She had no doubt that her son would be the next emperor. However, the one who laughed at her was her closest black magician, Dive.

Dive. A black magician who served Marie's family before she became an empress. In fact, he had died in the past. It was at the hand of the 7th Servant, Dark Bus. That's right. Dark Bus was currently pretending to be Dive. He was the best at curses in the Yatan Church, and his mission was to confuse the Saharan Empire.

“It won't be long now.”

Once the 4th Prince, who lacked adaptability, became their heir, the forces supporting the 1st Prince wouldn't be able to endure it and a bloody battle would take place in the empire. What would happen if the empire fell into chaos?

Many people would feel despair or die, and the black magic would come to life. It would be enough magic power to call up a great demon!

“I will soon be compensated for my hard work over the last three years.”

It was a really hard three years. The empire's magicians and sages were powerful, so he had to pay extra attention to avoid being noticed. He could never relax. But now the hardships were over.

“Kulkulkul...”

It was the moment when the old man's laughter echoed in the dark room...

“Heok?”

The extensive ward that he installed around Asmophel's mansion was destroyed. Dark Bus perceived this and panicked.

“Intruder?”

Asmophel was a useful tool. He was once praised for being a pillar of the empire, and his emotional despair was very strong after setting up Piaro as a traitor. Dark Bus was obliged to maintain Asmophel's brainwashing. Therefore, he stayed in Asmophel's mansion to watch and protect him.

For the past several years, he had been careful to prevent any outsider from stepping foot into Asmophel's mansion. But at this moment, his amulet was destroyed and an intruder was allowed.

‘My wards were broken so easily?’

It was rare for someone to have this power on the continent. The person would certainly be a great force. But his magic power detected only one intruder. He didn't have to be too nervous. Dark Bus recovered his composure. He went to the living room and found the knights.

The Red Knights had finished their shift and had swapped with the Black Knights.

“Great!”

It was a crisis so Dark Bus needed those he could trust. Dark Bus found it hard to direct the Red Knights. They were too proud. Dark Bus was accompanied by only the Black Knights and left the mansion.



“Attention!”

The soldiers standing on the edge of the gardens found Dark Bus' group and saluted. The soldiers weren't yet aware of the presence of an intruder.

‘It's a covert intrusion...’

But it was useless in front of Dark Bus. He could detect the enemy's position with his magic power.

Ssik.

Dark Bus smiled and shouted to the Black Knights.

“Intruder! Gather your power and take a defensive posture!”

Once the command was received, the soldiers rushed to the entrance of the mansion. There were 120 elite soldiers, two Black Knights and Dark Bus; it was a truly spectacular sight.

Paruru.

Dark Bus used his powerful magic power to detect the intruder. 200 meters ahead.

“Reveal yourself!”

Dark Bus shouted and released his magic power, causing the intruder to be revealed. It was a man wearing a bizarre type of robe and a mask covered his face.

‘Who?’

Black hair and red eyes shining in the darkness. A person he had never seen before.

“Who are you?”

The intruder, Grid, answered Dark Bus’ question. “What else? An enemy.”

Grid didn’t speak for long. It took him three weeks to get here, so he didn’t want to waste time when he had reached the quest’s end point.

Tadat!

Grid gradually narrowed the 200m distance to the soldiers. The elite soldiers of the empire were calm. They pulled out their swords and took the posture of the Imperial Swordsmanship. The soldiers in the rear of the mansion shot fire arrows.

‘Fairly good.’ Grid admired. The soldiers seemed to have a very high level compared to those he had previously seen. ‘But so

what?’

Chaeeeeeng!

He used the Divine Shield to defend against the arrows, then he swapped the shield with Failure.

Jjeejeeeng!

“Ku...heok!”

Five soldiers groaned and were thrown into the air as the blue-white Failure moved. Grid’s strength transcended an ogre, and was at a level that the soldiers couldn’t afford to go against.

“Wahhhh!”

The other soldiers moved forward, trampling on their colleagues. Then Grid used a skill.

“Blacksmith’s Rage.”

Blacksmith’s Rage Lv. 4 increased Grid’s attack power by 25% and his attack speed by 40%. There was also Failure’s option that ‘increased attack power by 20% in the dark.’

Seokeok! Kwajijik!

Under the moonlight, the sword sliced through the armour and shields, damaging the bodies of the soldiers. It was an overwhelming dance. The fatalities would keep increasing if they attacked in ones or twos. There was no chance of victory. The soldiers surrounded Grid and exchanged signals to attack from all sides. Grid laughed as the soldiers prepared a circular formation to isolate him.

‘I can break through with power.’

The concept of tactics was different in the face of a clear difference in power. He could kill more than half of them if he used Transcended Link. However, Grid knew it was a foolish thing to waste skills against these minor opponents. But he also didn’t want to waste stamina fighting them one by one.

‘Let’s take it easy.’

During the past three weeks, Grid’s experience had increased from constant hunting and levelling.

Grid’s vision expanded and he now looked at the entire battlefield. There were flower beds, trees and fountains all over the garden. Grid moved towards the most complex terrain, in order to make it difficult for the opponent to pass.

The formation of the soldiers following him slowly collapsed. The two or three soldiers chasing after him? They died from the greatsword before they could approach Grid.

“Ugh!”

“Kyaak!”

The soldiers were unable to take advantage of their superior numbers as Grid ran through the garden. The soldiers shrank back as the flesh and blood of their colleagues scattered. They no longer tried to chase Grid. The Black Knights determined the flow and asked Dark Bus.

“Sir Dive, please use curse magic.”

“Yes.”

Dark Bus replied and quickly drew a red magic circle. It was the appearance of a magic circle that dramatically increased black magic casting speed. Dark Bus completed the magic circle and started successively casting curses.

“Amplify Damage! Lower Resist! Lower Blessing!”

It was the moment when curse magic that had tremendous power, such as increasing the damage received, reducing resistance and reducing stats all hit Grid.

“Let’s go.”

The Black Knights moved. They were confident that they could destroy the weakened intruder in 10 seconds. Dark Bus hurriedly exclaimed.

“W-Wait a minute...!”

The curse magic didn't work! However, he had no time to say this. The Black Knights who transcended human physical abilities were already close to Grid. Grid faced them and sent them a disturbing smile.

“Pagma's Swordsmanship, Restraint.”

An unknown fear dominated the Black Knights.

“Kuk...?”

“What is this?”

The Black Knights were confused and backed away. Grid stepped away from the fountain and narrowed the distance to them using the footwork of Kill.

Puok!

“...!”

The Black Knight pierced by the blue greatsword couldn't even scream. A large amount of blood spilled out as the black knight flopped down.

“Crazy!”

The other Black Knight cried out as he saw his colleague hit. He barely escaped from the influence of Restraint.

“You! What type of black magic did you use?”

“Black magic?”

Grid contemplated the Black Knights. The Vital Spot Detection of the Slaughterer's Eye Patch was activated, and the red light became darker.

“This is a technique, not black magic.”

Seven golden blades appeared behind Grid.

Puuooooook!

It was a perfect accuracy and speed that was hard to respond to. The golden blades persistently aimed at the seams of the Black Knight's armor. The movements of the Black Knight slowed down as blades were inserted in the joints, then Grid used Link.

Chaaeng! Chaaeng!

The Black Knight tried his best. He swung the sword in his hand. Resistance was hopeless. Link was currently level 5. The ability of the level 255 Black Knight couldn't resist it.

10, 15, 20, 25, 30 times. Dozens of energy blades sliced apart the body of the Black Knight in an instant.

“Cough...!”

Plop!

The ragged Black Knight stumbled and fell into the fountain. The soldiers were at a loss for words as they saw the blood spreading. Two of the Black Knights that represented the empire had died in the blink of an eye? Was it an impossible dream?

The soldiers thought they were having a nightmare. Dark Bus had been baffled that his curse magic didn't work. Now he belatedly noticed Grid's identity.

‘Resisting curses, that blue greatsword and the golden blades...! Yes! He's the one Balak told me about!’

The Fifth Servant of the Yatan Church, Balak. He invaded Bairan along with the Fourth Servant, Neberius, and was defeated. At that time, Balak had said. In Bairan, there is a monster that users a blue greatsword and golden artifact. He killed Malacus and Neberius.



He called himself...

“Templar...”

No.

“Overgeared!”

Why was this person here? He should be in the Eternal Kingdom, so why did he come to the empire to interfere with Dark Bus?

“Do you intend to waste my three years of hard work?”

Dark Bus was frustrated. He wondered if God Yatan had abandoned him.

# Chapter 258

---

‘He’s evidently from the Rebecca Church!’

Why did the person with the power to kill two of the Yatan’s Servants appear in front of him now? It was to kill Dark Bus. Grid was the secret weapon of the Rebecca Church. He existed in order to obstruct the tasks of our church.

Dark Bus misunderstood. It was a reasonable misunderstanding.

‘I must kill him here. If we allow him to run free anymore, our church will be in a quandary.’

Dark Bus continued to cast magic on Grid, who was focusing on fighting with the soldiers. But it wasn’t easy to hit him. It was difficult to find a gap due to Grid’s proper use of the terrain, and the golden blades responded quickly to repeatedly block the magic.

‘Shit... He’s someone who defeated Neberius, and I can’t raise my attack power.’

Dark Bus specialized in curse magic, but his attack magic was weak. He was the best at making a plot and directing the stage, but his combat power was the weakest among the Yatan Servants.

‘Why curse magic...!?’

The fundamental problem was that Grid was fully resistant to curses. Dark Bus couldn't exert any power against him. It was really the worst situation. Dark Bus wondered about what to do and quickly recalled something.

‘Asmophel!’

Asmophel was the next greatest swordsman after Piaro. He lost his skills over the past years, but he was still stronger than a regular knight.

‘He has recently recovered from the wound given by Piaro... In the past few years, he has been constantly taking God Yatan's essence.’

If Dark Bus strengthened him with magic power, the strongest monster would be born.

‘Overgeared! This place will be your grave today!’

Dark Bus shouted with a smile.

“Come out! Asmophel!”

Dark Bus was the friendly courier bringing Grid's quest target to him. He was the popular type.

\*\*\*

Two soldiers crossed the garden and stabbed at Grid. A notification window popped up in front of Grid while he avoided the attacks.

[Your demonic power has increased by two.]

Demonic power. It was unfortunate stat that allowed him entry to hell if the number increased enough. Every time he killed a user or NPC, this stat increased by one.

Hell, the name was ominous, so he didn't want to go there.

‘The useless stat keeps on rising.’

Grid examined the battlefield. There were 61 soldiers remaining. There was also the black magician that was as annoying as a fly. If he killed all of them, his demonic power would rise to 154.

‘There is the possibility that reinforcements will arrive.’

Should he borrow his pet's hands? Would his demonic power soar if he killed a person with his pet? Randy hadn't killed anyone when he fought the White Wolf Guild. Randy played a supporting role while Grid massacred them. Therefore, there was no basis for this premise.

It was worth experimenting. Grid pulled Noe out of the

inventory. There was no need to summon Randy to experiment. He didn't want to distribute his experience between two pets.

“Jjang! The best demonic beast of hell has emerged! Nyang!”

Noe wanted to appear nicely and stretched out his limbs. But his limbs were so short that it looked funny rather than nice.

‘How come he’s getting cuter?’

Grid wanted to say. Along with the sound effect... How was this guy a demonic beast from hell? Grid laughed and confirmed Noe’s status window.

Name: Noe

Species: Memphis

Level: 151

Status: Happy

(Ohhhh! This gorgeous appearance has emerged! Nyahahat!)

...

-Current Skills List-

[Fluidization] [Soul Ingestion] [Scratch] [Bewitchment]

...

Noe acquired the Bewitchment skill when he reached level 150. It was a useful skill that caused the enemy to lose their will to fight. The imperial soldiers might have excellent skills, but they weren't a match for Noe. Noe could hunt much higher level monsters if he used his skills well. Unless Noe wasn't alert and allowed attacks, it was a fraudulent existence.

Grid defended against the magic coming from the black magician with the pavranium, while ordering Noe at the same time.

“Go on a rampage.”

“Nyang!”

Noe flapped his small wings and flew to a soldier. The soldier tried to shake Noe off, but he was very slippery. He lightly moved to the side and stretched out his short legs. The moment the soldier was struck with the soft pink soles, the soldier witnessed stars revolving around his head.

‘It hurts?’

To the soldier's astonishment, blood poured down from the

wound. The cat followed up with the sharp claws.

“Nya nya nya nya nyang!”

Noe wielded his paws at a speed that wasn't visible. The soldier's face quickly became bloody.

“This crazy cat!”

The soldier struggled to shake Noe off. He waved his sword around. But Noe didn't stop attacking while evading. Relentless and cruel. He truly was a demonic beast of hell.

“Ugh.”

Grid's face distorted the moment the soldier collapsed.

[125,600 experience has been acquired. Some experience has been distributed to your pet 'Noe.']

[Your demonic power has increased by one.]

‘Shit!’

It seemed that his demonic power rose even when it was his pet doing the murdering. Therefore, Grid didn't hesitate. He recalled Noe in order to monopolize the experience, and started the

slaughter.

Grid constantly used the Hooded Zip Up and started wielding two greatswords. The soldiers were unable to cling to Grid's body due to the moving barrier of golden blades. They died in vain.

‘Just a little bit more.’

Grid's eyes fixed on the entrance of the mansion after killing three soldiers with the Doppelganger's Greatsword.

There. Asmophel was in that mansion. This long journey ended with killing him. The quest reward would increase Piaro's affinity to the maximum, then...

‘Piaro, be my sword.’

Grid was thrilled with excitement at the thought of gaining a great swordsman as a subordinate.

Peeng!

The warlock guarding the entrance of the mansion fired magic again. Grid frowned.

‘This bug is annoying.’



A black magician was very weak. Based on the level of attack magic used, it seemed like he was only around level 200. But he was a little annoying to Grid. Grid took care of the remaining soldiers and then rushed to the mansion. He was ready to quickly get rid of this black magician and fight against Asmophel.

‘Did he hear the disturbance and already run away?’

The moment Grid was worrying about this...

“Come out! Asmophel!”

The sloppy looking black magician shouted and a slender man appeared. The name above his head was clearly Asmophel.

“...What?”

His target was coming to him? Grid was surprised by the unexpected development and the black magician shouted.

“Your rampage ends here! You will receive divine punishment...!”

Dark Bus couldn’t finish his cry. It was because Grid’s Failure had already hit his neck.

“...!”

Dark Bus fell with a moaning sound that was similar to the wind blowing. The Doppelganger's Greatsword was embedded deep into his heart.

"You...!"

The incensed Dark Bus jumped up. He had the weakest combat power of the Yatan Servants. However, he was a named boss so his health was in the millions. He wouldn't die from these two strikes.

Grid questioned.

'Why hasn't he died yet?'

Grid didn't know Dark Bus' identity. He just thought the opponent was a simple black magician. He assumed that one or two blows would kill Dark Bus. However, he had unexpectedly high health. Therefore, Grid used his insight and confirmed Dark Bus' attack power.

'20,000.'

It was the combat power of a field boss. Then why was he so weak?

'Anyway, I think he is the mid-boss of this quest.'

Grid determined and pulled out Failure and the Doppelganger's

Greatsword. Blood sprang out from both of Dark Bus' injuries. Failure and the Doppelganger's Greatsword rose above his head before once again descending.

Pagma's Swordsmanship, Pinnacle. It exerted tremendous power.

“Kuaaaaak!”

Deep wounds were carved on both of Dark Bus' shoulders. Dark Bus couldn't understand it at all.

‘Mana Shield is useless!’

The opponent was stronger than imagined. If this continued, he would die. It wasn't good to face Grid from the front. Dark Bus hid behind Asmophel. Then he tried to command the brainwashed Asmosphel who was standing around like a doll. But Grid's actions were faster.

“Wave.”

The shockwaves aimed at Dark Bus. He was filled with pain as his neck was struck.

Puok!

[Critical!]

[Failure's option effect is activated, causing the skill 'Bisect' to be generated.]

[Failure's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

Flop.

Dark Bus lost his head and collapsed. It was truly the last attack.

“Why is a magician so durable... Huh?”

Grid clicked his tongue at the persistent health. Then notification windows flashed in front of Grid.

[You have defeated the Seventh Servant Dark Bus, who spread chaos through the world!]

[You have saved the Saharan Empire from a crisis by interfering with the conspiracy of the Yatan Church.]

[Reputation throughout the continent will rise by +3.000.]

[You currently have 28,110 reputation throughout the continent. You can use the Reputation Store when your reputation reaches over 30,000.]

[The title ‘Secret Hero’ has been obtained.]

[The title ‘Yatan Servant’s Slaughterer’ has been obtained.]

[Three Blessed Weapon Enhancement Stones have been acquired.]

[Seven Blessed Armour Enhancement Stones have been acquired.]

[Three deluxe magic stones has been acquired.]

[Dark Bus’ Earrings have been acquired.]

[Dark Bus’ Ring has been acquired.]

[88,052,440 experience has been acquired.]

[Your level has risen.]

“...?”

Grid was stunned. A Yatan Servant? This weak guy?

Asmophel was liberated from the brainwashing and approached Grid, who was staring blankly at Dark Bus’ corpse.

“The hero who punished the wicked Yatan Servant. My savior... Can you listen to my unfair story?”

[‘The True Traitor of the Red Knights (SS)’ quest has been changed to the ‘Hidden Story (Hidden)’ quest.]

What was this situation?

“???”

The question marks in Grid’s head didn’t disappear. Asmophel spoke as Grid made a stupid expression.

“One day, Empress Marie came to me.”

It was a long story. Asmophel explained in detail how Marie approached him and sowed discord with Piaro. The Yatan Essence. A single drop of it could extremely weaken the human mind and cause the body’s mana to become chaotic.

He talked about the process of being brainwashed by Dark Bus and becoming a perfect puppet. Asmophel was trembling and crying when talking about being used, and eventually ruining Piaro and his colleagues.

“Someday... If the day comes when you meet a man called Piaro, please tell him this. I’m sorry. I’m really sorry.”

Asmophel pulled out his sword and pointed it at his own neck. He moved the sword without any hesitation. Asmophel's sword touched his neck. He intended to atone for his atrocities with death.

But he couldn't die. Grid stopped him before the sword could deeply pierce his neck. Grid reached out to him.

“Don't leave it to others and apologize directly.”

The first condition of the hidden quest that Grid obtained was the reunion of Piaro and Asmophel. The people who were praised as the pillars of the empire in the past were about to be reborn as Reidan's pillars.

# Chapter 259

---

The day before the seven guilds invaded Reidan.

Pon and Regas travelled through the desert and discovered a dungeon entrance that reminded them of an ant hill.

“This dungeon isn’t marked on the map, is it?” Regas asked.

Pon checked the map and nodded. Then Regas immediately entered the dungeon. There was no time to stop him. It was a really remarkable performance. Pon followed after Regas.

10 seconds after they entered the dungeon. The entrance to the dungeon disappeared into the desert.

“Wow.”

“This...”

Pon and Regas were surprised after entering the dungeon, and then a series of notification windows appeared in front of them.

[You have entered the Vampire’s Underground City (13).]

[Benefits will be given to the first dungeon finders! The gold and item drop rate in the dungeon will increase by 8%! This benefit will last for 10 days and will disappear when you die.]



It was regrettable that the experience rate didn't increase, but it was still good. But the rest was the problem.

[The entrance of the dungeon is blocked. Contact with the outside world will be blocked.]

[You can't escape the dungeon until you have died or kill the dungeon boss.]

It was an unusual type of dungeon. The most powerful duo in Overgeared were tasked with 'collecting information about the western dungeons and finding the ideal hunting ground.' This was the moment that they fell into a desperate crisis.

"We're trapped..."

Pon was well aware of vampires. They were a top-ranking combat species that possessed attack cancelling skills and enchanting skills. They were especially strong in dark places. The entry of light was completely blocked and they were trapped in a city of vampires...

'We will die.'

As Pon was feeling frustrated, Regas looked at the dungeon unfolding before him with bright eyes.

“Isn’t it unbelievably amazing here?”

High buildings and pointed spires. Gothic buildings reminiscent of Notre Dame Cathedral and Cologne Cathedral were scattered throughout the dark dungeon. The spectacular and dreary scenery overwhelmed the onlookers, but Regas was pleased about finding a new dungeon.

“We should hunt before the buff ends.”

“ ... ”

Anyone would be afraid of the death penalty. In particular, it was more severe for rankers. But Regas wasn’t afraid of death. He might be 12th on the unified rankings, but he enjoyed the challenge.

‘In any case, this is fun.’

Regas smiled at the sight.

Pon smiled and moved.

“Let’s go.”

They had to fight anyway, so they should do it thoroughly. It would be ideal if they killed all the vampires and boss before the buff ended.

Pon and Regas moved in secret. It was the start of an epic struggle.

\*\*\*

Jude. He was Grid's knight and served at the captain of the security forces in Reidan. He would stop any harm from happening to Duke Grid's city.

This was Jude's perspective.

"Captain, get some rest now."

"I don't want to."

There was no rest for Jude. He always tried to maintain Reidan's safety, except for when he slept. He even ate when he was patrolling.

'Captain is admirable.'

'I have to work harder!'

Jude chewing dry bread while patrolling became a model for the soldiers. The soldiers of Reidan became more diligent every day. They endured the harsh training and their growth speed was very fast. They were basically overgeared soldiers, so it was only a

matter of time before they were reborn as elites.

“Today. Reidan. Safe.”

Jude didn't know.

One night a week ago. Hundreds of people had tried to invade Reidan while he was sleeping. He never knew that they were repelled by only four farmers. Was it because he was an idiot with only 20 intelligence?

No. This was Lauel's intent. Lauel didn't announce the Reidan invasion so that the people weren't disturbed. It was easy to cover up. It was night time and the enemies could only reach the wheat fields outside the walls. They even retreated quickly. Only a few people knew about what happened that night. It was sad, but Jude wasn't included in this minority.

“Jude. Today. Strong.”

Today, Reidan was peaceful. The people believed it was due to Jude's merits.

“Captain Jude! Please work hard today!”

“Thank you!”

Jude was proud every time people greeted him. He worked

harder as he patrolled. Everything was for Duke Grid.

\*\*\*

[The hidden quest ‘Fun and Enjoyable Training!’ has been completed.]

As soon as the notification window popped up, Kraugel put down the farming equipment that he had been holding for a month.

‘The end.’

It was disappointing. He was glad to be able to leave on new adventures, but he was sorry to say goodbye to Reidan. In hindsight, this was the first time he’d stayed in one place for so long.

‘I’ll miss it.’

He looked over the vast wheat fields. The fun and precious memories from the last month, which couldn’t be forgotten, were engraved on his mind.

“I’m leaving.”

He approached an impressive middle-aged man with a commanding presence and deep gaze. The fact that he wasn’t a simple person could be seen from his eyes.

Piaro. The first ranked Kraugel couldn't win against him in the end. Kraugel smiled gently and bowed deeply to him.

“Thank you for everything.”

It was the luck of a lifetime that he met Piaro. Thanks to working tirelessly in the field and sparring with Piaro, Kraugel could finally cross the wall. Sword Saint 4th Stage. There was one more step until he became a sword saint.

“You should come back here often. You're always welcome.”

Piaro reached out his hand. It was a dirty hand covered with calluses. Kraugel could see a little bit of the road that Piaro had been walking in the meantime. Kraugel grabbed the hand politely.

“Yes, Brother.”

Then when he next came to visit...

‘I will be the best.’

Kraugel had been greatly disappointed when Piaro became a farmer. He thought that Piaro gave up the road to being a sword saint. But that wasn't it. He realized it when they were together. Piaro didn't give up. He chose a more suitable path for himself.

The class wasn't important. It was important that he was a legend. Currently, Piaro succeeded in combining farming equipment with swordsmanship, and Sword Saint Muller couldn't even be compared. Piaro had become the strongest man. In order to compete with him...

‘I also have to become a legend.’

Sword saint. It didn't matter how long it would take, Kraugel was determined to achieve it. He wanted to become equal to Piaro and face him.

\*\*\*

‘I have noticed.’

A man wearing a straw hat was saying goodbye to Piaro. He didn't take off his hat to the end. Faker followed him and as soon as he left Reidan, he used White Light Steps.

‘It truly is him...’

Faker was convinced after seeing the white light.

‘The sky above the sky.’

The peak of two billion users, Kraugel. It wouldn't be hard for him to throw Faker off his scent. A faint smile broke out on Faker's

face. Kraugel had a relationship with Reidan and might become a positive influence on Grid later on.

\*\*\*

[The hidden quest ‘Fun and Enjoyable Training!’ has been completed.]

It was eight days after Kraugel left. Damian also finished the quest.

“Good!”

Damian confirmed his ascending stats and skill level from the quest reward and was filled with joy. It was unbelievable compensation for such a short period of time. Damian achieved a dramatic growth compared to three weeks ago.

“It would’ve been nice to share this joy with Rin-chan.”

Damian felt regret. He turned his attention to the horizon beyond the wheat field.

‘Now I just have to wait for Grid.’

Today was the day that Grid was scheduled to return. Damian was filled with expectations.



‘If Grid could seal Lifael’s Spear...’

Isabel-chan could be saved. On the other hand, he was worried.

‘What if Grid refuses my request?’

The Grid that Damian knew was a very greedy person. He couldn’t imagine that such a person would help others out of simple goodwill.

‘Lauel says I should have faith, but...’

He had to prepare for the worst. Damian started to prepare the treasures to be given to Grid. He disposed of all items except for his main equipment, and even changed his savings to gold.

‘I’m willing to sell my house...’

Damian firmed up his heart.

And that night.

Grid finally returned. Asmophel was with him.

“Have you been well?”

Grid returned after five weeks and was now level 295. He grew

even more after a long journey, making the Overgeared members overwhelmed. In particular, Lael was feeling a thrill.

‘G-Great!’

The eyes that shone with a red light! It was completely to Lael’s taste. Grid scratched his head as he looked at the people around him. His eyes were tinged with affection.

“What happened?”

Damian shook his head from where he was standing behind the Overgeared members and looked at Grid.

‘What’s this? He doesn’t know that his city was invaded?’

The invasion of Reidan by the seven guilds was a global issue. Even people who didn’t play Satisfy a lot were aware of this incident thanks to the news. Therefore, it was surprising that the person involved, Grid, wasn’t aware of it.

Lael laughed. “Were you so busy with the quest that you didn’t watch TV?”

“Yes. I’m so busy playing the game that I reduced my sleeping time.”

This quest was annoying in many ways. It was a long distance to

Titan and Asmophel's mansion was hard to find. It was due to the wards installed by Dark Bus. Grid trembled as he recalled the day he saw Titan, the biggest city on the continent, much bigger than Reidan. He was lucky that the last boss was weak. If the opponent had been strong, he would've started crying.

'I had a hard time but it was worth it. The reward was good and most of all, it was linked with a hidden quest.'

Grid wanted to finish this quest by reuniting Piaro and Asmophel as soon as possible. Then he would logout, wash, and go to sleep. He also missed his mother's meals. He hadn't seen the faces of his family for several days.

"But why are you talking about the TV? What happened?"

"Just something trivial... You can check it slowly later on."

"I have something separate to do. Where's Piaro's house?"

Grid questioned and Lael and the Overgeared members guided him. Damian noticed that it wasn't his turn yet and followed them silently.

# Chapter 260

---

“This is the place.”

“What?”

Grid didn't know exactly what type of treatment Piaro was receiving. He vaguely thought that Piaro would be well respected and comfortable because he was so talented. But it turned out he was mistaken.

‘I never thought he would live in a place like this.’

[Farmer's House]

A large-scale accommodation where widowers or single farmers lived together.

A great swordsman was staying in a shabby place like this? Grid was baffled.

“Isn't Reidan wide? Why is it so hard to give him a house?”

A great swordsman who was soon to become a sword saint. Wasn't he a good mentor to everyone? Lauel explained to Grid, who was looking at them with rebuke in his eyes. “Piaro himself didn't want to stay anywhere else. He said that he doesn't deserve to live a comfortable life.”

Grid's expression became dark.

‘It's because of guilt.’

He felt guilty for the family members and colleagues who died because he was falsely accused. Maybe Piaro hadn't slept well for a single day in the last few years.

‘On the surface, he acts brightly.’

Recently, Grid thought Piaro had overcome most of the wounds in his heart, but that was a misunderstanding.

“Duke Grid came...”

“That's okay.” Grid restrained Lauel from shouting loudly and asked Asmophel. “Are you ready?”

Asmophel, who had been silent since arriving in Reidan, opened his mouth for the first time. “I have been prepared to die for a long time.”

“Don't talk about dying so easily.”

The reward of the hidden quest ‘Hidden Story’ was that Asmophel's affinity would rise to the maximum along with Piaro. Grid hoped that the named NPC, Asmophel, wouldn't die. But the

problem was that his survival depended on Piaro, not Grid.

‘I am shaking.’

Grid took a deep breath and entered the house. Among the farmers who were exhausted by deep labor, the mediating Piaro was sitting alone. The moment that Piaro’s eyes opened and made contact with him, Grid instinctively realized.

‘He has become stronger.’

Piario was originally strong. However, Grid fought against Piario and was confident of winning. Their skill with the sword might be different, but Grid believed he could defeat Piario if he summoned Noe and Randy.

But he was wrong. Grid’s high insight warned that Piario was a monster that couldn’t be predicted. He was completely different from five years ago.

‘It’s more than Hell Gao’s presence...’

Surely he didn’t achieve the status of sword saint while Grid was gone?

Duguen! Duguen! Duguen!

Grid’s heart started to thump wildly. He imagined Piario

becoming a sword saint and his excitement heightened.

“You have become stronger, Duke Grid.”

Piario stood up and faced Grid. His eyes gazed deeply into Grid.

‘I want to fight.’

Grid wanted to test his skills against the current Piario. Grid was filled with an extreme fighting spirit. But now wasn't the time. The quest came first.

“Did you kill Asmophel?”

Piario's eyes filled with deep emotions. It was a glimpse of his hatred towards Asmophel.

Grid replied.

“I didn't kill him.”

“You didn't?” He wasn't that weak, was he? “What does this mean?”

Piario made a confused expression and Grid pointed to the doorway.

“I brought him to see you.”

“What?”

The culprit of everything! If that guy came here, Piaro would tear off his limbs and grind up his bones! Piaro rushed out of the room right away. His face looked like a scary demon as he saw his enemy. Damian and all of the Overgeared members, except for Grid, were overpowered by his pressure.

“Asmophel!”

“...Piaro.”

A street where darkness descended. The two friends who hadn't reunited in three years, the distance between them was quickly narrowed down.

Kwack!

Piario's hand grabbed Asmophel's neck. Asmophel's pale face twisted. But it wasn't due to physical pain. It was because all his emotions burst out when he saw Piario and he wanted to cry. Piario, who had pulled out his sword, paused when he saw Asmophel's face.

“You..! Why is a shameful person like you shedding tears?”



“I’m...sorry...”

Despite his constricted neck, Asmophel succeeded in spitting out the words that he had cried many times over the years. At that moment, Piaro’s heart thumped. He sensed something.. Maybe the atrocities committed by Asmophel were against his will.

However, that wasn’t an important issue right now. No matter the hidden story, Asmophel’s sin couldn’t be rationalized.

“You!”

Piaro shook off his curiosity and tightened his grip around Asmophel’s neck. Asmophel didn’t resist at all. He just repeated his apologies while being suffocated. He had long been determined to atone with his death.

‘Kill me. Brutally tear me apart, burn my body and drop my filthy soul into hell. It doesn’t matter as long as your grudge is resolved.’

Piaro read Asmophel’s heart through his eyes. He had been friends with Asmophel for 25 years. This meant that Piaro could read his mind through his eyes. That’s why the sense of betrayal was more prevalent.

“This awful bastard!”

The sword flew towards Asmophel’s neck. Grid saw this and

turned his head away.

‘I failed to get Asmophel.’

Asmophel would die like this. Unfortunately, it wasn't a situation he could intervene in. Grid judged this and was about to retreat.

“Shit!” Piaro cursed. Grid turned his head again to see that the sword was stopped underneath Asmophel's jaws. “Dammit!”

Piario threw Asmophel away. Then he sat down. His noble friend, Asmophel. A great man and friend until the day of betrayal. Piario was the person who knew him better than anyone.

“Let me hear your story.”

He wasn't about to forgive Asmophel. He had just been curious since a long time ago. Why their relationship ended in such a catastrophic manner, Piario wanted to know it.

“ ... ”

Asmophel didn't say anything. He knew there was no excuse for what he did. Piario roughly grabbed his collar. “Say something!”

He had lost everything. Ironically, the only friend left was this enemy. He was sorry to his dead family and colleagues, but he wanted to hear the story. Asmophel read Piario's feelings and

painfully managed to open his mouth. He spoke the truth that he had buried in his heart for as long as he could.

“ ... ”

Piario's murderous expression became distressed as he heard the story. The biggest victim of this story was Asmophel. Asmophel didn't try to justify himself. He described himself as weak and the worst trash. But it wasn't a position accepted by the listeners at all.

“ ... ”

Asmophel tried to speak as calmly as possible. He constantly listed why he should die. He kept emphasizing his sins. However, Piario's hatred towards Asmophel lessened.

“Dammit!”

He slammed his fist into the ground after losing the target of his anger. Tears flowed down from Piario's eyes. He was confused after knowing the whole truth. Piario couldn't kill Asmophel. But it was right to kill Asmophel in order to appease the souls of Piario's family and colleagues.

As he was wondering what to do, Grid approached him. “I know that it is hard to forgive. However, now that you have learned the truth, isn't it foolish to kill him?”

“ ... ”

“Isn’t there a separate target for revenge?”

Empress Marie. The woman who took away the happiness of countless people due to her greed.

“Kill her.”

Grid said bluntly. Lauel had a headache.

‘Couldn’t you phrase it in a nicer way?’

‘Become my person. Increase my strength with your abilities and become a weapon against the empress. I will be your sword and strike down your true enemy’ etc etc.

Weren’t they great lines? As Lauel was filled with regret, Piaro was forgiving Asmophel.

“I can no longer resent you after finding out that you were used in Marie’s wicked schemes.”

Asmophel wept. He could only repeat his apologies. It was the end Grid wanted. He smiled as he watched them.

[The hidden quest ‘Hidden Story’ has been completed.]

[The relationship between Piaro and Asmophel has improved.]

[The affinity with the two people has risen to the maximum.]

[If you recruit Piaro, there will be a 20% increase in the effect of the barracks and a 100% increase in the chance of getting a good harvest. In addition, you can create a 'knights division.']

[If you recruit Asmophel, the effect of the techniques research institutes will increase by 20%. In addition, you can create a 'knights division.']

[Knights Division]

You can have a group of knights.

The buff effect will depend on the person appointed as the captain.

[Barracks Effect]

Affects the training speed of the soldiers.

The soldiers will gain new tactics as their level and abilities increase, and the number of weapons that can be used will increase as well.

[Techniques Research Institute Effect]

Affects the speed at which soldiers and people gain skill experience.

The higher the skill level, the greater the variety of skills available to soldiers and also increases the power of the skill.

The reward of the hidden quest was more than Grid imagined.

‘Amazing.’

It was a big hit. This was an exorbitant level that couldn’t be easily expressed. Grid felt like he owned the world. He clenched his fists tightly as he felt a thrill.

‘Then...’

Now he had a question.

‘What is the 100% increase in the chance of a good harvest?’

What relationship did that have with a sword saint? Grid was puzzled until he suddenly recalled the notification window that appeared when he was in Titan.

[A legendary farmer has been born!]

‘Perhaps...’ No. It couldn’t be. ‘It can’t be.’

He tried to shake off his sinister imagination.

# Chapter 261

---

Piario was a legendary farmer?

How absurd. No, this was almost the level of paranoia. It was a development that wouldn't be found even in third-rate web novels all over the world.

‘Piario dreamed of being a sword saint, so why would he be a farmer?’

The reason that Piario increased the chances of a good harvest was...

‘He probably learned a technique while farming as a hobby.’

It was a reasonable guess. Piario was a very versatile person, so it wasn't impossible.

‘I just had an absurd delusion.’

He was afraid that Jude was laughing at him. Grid smiled before regaining his calm. Then he looked at Piario and Asmophel. They needed time alone.

“Let's leave here.”

Grid said and the Overgeared members followed him. Damian



was with them. Piaro and Asmophel started to have a long conversation once they were left alone.

On this day, both of them vowed. Duke Grid who relieved their misunderstanding and helped them see the true object of their revenge. They pledged eternal loyalty to the one who saved them from hell.

\*\*\*

The road to the castle. The stunning landscape of the significantly developed Reidan captured Grid's attention.

‘It's definitely more than the old Reidan now.’

But it was far less than Winston. The size was more than twice the sum of those two cities, but the overall facilities were less. The problem was that the population was small from the beginning. The best administrator, Rabbit, was active, but the speed of development was slow because there was no manpower.

“Lauel, are there plans to deal with the population crisis?”

“As you did before, we plan to secure and migrate the minorities that are being persecuted everywhere in the empire.”

Just like the case with the Ul Clan. But there was a clear limit to this method. The Overgeared members would suffer too much. In addition, it was unlikely that the empire would keep allowing it.

“Is there a natural way to increase the population?”

“That...”

Grid didn't know it yet, but Reidan became famous thanks to the invasion of the seven guilds. Many people were showing interest in Reidan. Lauel was sure that at this moment, many users would be trying to move to Reidan. But the problem was that the barrier of entry was too high. It was unknown how many of them would reach Reidan.

“You shouldn't think too hastily. First, complete the mine development and connect the roads. Then the deployment of troops will be easier and the number of monsters will gradually decrease... We can only wait until then.”

“What is the speed of progress for the mine development?”

“There aren't enough skilled workers. In particular, securing miners is difficult. It seems like it will take more time than planned.”

“Miners...”

It would be ideal if Minor acted as a miner, but the search for pavranium came first. Right now, it was too early to stick Minor in the mines.

‘I shouldn’t worry too much. By the way, why hasn’t there been news from Minor?’

Minor was on a mission to find all the labyrinths in the west. Grid was worried that he had run across monsters and was in a crisis. No, that clever boy wouldn’t be caught so easily.

‘I shouldn’t worry.’

Grid changed topics. “Then Lauel, do other guilds already have a knights division?”

“Knights division? I don’t think there would be a lot? If the guild creates a specific organization and call it a knights division, then it will become a knights division. Well, it’s easy to mass produce.”

It seemed he didn’t know there was a separate system called a knights division.

‘Then I am the first master of a true knights division?’

It was probably the case. It wasn’t easy to obtain named NPCs.

‘The first knights division...’

In Satisfy, the meaning of ‘first’ was very big. It was an achievement that would often give special benefits.

‘What benefits will I receive?’

Grid’s heart started to become restless again. But this wasn’t a problem. In order to prevent the suffering and frustration that he felt in the past, he always maintained the proper tension.

“I’m glad you have returned safely.”

“Duke Grid! Welcome!”

The entrance of the castle. Grid was greeted by Administrator Rabbit and Jude, who had been informed of his arrival in advance. Grid observed them with the Great Lord’s Sword and smiled.

‘They have also developed.’

Rabbit had gained a lot of intelligence and political power, while Jude had gained a lot of strength and stamina. It showed how faithfully they had taken on their roles.

“You went through many hardships while I was gone.”

Grid patted their shoulders. Administrator Rabbit bowed humbly, while the pleased Jude snorted like a bull. They accompanied Grid into the castle. The 1,000 nervous soldiers saluted in unison.

“Kingdom’s hero! Reidan’s sun! We greet the great Duke Grid!”

“Attention!”

The shouts shook the castle. Grid observed them as he walked past.

‘They aren’t inferior when compared with the empire’s soldiers.’

It was a tremendous growth rate. It was evidence that Jude’s ignorant training method was having a great effect. It was the power of the ‘I have no Idea (SS)’ skill. He had no thoughts. Jude’s ability to raise the soldiers made Grid smile.

The eyes of a man closely watching him shone. It was Damian.

‘This is the time!’

Since Grid arrived in Reidan. Damian had been waiting for the right timing to say hello and he finally grabbed the chance. Grid seemed to be in a good mood right now!

“Grid! It has been a long time!”

Damian went forward and greeted him. He was nervous, but tried not to show it to Grid. He went down on one knee and bowed.

Grid asked, “Who are you?”

“Heok.” It was an unexpected response. “Y-You don’t remember me?”

Damian felt like crying. Grid looked at the disappointed person in front of him. From Grid’s standpoint, Damian was nothing more than an extra in the pope raid. It was also a long time ago.

Damian reminded himself of this and formally introduced himself. “I am Damian, a paladin of the Rebecca Church and the Goddess’ Agent. Around one year and two months ago in Satisfy time, I buffed Grid while you raided Pope Drevigo.”

“Ah.”

Now Grid remembered Damian. The otaku paladin. He hadn’t known it at the time, but looking back now, Damian’s buffing ability was remarkable.

“I remember. Then why are you here?”

Did he perhaps want to join the Overgeared Guild? Grid was filled with big expectations when Damian suddenly cried out.

“Please save Isabel-chan!”

“Isabel?”

Who was that again?

‘Ah, I remember.’ One of Rebecca’s Daughters. She had blonde hair and used an exceptional spear. ‘Did something happen to her?’

No, why was this person asking for help from Grid?

‘Ah right.’

A chill went down Grid’s spine. He remembered what he did.

‘Lifael’s Spear.’

It was a special weapon for Rebecca’s Daughters that Pagma had sealed. He had released the seal. Then he neglected to return.

‘Dammit.’

Isabel was dying because of him. Grid became uncomfortable as he identified the situation. He felt guilty about putting someone’s life at risk, and he was also worried that Damian would claim compensation for the damages.

‘I have no money.’

Damian begged the nervous Grid again. “I will give you all my

assets! So please... Please save Isabel-chan!”

“Eh?”

Grid thought Damian would claim compensation for damages, but he was actually rewarding Grid? And it was money?

‘A pushover?’

At that time, Lael sent a whisper to Grid.

–Damian is a pope candidate. How about helping him? If he becomes a pope, Reidan will be able to form a friendship with the mighty forces of the Rebecca Church. The profit from it can’t be converted into money.

‘Pope candidate...’

In fact, Grid intended to help Damian from the beginning. More than anything else, he felt sorry towards Isabel. In addition...

‘Lifael’s Spear.’

A divine item. It was a great opportunity to observe it in detail.

‘Finally.’



It would be possible to create divine items. A weapon above Failure. No, maybe an item that exceeded Pagma's works would be born. A smile appeared on Grid's face.

“How much?”

“Huh?”

Damian panicked at Grid's sudden question. Grid explained to the bewildered Damian. “How much will you give me in return for sealing Lifael's Spear? How much?”

Grid had to take everything he could. This wasn't a shameless greed. It was foolish to miss the opportunity to obtain something, unless he was a pushover.

‘I have already been a pushover in the past.’

Damian said carefully, “I have currently prepared 530,000 gold...”

It was the amount he prepared as a deposit.

“Hrmm.”

How much was that in Korean money?

‘636 million won...’

Grid calculated it in his head. Damian felt anxious when Grid showed no reaction and hurriedly said.

“I-If I dispose of my mansion, I can get an additional 1.2 million gold!”

“Mansion?”

“Yes! It is a small mansion where I live in Tokyo, Japan!”

‘He will sell his house in reality just for an NPC?’

In the past, Grid would’ve laughed at Damian. But not anymore. Irene, Khan, Piaro. Grid experienced the love of NPCs so he felt more affinity towards Damian.

‘He isn’t a bad person.’

He was a pushover. That wasn’t all. Damian was a pope candidate. The possibility that Damian could become a pope should be kept in mind.

‘I have to think about future relationship rather than be greedy for money now.’

If he did this favor for Damian, it would be a great help to Grid in the future.

“I will accept just 530,000 gold.”

“Heok?”

Damian was well aware of what a greedy person Grid was. He was completely determined to save Isabel-chan and had been expecting to spend a huge amount of money. He was even prepared to sell his organs if he had to. But it was a misunderstanding. Grid wasn't that evil. Rather, he was a generous person.

“Thank you! I really appreciate it!”

Grid was willing to help him! Damian was so thrilled that he started crying. Grid, who was willing to spare Isabel-chan from suffering pain, looked like an angel to Damian in this moment. On the other hand, Grid was excited.

‘This is an opportunity to observe a divine weapon.’

He felt like he found a bundle of money on the way to picking up his lottery winnings.

# Chapter 262

---

After accepting Damian's request, Grid received administrative reports from Rabbit and the Overgeared Guild. It couldn't be helped. It was the least he had to do as the lord. As a result, one hour passed.

'I'm tired.'

The fatigue accumulated over his five week quest was too high. The problem was the lack of sleep.

"Grid, are you departing for the Vatican?"

Outside the meeting room. Damian came up to him and asked. His eyes shone brightly and Grid waved his hands at him.

"I have to rest first. I will contact you later, so head to the Vatican first."

"Yep."

Frankly, Damian wanted Grid to go to the Vatican right now. His heart hurt when he thought of Isabel, who was suffering at this moment. But he couldn't rush Grid and obediently stepped back. He had been waiting a few months, so couldn't he wait a day or two?

He bowed politely to Grid who logged out. Then Grid headed straight to bed.

\*\*\*

Since the National Competition.

10 months of Satisfy time had passed and Yura had dedicated herself to only one quest.

[Path of Penance]

Difficulty Level: SS

Meet the First Servant unharmed.

Quest Clear Rewards: ???

It was a quest that didn't give her any clues. During the quest, Yura had to face countless adversities. She had experienced frustration several times. But she didn't give up. If she was a person to give up easily, then she wouldn't have become 5th in the unified rankings. Her tenacity and obsession exceeded the category of ordinary people.

‘I finally found it.’

The dirt and blood didn't cause Yura's beauty to fade. She was still beautiful at the end of the long struggle, when she finally reached her destination. It was hard to find one flaw with her beautiful white skin and ebony hair.

Step step.

Deep in the cave. Yura climbed onto the altar in the middle of the cave. There was a pure white flame on the altar.

[Lovely child, you have reached this place with your weak human body.]

Was this the voice of an angel? A very sweet and beautiful voice came from the flame. Yura's eyes trembled. Her long eyelashes quivered.

'My guess was right.'

Everything about Yatan's First Servant was veiled. He wasn't a human. The evidence? The white flame in front of her. The identity of this flame was the soul of a demon.

[You are entitled to receive my, Amoract's, power.]

The demon of conflict, Amoract. One of the 33 great demons was Yatan's First Servant.

Demon, demonic views, religion founded by a demon. That was the Yatan Church. There were many hints.

The aim of the Yatan Church was to bring the 33 great demons to the earth. Yatan's servants included the demonkin Balak and others. Legend said that the 33 great demons were creatures of God Yatan.

Combining all these features, it wasn't a religion that existed for humans. It was obvious that the Yatan Church was the enemy of humanity.

[Child, I will give you infinite power.]

Amoract enticed her.

[I will help you break away from that weak human body.]

Then a notification window popped up in front of Yura.

[The quest 'Path of Penance (SS)' has been cleared.]

[If you accept Amoract's magic power, you will be changed from human to half demonkin. Demonkin can evolve into demons.]

[Will you accept Amoract's magic power?]

‘I’m being given a choice?’

She could choose if she wanted the compensation or not. It was unheard of for the quest to leave it up to the user. What did this suggest? Yura’s brain was activated. Based on the information and experience that she had accumulated over the years, her high intelligence quickly analyzed the situation.

Yura found the answer.

“I’ll refuse.”

Amoract’s soul was shocked. It shook at the unexpected choice.

[Child, why? Why are you refusing my power?]

“ ... ”

[Child, do you intend to betray God Yatan?]

After becoming a black magician and joining the Yatan Church. Yura had committed many wrongdoings. This was the fate of a black magician. The quests given to black magicians always required causing conflict or harming people.

Did she feel guilty? It was uncomfortable, but it was a level that she could endure. Satisfy was essentially a game. It was different from reality. She had a clear distinction between good and evil,



and she wasn't evil. Yura just faithfully played her role as a user who chose the path of evil. The result was that she became Yatan's Servant.

But now she felt irritated. Was she belatedly feeling guilty? No. There was a reason.

“Yes, I intend to betray you. If I accept your strength and remain God Yatan's Servant forever, I will eventually become the enemy of that man.”

[Man? Who are you talking about?]

“Grid.” Yura's clear eyes pierced into Amoract's soul. “The Yatan Servants' Slaughterer.”

[What?]

Not long ago, Yura received the news that Grid killed Dark Bus, making it a total of three Yatan Servants. It had been a long time since the Yatan Church designed Grid as an enemy. Yura didn't want to support the Yatan Church anymore. But she couldn't leave the Yatan Church. It was a foolish act, since she would lose everything she obtained so far.

Now the situation changed. Why did a choice exist for a SS-grade quest reward? It was easy to guess. If she refused the compensation, she could get a corresponding 'hidden reward.'

“Yatan’s Servant, I will quit. In fact, I didn’t like Yatan from the beginning.”

She just chose a black magician because it seemed interesting. If she knew that she had to unconditionally serve God Yatan, she wouldn’t have become a black magician in the first place.

[Disgraceful girl!]

Amoract’s warm and gently voice changed to something terrible. The momentum alone seemed like it could kill Yura. But Yura didn’t shrink back. She was well aware that it wasn’t possible for Amoract to appear on the earth at this time.

Ttiring.

[You have refused Amoract’s magic power.]

[You have been deprived of your position as Yatan’s Servant.]

[You are expelled from the Yatan Church.]

[You have lost your black magic power.]

[The Yatan Church will be forever hostile to you.]

[The legendary class, Demon Slayer, has been obtained.]

[Your level has dropped.]

[You are now level 1.]

“Oh my.”

She had expected to get a legendary class. However, she had no idea that she would drop to level one. The list of newly acquired skills appeared in front of the surprised Yura.

On this day.

Yura’s name disappeared from the list of rankers. Of course it was a big topic. All types of speculation occurred across the world.

\*\*\*

He woke up at 4:30 in the morning. He had slept for 13 hours. Youngwoo exited his room with a blank expression, where his parents greeted him.

“Son! Why is it so hard to see you when we live in the same house?”

“It has been 10 days.”

Youngwoo's parents were farmers who grew crops and sold them at their vegetable store. They went to work early in the morning and came home late at night. On the other hand, Youngwoo spend most of his day in the capsule. In particular, he had been playing for an exceptionally long time during the past 12 days because of the quest. It couldn't be helped that it was hard for the three people to see each other.

"I heard Youngwoo's story on the news a few days ago. I know that you are busy doing big things, but don't overdo it."

"Take care of your health. I'm concerned because you haven't been exercising recently. If you get sick, we won't be the only ones who will feel sad."

'A big deal... The nation...'

Youngwoo was treated as a hero after raising the status of South Korea in the National Competition. To be honest, he still hadn't adapted to it. It was too big of a gap from when he was taunted as a game obsessed loser.

'I have become successful in my field.'

It felt good. He was very proud of it, especially when he saw how proud his parents were of him. Youngwoo was stretching while listening to their words, when he suddenly wondered.

"I appeared on the news?"

“Yes, there was something about how the seven or eight guilds invaded your city?”

“Huh?”

“Youngwoo, you and your colleagues repelled them without any damage?”

“Huh?”

“Asura? Ashur? Some unbelievably great earl helped you?”

“Eh?”

“The experts who appear on TV praise our son every day. Ohoho.”

“...”

Youngwoo was confused as soon as he woke up. He couldn't understand anything the two people were saying.

‘Roughly speaking... An alliance of seven guilds tried to invade Reidan and it seems like they were defeated by Earl Ashur.’

Why didn't he know about this?

‘That Lauel.’

The ‘little thing’ he talked about was referring to this incident.

‘It was trivial.’

Youngwoo laughed. He was able to guess why the Overgeared Guild didn’t report this incident to him.

‘There was no damage, so it wasn’t important.’

They didn’t want to disturb his quest. Then when he returned from completing the quest, he was too tired to stay connected for long. He could feel that his companions’ thoughts towards him were growing.

‘I reap what I sow.’

In the past, Shin Youngwoo was filled with poison and only concerned about himself. At that time, he was always alone. He didn’t respect anyone. He didn’t care for others. But not anymore. After he succeeded, he could afford to care for others, and as a result, he was respected. Now he could call them ‘friends.’ These were truly happy days.

“Hasn’t it been a while?”

He finished eating breakfast with his parents. Then Sehee greeted him as she came out of the bath. Her sister had become prettier in the short time they hadn't seen each other.

"You have grown..." Youngwoo said as he looked at her from head to toe, causing Sehee to blush.

"Where are you looking like a pervert?"

"Pervert?"

Why should he be called a pervert when he was just confirming his sister's growth? Sehee threw a white sweatshirt towards the bewildered Youngwoo.

"Now that you have some time to relax, shouldn't you go exercising?"

"Is that so?"

In the last 12 days, he hadn't moved his body except when he was doing some light stretches and push-ups.

It was frustrating, so Youngwoo was pleased that his sister offered to go running with him. He went out after a long time and ran excitedly. Youngwoo's body and spirit felt refreshed from the clean air entering his lungs.

Then they returned home. A man was waiting at their house for Youngwoo..

“It’s the first time that we’ve met in reality.”

Peak Mine... No, Peak Sword.



# Chapter 263

---

“It’s the first time that we’ve met in reality.”

Youngwoo returned home after jogging with Sehee. Youngwoo encountered a man in his mid-30’s in a nice suit.

“Peak Sword?”

He gave off a stronger feeling in the game, but it was definitely Peak Sword. He was a South Korean who always asked foreigners ‘Do you know?’

“Hahaha! It’s an honor that God Grid recognized me.”

“It isn’t unusual.”

In fact, Youngwoo had a close relationship with Peak Sword. A friendship formed after they raided Hell Gao in Cork Island Dungeon together, as well as the Sakura Guild. Youngwoo didn’t feel uncomfortable despite Peak Sword visiting without any notice. Rather, there was a pleasant feeling. But he was confused.

“I heard you’re usually jogging around this time, so I came to find you in the morning. I was afraid that I wouldn’t be able to meet you, but luckily, I got the timing right.

Peak Sword extended a card.

[Korean Patriotic Association]

President Kang Daehan.

Kang Daehan. It was Peak Sword's real name.

“Korean Patriotic Association? What is that?”

“Our task is to spread South Korea to the world. For example, if we encounter a foreigner...”

“I understand.”

He didn't want to hear a more detailed explanation. He could guess it was something absurd just from the description.

“For reference, my sibling's name is Minguk.” (TL: South Korea pronounced in Korean is Daehan Minguk.)

Daehan and Minguk. It was clear that Peak Sword's unique patriotism came from his parents.

“It's a cool name.”

“Right? But my sibling hates the name.”

“Why?”

“She’s a girl.”

“A girl is called Kang Minguk?”

“Yes.”

“...I would hate it as well.”

“Yes, I am the same. But she can’t change her name. If the name of Minguk disappears, the meaning of my name won’t be shown. In the first place, does it make sense to change the names our parents give us?”

“Indeed.”

Then...

‘Why are we having such a pointless conversation?’

He was dragged into Peak Sword’s pace. Peak Sword seemed to have a lot of talent as an insurance salesman. Youngwoo raised his awareness and asked.

“Why did you come to find me?”

“That...” Peak Sword was about to explain when he suddenly saw Sehee. He greeted Sehee with a heavy 90 degree bow. “It is an honor to meet God Grid’s sister and Saintess Ruby. This brother and sister are truly the treasure of South Korea.”

Sehee turned red. She was embarrassed by the excessive formality and praise.

“Oppa, I will enter first. Talk to each other.”

She hurried into the house while Peak Sword looked after her with a warm expression.

“She is pretty and polite. My sister Minguk is also pretty.”

“...”

“Well, won’t do we go drink coffee and have a talk?”

Youngwoo was thirsty after jogging so he nodded.

“Yes.”

The two men found a nearby cafe.

\*\*\*

The end of June. Thanks to the university students who had already finished their final exams, the Tomorrow Cafe had a few empty seats.

Rattle.

“Welcome.”

The employee said as the door opened. Some of the guests reflexively gazed towards the entrance and were shocked.

“Peak Sword?”

“Wow, it really is Peak Sword.”

Peak Sword, the other South Korean ranker apart from Yura. He was a top star of Korea.

Snap snap!

People started taking photos of Peak Sword with their phones.

Rattle.

Another guest entered the cafe after Peak Sword. Youngwoo.

“G-God Grid!”

“Wow! Grid! We live in the same neighborhood, but this is the first time I’ve seen him in real life!”

“Kyaaak! Youngwoo-ssi is so cool!”

“What is Noe doing?”

The attention of the people instantly concentrated on Youngwoo. Youngwoo was the trend right now. It was enough to make Peak Sword seem like a third-rate celebrity. Peak Sword watched Youngwoo proudly before giving his order to the employee.

“Cappu...chino.”

His voice was shaking. He appeared to be sad. Youngwoo ignored the people and ordered a banana shake. The two people were seated at a table in the corner. Finally, Peak Sword cut to the chase.

“I want to merge the Silver Knights Guild into the Overgeared Guild.”

“Huh?”

“We want to become members of Overgeared.”

The scale of the Silver Knights Guild was huge. There were more than 200 guild members and they were the owners of Cork Island,

famous for their gold mines and sightseeing spots, so they were well funded. It was enough to put their name on the list of top 50 guilds. This great guild wanted to be merged into Overgeared. It didn't make sense.

Youngwoo questioned it. "The Silver Knights Guild is enjoying great glory, so why you you want to enter the Overgeared Guild?"

Peak Sword replied honestly. "Our guild's growth is up to here. There is nobody in the guild with a unique talent, and Cork Island has a geographical limit as an island. It's difficult to expand our forces, and we will eventually be left behind."

Then they would be culled.

"In addition, I want to add strength to the team that you are leading, the pride of South Korea. I want to build the strongest guild together and raise the status of South Korea."

Peak Sword never dreamed that Youngwoo would refuse the offer. Who would refuse the chance to devour a huge guild? But Youngwoo showed a surprisingly cold reaction. The reason was simple.

"You seem to have misunderstood something. I didn't establish Overgeared for my country. The only reason I made Overgeared is so that my colleagues and I can earn money and live better."

That's right. Youngwoo was completely different from Peak

Sword. He had an entirely different nature.

“Increasing South Korea’s status? Don’t even dream of joining my guild if it is for such a reason. The Overgeared members and I don’t care about that. Don’t you know that Overgeared is a multinational guild?”

Honestly, it was a waste. Youngwoo wanted to close his eyes and swallow up the Silver Knights Guild. However, if he allowed them to join while still thinking this foolishness, it could cause a crack in his guild in the future.

He had now broadened his view. It was one of the virtues infused in him by Lael.

‘Above all, I like this guy.’

If he had no affection for Peak Sword, he might’ve merged the guild without hesitation. Then once he took full advantage, he would’ve discarded them. This was also the specialty of Lael and Rabbit. But Youngwoo liked Peak Sword. He didn’t want their relationship to be broken.

Peak Sword was embarrassed after reading this.

“Thank you for speaking honestly. My thoughts were too selfish.”

“I’m thankful that you understand.”



A waitress brought over the drinks they ordered. She brought the drinks directly because she wanted to see Youngwoo close up.

‘He is okay.’ He had sharp eyes and an impressive physique. It was hard to call him handsome at first sight, but he became more charming the more she looked. ‘He is constructing a 10 billion won building?’

Her life would be easy if she caught this man. These were the thoughts revolving around the waitress’ head. She tried to get his attention, but Youngwoo wasn’t interested. His lack of experience with popularity was the cause. Youngwoo couldn’t grasp the meaning of the gaze that the female sent him. It might’ve been different if the employee had a D cup.

Youngwoo drank his banana shake. Peak Sword waited for the waitress to withdraw before speaking again.

“I still want to merge the Silver Knights Guild into the Overgeared Guild.”

What? Youngwoo frowned as Peak Sword repeated his words. Peak Sword bowed his head. “I am also a ranker. I want a better environment. I want to belong to the best guild and play in a better environment. It is the same for everyone else in the Silver Knights Guild.”

Overgeared Guild. The synergy between the legendary blacksmith and top talents was sure to explode, resulting in the

strongest force in the future. Peak Sword's personal greed made him want to join. This decision was solidified after he actually met Youngwoo. From his point of view, Youngwoo was a good person.

“More than anything, I want to be with you. I still can't forget that Hell Gao raid. It was the most enjoyable day of my gaming life.”

“Hrmm.” Youngwoo remembered the swordsman who mined the fire stones and gave a strange smile. “Are you mining these days?”

During the Hell Gao raid, Peak Sword awakened to the fun of mining. He felt an addictive pleasure every time he obtained a fire stone.

“I often enjoy it. When hunting in the dungeon, I will mine while waiting for my health to recover. It's much better than just sitting down and resting. I have fun, earn money, and my stats go up.”

“What's the level of your mining skill?”

“Beginner level 9. I will master the beginner level soon.”

“Hoh.”

Youngwoo thought Peak Sword had some talent when watching him mine the fire stones, but his growth was faster than expected. It would be good to get more miners.

“Aren’t there a lot of mines on Cork Island? Miners as well?”

“Of course. Most of the residents of Cork Island are in the mining business. In addition, there are a few miners in the guild.”

Youngwoo’s smile widened further.

“Okay. I will accept the Silver Knights Guild.”

“Really?”

Peak Sword’s pleasure couldn’t be described. Youngwoo added a condition. “However, you must promise not to force the other guild members to love South Korea.”

Youngwoo was also Korean. It was a rotten country in many ways, but he still loved South Korea. However, he didn’t want to force the guild members to feel the same way.

Peak Sword agreed. “I understand.”

With this, it was finished. Youngwoo finished the banana shake and rose from his seat.

“Let’s go. I need to connect to Satisfy and share this guild merger with Lauel.”

“Yes!”

Peak Sword cried out jubilantly. Did he abandon his patriotism to join Overgeared? No. Not at all. He knew. Even if he didn't taken any actions for South Korea, as long as Koreans belonged to the Overgeared Guild, the status of South Korea would naturally increase. There were many benefits to joining Overgeared.

“Hey.”

Youngwoo left the cafe with Peak Sword. Peak Sword called out to a foreign couple passing by. He pointed to Youngwoo and asked.

“Do you know Grid?”

“...”

Youngwoo was embarrassed. Peak Sword was paying attention to his actions, but there seemed to be a limit. He was worried that the Overgeared members wouldn't be able to adapt for a while.

‘Well, those parts will be handled by Lael.’

It was fortunate that he had Lael. Youngwoo said goodbye to Peak Sword and went home. Then he entered his capsule.

“Login.”

There was a mountain of work to do. After accepting Piaro and Asmophel, he had to create a knights division. After that, he had to observe and seal Lifael's Spear, acquire the design for a myth rated item, and save Isabel.

‘I also need to make more of the Grid set.’

Youngwoo's vision darkened as he planned many things.

# Chapter 264

---

{Welcome.}

{You came!}

{Are you rested?}

The Overgeared members welcomed Grid when he connected. Grid looked at the guild members list and questioned.

{Where and what are Pon and Regas doing?}

They were connected, but their location was marked as ‘unknown.’ This was the first time.

{They have been like that for a fortnight already. I can’t get in touch with them, so it seems like they’re trapped in an unusual dungeon.}

{Should we organize a search party?}

{Search party? Grid, are you worried about those two?}

{There’s no need to worry about them. Look at their levels. It went up by one in just a fortnight.}

{I think they found a huge hunting ground}

{We don't need to worry about those monsters. It's a waste of emotions.}

‘Really?’ Pon and Regas were level 307. It was two levels higher than Faker. It was a rapid growth, considering there had only been a one level difference between them. ‘Where did they discover such a great hunting ground?’

From level 299, the amount of experience needed to gain one level increased exponentially. But they were level 306 and gained one level in just a fortnight... The stunned Grid recovered his mind. Then he delivered the news.

{By the way, the Silver Knights Guild will merge into the Overgeared Guild.}

{The Silver Knights Guild? What about Peak Sword?}

Currently, the members of Overgeared were rapidly raising their level and causing an upheaval in the rankings. The existing rankers dropped at least 5 spots, 20 if it was severe. They were stolen by the Overgeared members.

On the other hand, Peak Sword rose in the rankings. 15th on the unified rankings. It was in the absence of the best hunting ground called Reidan. This meant that his level of skill was the same as Pon and Regas.

The Overgeared members were interested.

{Hey, Peak Sword will become our companion? Isn't this encouraging?}

{Peak Sword is the master of drawing a sword. I watched his war video against the Sakura Guild one year ago.}

{I also saw that video. Peak Sword was so great at that time. A Sakura Guild member died every time he drew the sword.}

{Did you see that lump of pride, Yoshimura, run away?}

‘...Is Peak Sword that great?’

Grid liked Peak Sword. He liked and respected Peak Sword's personality. However, he didn't acknowledge Peak Sword's combat ability. At the time of the Hell Gao raid, Peak Sword had just been a miner and wasn't helpful in combat.

‘He helped once when I was in danger.’

Peak Sword had grabbed Hell Gao's attention. Thanks to that, Grod could get one fire stone unharmed. That's it. After that, Peak Sword didn't play any offensive role.

‘Well, at that time, Peak Sword was only a second class.’



The abilities of a 2nd advancement class couldn't afford to take on Hell Gao. Now Peak Sword would have a third advancement class and be much stronger than he was in the past.

{But why is the Silver Knights Guild trying to merge with us?}

{The Silver Knights Guild rules Cork Island. The scale of their guild is huge and they have tremendous financial power. So why the merger?}

Grid explained to the puzzled Overgeared members. After listening to the story, the Overgeared members recalled what they knew about Peak Sword and were convinced.

{Ah, that makes sense if it's Peak Sword.}

{It isn't strange if he builds a religion to Grid.}

{LaueI, the matter of the guild merger...}

{Leave it to me.}

LaueI was very happy. Piaro, Asmopehl, Rabbit, and the Silver Knights Guild... It was amazing that Grid was constantly rallying the best powers. Grid truly was great.

“They seem to like it.”

The guild chat window was in a frenzy. Everyone was excited because the Silver Knights Guild would merge with them.

The Overgeared Guild was in a difficult situation. The Overgeared Guild had too little manpower. They might be the top rankers, but including Grid, there were only 28 people in the guild. It was hard to include two of them(Ruby and Sexy Schoolgirl), as they didn't play often. In this situation, absorbing the Silver Knights Guild was huge.

Then Piaro and Asmophel approached Grid.

“Duke Grid.”

Piario. A man who respected Grid but didn't yield to him. He bowed towards Grid. It was the same for Asmophel.

“Give us an opportunity to serve you.”

Finally, the moment had come. Grid smiled widely.

“It's my pleasure.”

The sunshine through the window shone on Grid's face. It was a bright and dignified face. Piario recalled the day he first met Grid in Kesan Canyon. Grid had been a dark and depressed young man. He was really ugly.

‘But his potential is excellent.’

Piario never realized that Grid would grow to this point.

\*\*\*

The great hall was wide without any decorations, and it reflected Reidan’s financial condition. In short, it was pitiful. Piario and Asmophel vowed allegiance to Grid in this place as the Overgeared members watched.

Grid experienced a new system.

[You have accepted Piario as a subordinate. The effect of Reidan’s barracks will increase by 30%. The probability of a good harvest will increase by 100%.]

[You have accepted Asmophel as a subordinate. The effect of Reidan’s techniques research institute will increase by 30%.]

[You have people who are qualified to lead a knights division. Would you like to establish a knights division?]

There was no reason to hesitate.

“Form a knights division.”

[Appoint a leader for the knights division that will be created.]

-List of people who can be appointed as leader of a knights division-

[Piaro]

Piaro can lead a total of 50 knights.

Piaro's knights will have their physical attack power increased by 10%, attack speed by 3% and movement speed by 5%.

The effect is permanent as long as the person belongs to the knights division.

Knights Division's Passive Skills: Increased Health Regeneration (High), Decreased Stamina Consumption (Medium).

[Asmophel]

Asmophel can lead a total of 35 knights.

Asmophel's knights will have a 5% increase in physical attack power and magic power. Skill cooldown time will be reduced by 8%.

The effect is permanent as long as the person belongs to the knights division.

Knights Division's Passive Skills: Increased Mana Regeneration (Medium), Decreased Stamina Consumption (Low)

It seemed that classes that depended on skills were better suited to Asmophel's knights division.

‘Huge buffs.’

Only admiration emerged. Grid formed two knights divisions.

“Piaro and Asmophel.”

[Piaro and Asmophel's knights divisions have been created.]

[Please name the knights division.]

“1st Overgeared Knights Division. 2nd Overgeared Knights Division.”

“Wait! Wait a minute!” Lauel hurried out from where he had been watching nervously. Then he trembled as he begged. “Please! Please give it a fantastic name!”

“Um...”

Was it too shabby to divide it by one and two? Grid felt some remorse after seeing Lauel's tears. Therefore, Grid renamed it.

“Overgeared Knights Division. Overgeared Magic Knights Division.”

“...”

Lauel was at a loss for words. He couldn't help resenting Grid's naming sense. But when he thought about it, hadn't the boat already sailed after the guild was called Overgeared? Given the name of the guild, Overgeared Knights Division and Overgeared Magic Knights Division wasn't so bad.

‘It doesn't feel good.’

Was his taste increasingly becoming like Grid? It was like a nightmare for Lauel. A notification window appeared in front of Grid.

[Congratulations! You have become the first owner of a knights division!]

[‘Ruler's Cloak’ has been acquired.]

A bright red cloak. There was the golden insignia of a dragon on the shoulder. It was a gorgeous and elegant cloak that caught

everyone's eyes.

[Ruler's Cloak]

Rating: Legendary

Durability: None

\* Skills 'Charge Command,' 'Military Command,' and 'Ruler's Voice' will be generated.

It is a cloak that symbolized the monarch who is qualified to rule over an army.

Weight: 33

[Charge Command]

Grants the 'Charge' skill to your soldiers.

When the soldiers advance in the direction of the enemies, movement speed and damage will increase by 200%, depending on the distance.

Skill Cooldown Time: 5 minutes.

Nothing will be consumed by the skill.

[Military Command]

You can change the direction of the marching soldiers immediately.

Skill Cooldown Time: 3 minutes.

Nothing will be consumed by the skill.

[Ruler's Voice (Passive)]

You can deliver a clear voice to soldiers at any location.

‘These are skills to be used in a war.’

They were simple but effective skills. Considering that most of Satisfy's users were ordinary people who hadn't commanded an army before, the value of this item was astronomical.

Grid was in the army, so he could recognize the value of the cloak.

‘Sure and swift commands will make an army stronger. Unfortunately...’

There were no separate features. It would've been better if it had



the option of raising defense, resistance or stats. He used the Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal skill, but there were no hidden functions. Maybe if he used the Legendary Blacksmith's Disassembly skill?

‘Maybe there is something.’

Grid wasn't perfect yet. It was still only Pagma's Descendant. It was difficult to see himself as a true legend. If he mastered the skills of a legendary blacksmith or completed a quest...

‘At that time, my current self will be no comparison. Maybe I will learn modification skills.’

If he wanted that day to come, he should play the game harder. Grid made up his mind and put the Ruler's Cloak in his inventory. Then he spoke to those who were gathered in the great hall.

“Each of you should join the knights division and then continue with your missions. Lael should coordinate with Rabbit to give Piaro and Asmophel separate areas. Ah, and please handle the guild merger.”

“...Yes.”

‘I will take care of it. Believe in me,’ he wanted to answer.

But he somehow wasn't feeling motivated today. It might be due to the ‘Overgeared Magic Knights Division’ floating in his status

window.

“Sob sob.”

Lauel could only cry. At that time, Grid approached Piaro and asked an absurd question.

“Piaro, can I join your knights division?”

He wanted the buff. Unfortunately, the lord couldn't join the knights division.

“...That isn't possible.”

“...”

Grid wanted to cry like Lauel.

\*\*\*

Grid left the rest in Lauel's hands. Huroi joined him as he left.

“I will accompany you, My Lord.”

The red drake was waiting for Grid in the garden. Huroi was to be Grid's driver. They were ready to go to the Vatican.

‘In any case, this is great.’

Huroi was the colleague who followed Grid before anyone else, so he was a special existence for Grid. Grid got on the drake with a willing heart and confirmed Huroi’s level.

‘290.’

Ssik.

There was a meaningful smile on his face. Huroi couldn’t help feeling curious as he saw it.

‘What is he thinking about?’

Grid asked the puzzled Huroi. “You heard about what happened between me and Damian?”

“Yes, I was impressed after hearing that you raided Pope Drevigo alone.”

“The Rebecca people know me well. Right?”

“Of course. They all praise My Lord. Just...”

There was one point. Damian was fighting the other candidates

to become pope. Maybe those candidates would be hostile to Grid. Saving Isabel meant being Damian's guardian. Huroi got an eerie feeling.

‘Perhaps?’

The pope candidates who were hostile to Lord Grid...

“Why aren't you starting? Aren't we going to the Vatican?”

“...”

It was certain. His lord was ready to provoke a bloodbath in the Vatican.

# Chapter 265

---

A golden ceiling and white exterior walls. Three big and ornate buildings like palaces were situated on the hills of Rolling. They were in harmony with the forest and landscape. There was a small waterfall behind each building. A golden statue of Rebecca rose in the center.

It was the center of the Rebecca Church, the most important religion on the continent. This was the Vatican.

“Isabel-chan!”

Damian returned to the Vatican and sought out Isabel. It was to check her status.

“...”

Isabel’s health hadn’t improved. No, it was worse. She seemed to have completely lost her hearing and vision. There was no reaction when he called from right beside her.

“Cough! Cough!”

She coughed up blood. The crumbly platinum hair was pulled off with a single touch, and the skin was pulled tightly over her skull. Isabel sat on a shabby bed like a doll without a soul.

Damian's eyes crumbled at the sight.

"Dammit... Why is this room always cold...?"

"You came."

A priest with a faint presence approached. His emotionless eyes gave off an ominous feeling but unlike his appearance, he could be trusted.

It was Cassus. He had been taking care of Isabel when Damian wasn't present.

"The mission to destroy the Yatan Church found in the west of the empire... I thought you would finish it in 40 days and come back."

It was a week later than expected. Goddess' Agent, Damian. Maybe his skills didn't meet everyone's expectations?

Damian explained to the concerned Cassus. "I accomplished my mission more than a month ago. I was delaying my stay in the Eternal Kingdom."

More than a month ago? He spent only a few days destroying one of the Yatan Church's temples? Cassus felt thrilled.

"But why the Eternal Kingdom...?"

“I met Grid.”

“Grid!”

The only person able to seal Lifael's Spear. In the past, he saved the Rebecca Church by bringing down the corrupt Pope Drevigo.

“He's coming here now.” Just as he did in the past, he would save Isabel. She would regain her beautiful smile. “I will start competing with Pascal in that gap.”

There was 42 days left until the pope election. Damian thought this was sufficient. Thanks to the class effect of Goddess' Agent, many members of the church believed in and followed him.

‘I will base the campaign on them, defeat Pascal, and become the pope.’

Pascal from the Judar church was the number one candidate. He was politically strong and experienced. He also had the honor of being 5th Pope Franz's direct descendant. His father was even an earl of the Saharan Empire.

‘But he's corrupt.’ He wanted to use the Rebecca Church to strengthen his family's power. ‘If he becomes the pope, the Rebecca Church will walk a worse path than when Drevigo was in charge.’

Many members of the church already knew this truth. Those members would choose Damian for the future of the church.

An innocent Damian believed so.

\*\*\*

The elders assembly.

They were the agency that acted on behalf of the empty vacant pope position. It consisted of 23 of the highest ranking elders.

They summoned Damian and ordered. “There’s a report that the Yatan followers are active in the Gauss Kingdom. Goddess’ Agent, Damian. Immediately go to the Gauss Kingdom, then search and destroy the Yatan Temple.”

“There are 42 days left until the pope election. I am a pope candidate. You want me to leave during such an important period in the campaign?”

Damian was 30 years old. He lived his life in his own way so he lacked social experience. He wasn’t accustomed with such irrational practices.

The elders laughed at his naive self. “You can’t do your duties because of the election? You’re confessing your own incompetence.”



“This is a task you should do as a dutiful son... Tsk, how pathetic.”

“You shouldn’t cause trouble with your work just because you are registered as a pope candidate. Why don’t you just resign your candidacy?”

“Or Isabel will do the work.”

Being ignored, mocked, provoked and looking at him with contempt. It was obvious that the elders assembly were hostile towards Damian.

‘They are fully with Pascal. But this is still too much.’

Damian was honestly shocked. He was afraid since they opposed him so plainly.

‘I was thinking too easily.’

Damian was doing Isabel’s missions to save her. On the other hand, the elders assembly were trying to get rid of Isabel. They wanted Isabel to die so they could find a new master for Lifael’s Spear.

‘In this situation...’

He needed to neglect the campaign for Isabel's mission? If Isabel performed this task, then she would die. He couldn't allow it.

Damian wanted to become a pope for Rebecca's Daughters. He couldn't throw Isabel away just because of the election.

"...I understand. I will go to the Gauss Kingdom immediately."

He was desperate. This mission included searching for the temple. It was doubtful if he could find the Yatan Church before the pope election day.

'In the first place, this temple might not even exist.'

It was an obvious trap. But he had no choice. It was impossible to disobey the command if he wanted to protect Isabel.

'Isabel needs to survive until Grid arrives and seals Lifael's Spear.'

Four days. From Reidan to the Vatican, that was how long it took running nonstop. Grid had sent a whisper yesterday that he was leaving Reidan, so Isabel needed to survive three more days.

'Please.'

Step step.

Damian left the assembly room with powerless steps. He inwardly begged.

‘Please save Isabel-chan, Grid.’

By the time he got back, Isabel’s health would be restored. He would be able to see her smile.

Creak.

The gigantic door of the room opened by itself. It seemed to be urging Damian to leave. The moment that Damian was about to walk out the door.

“Don’t go.”

“...!”

A voice he wanted to hear was heard from outside the door. Damian’s gaze moved upwards from the floor.

“Isabel-chan...”

She held Lifael’s Spear in her hand and blocked the door. She was standing straight on her own. Her eyes were also clear.

This was the power of White Transformation. The

transcendental divine power was restoring her broken body.

Of course, this was only temporary. Now that the spear was in her hand, Isabel would be in greater pain than before. No, she would die.

“Why...? Why? Why are you here?”

Three days. She could’ve lived if she waited three days.

“So why...?”

As Damian felt frustration and despair, Isabel smiled.

“Thank you again, Damian.” She had dimly heard his cry. She knew that he struggled alone for them. “You must become the pope.”

It must happen. If Pascal became the pope, there would be more miserable children like her.

“Don’t you know this? Damian, you can’t miss the opportunity to become pope because of me.”

“ ... ”

Damian was well aware of this. If he didn’t want the second or

third Isabel to be born, he must become the pope. Now was the time for Isabel to sacrifice herself.

‘But I don’t want you to die.’

Damian was confused.

Isabel stroked his head as he hesitated.

“I will go to the Gauss Kingdom. In the meantime, you should become the pope. Please succeed for Rin, Luna, and my successor. Be sure to protect those children.”

She stroked his hair. It was a bony hand. But it was warm. Tears formed in Damian’s eyes as he felt Isabel’s hand.

Then a man laughed at him. “Someone who wants to become pope is shedding tears in front of others?”

It was Pascal. He touched his thin mustache and ridiculed Damian.

“You truly don’t have the dignity of a pope. It will be a disgrace to the church if this crybaby becomes the pope. Isn’t that right, Elders?”

“That’s right.”

“Damian is a small bowl.”

“The pope must be Pascal.”

The 23 elders chimed in to support Pascal. They mocked Damian. Then Isabel glared at them.

“Daring to disparage the Goddess’ Agent, isn’t this no different from blasphemy?”

“Your attitude is bad. Isabel, the Yatan Church is your enemy, not us.”

Pascal approached Isabel who was holding Lifael’s Spear.

“Know your subject. You have forgotten your position. You are Goddess Rebecca’s daughter only because you can handle the divine artifact of our church. You are only a tool. A weapon of war to fight for the goddess and our church.”

Pascal’s eyes were as cold as ice as he faced Isabel. It didn’t seem like the eyes of a person.

“Just like this spear, you are a weapon of slaughter. Don’t think and don’t talk. Do you understand?”

“Shut up!”

Damian exclaimed. He wanted to beat up Pascal right away. But if he did that, he would be immediately kicked out of the church. It would ruin everything.

Damian clenched his fists as Pascal looked at him.

“Rebecca’s Daughter, who you love so much, is being abused in front of you. But you are swallowing your anger? You are just a coward who can only shout.”

“Put away that cheap provocation.”

“...!”

Damian, Isabel and Pascal. The eyes of everyone present widened.

“You are having a lot of fun after grabbing the weapon point. Is it fun to harass people?”

180 cm tall with a solid body. Black hair and sharp eyes. The eyes and voice that were filled with confidence.

Pagma’s Descendant, Grid. He was walking from the other end of the hall.

“Multiple people are bullying one person? Huh?”

“W-Why are you here?”

Pascal and the elders were disturbed by the emergence of an unexpected person. Isabel was stunned.

“Grid!”

Damian smiled widely. Grid’s appearance was exquisite timing and he patted Damian’s shoulders.

“You endured well.”

Grid arrived at the Vatican much faster than expected thanks to Huroi’s drake. He declared to the frowning Pascal and elders.

“From now on, I am behind Damian.”

“...Behind?”

Pascal couldn’t properly understand Grid’s words. Huroi translated it for him. “As of this time, I, Duke Grid of the Eternal Kingdom, am the guardian of Damian, the Goddess’ Agent.”

Orator Huroi’s voice was filled with charisma. It pierced through the spacious building and made Pascal and the elders feel sick.

Grid declared, “Don’t bother him. Or you will be scolded by me.”



“If you ridicule pope candidate Damian again, you will be punished accordingly.”

“Do you have any complaints? Then bring it on, you masses of experience. I’m in a different position from Damian, so I can deal with you as I like.”

“ ... ”

It was hard to wrap their heads around it. Even Huroi was speechless as silence filled the room.

# Chapter 266

---

‘It’s baffling.’

Grid. He was a very special person for the Rebecca Church. The hero who saved their church by punishing the corrupt Pope Drevigo.

Most of the members praised Grid’s feat. A big wave was unavoidable if he claimed to be Damian’s guardian. Numerous members were likely to support Damian.

‘That Damian, he was preparing for his loss.’

It was a deadly move. The elders never imagined that such a foolish guy would call someone big like Grid to help him.

‘It’s a crisis.’

The election wasn’t the only method that Grid could help Damian. By sealing Lifael’s Spear, it was possible to remove Damian’s weakness.

‘Ah, this is a quandary.’

Unlike the elders, Pascal’s face was relaxed. He had experience with Grid, and could turn this crisis into an opportunity.

‘Grid isn’t a hero.’

The reason why Grid defeated Drevigo. It wasn’t for the Rebecca Church, but for Grid himself. Pascal knew the truth.

‘He said he killed Drevigo because he needed to bless the odd mineral called pavranium.’

Grid was selfish and violent. At the time that the pavranium received God Judar’s blessing, Pascal had peeked at Grid’s nature.

‘The more selfish a person is, the easier it is to handle them.’

Why was Grid claiming to be Damian’s guardian? It was because there was something good in it for him.

Ssik.

Pascal smiled widely.

‘Grid, I can give more to you than Damian.’

Wealth, power, and beauty. He would give Grid everything he wanted.

‘So leave Damian and come to me.’

If he could get Grid on his side, he could unseal all three divine artifacts as well as win the election. It was a great opportunity to become pope with the strongest Rebecca's Daughters. Pascal had this thought and broke the uncomfortable silence. "Hey hey! Who is this? The savior of the Rebecca Church! Hero among heroes! If it isn't Grid!"

Pascal exclaimed while smiling as brightly as possible. He praised Grid with exaggerated words and shook hands with him.

"I'm so glad to see you again."

Grid was confused.

'This guy, he can smile instead of feeling angry after my blatant provocation?'

It was an unexpected response.

'He was like this in the past.'

Grid had taken the Holy Light set that Pascal wanted. But rather than being hostile to Grid, Pascal welcomed him.

He thanked Grid for punishing Drevigo, held a banquet and gave God Judar's blessing without any conditions. He was someone to watch out for. Pascal was someone reluctant to make strong enemies.

‘I have to provoke him some more.’

Grid thought this and responded to the handshake.

“Nice to see you as well.”

Pascal’s spirit rose at Grid’s response.

‘It’s like this. I don’t know about the other elders, but he shouldn’t be rude to me.’

Grid should also be aware of it. The fact that Pascal would be more helpful than Damian. Pascal was filled with confidence and quickly led the situation.

“You’re a duke of the Eternal Kingdom? You’re truly a hero. Your outstanding abilities have been recognized. Now, let’s move the location. I will prepare a reunion celebration banquet, so let’s talk to each other after a long time.”

Damian paled as he watched the situation.

‘Grid and Pascal knew each other?’

It was serious. Pascal was extremely rich. Grid could be tempted by money. As Damian was worrying, Pascal nailed in the final wedge.

“Sir Grid, I will prepare many gifts for you today.”

“Hoh, gifts. i am looking forward to it.”

Grid started to show interest. Damian was frustrated, while Pascal showed a deep smile. It was at that moment.

“But Pascal, I’m a duke, right?”

Kwack!

Grid gripped the hand he was shaking with more strength. Pascal’s face rapidly twisted.

‘What is this...?’

It was an incredible grip. Pascal started to feel pain in his hands. He struggled, but Grid didn’t let go.

“You aren’t a pope yet. A pope candidate is asking for a handshake instead of politely greeting me? You seem to be making fun of me, Pascal. Was it a lie when you praised me as a hero?”

‘You’re just the duke of a small kingdom!’

Pascal was a noble of the Saharan Empire. He recognized all

nations apart from the empire as small, and thought they were barbaric. He was a nationalist who believed that only the empire should be blessed by Goddess Rebecca. For Pascal, there was no humiliation worse than being treated like this by a noble of a small kingdom.

“What is this violence? Heok?”

Pascal yelled, then became filled with consternation the moment he met Grid’s eyes.

‘You...!’

He was unable to read the emotions or measure the depth in Grid’s eyes. He didn’t know the intentions, but Grid had such profound eyes. Grid’s eyes were showing a clear meaning. A provocation. ‘Bring it on Pascal. I want to destroy you.’ Grid’s eyes were clearly saying that.

‘A beast!’

The moment that Pascal was feeling agitated, someone fell from the ceiling. A knight wearing red armor. His name was Kamiyan. The 30th knight of the Red Knights, the emperor gave him to Pascal in the hope that Pascal would become the pope.

“Let go.”

Kamiyan warned with his sword at Grid’s neck. Grid snorted.

“What if I don’t want to?”

“I will cut off your hand.”

Kamiyan showed no hesitation. His sword moved towards the hand that was holding Pascal’s.

Pascal shouted, “Stop!”

Kamiyan’s sword stopped just above Grid’s wrist. Grid’s eyes narrowed from where he had been able to summon Failure from the inventory.

‘Too bad.’

Pascal barely managed to escape from Grid’s hand.

“Sir Grid, I will close my eyes to your rudeness today.”

“You don’t have to? I told you already. If you have a complaint then come forward. Bring it on.”

“ ... ”

Anger boiled inside Pascal’s heart.



He was the son of a Saharan noble, who had gained a high status after joining the Rebecca Church. This was the first time that he had been treated like this. Pascal couldn't be rational or prudent anymore. In his heart, he wanted to tell Kamiyan to immediately hit Grid's neck. But he had to endure it. He needed Grid's strength to release the seals on the three divine artifacts.

"I hope that we can laugh with each other when we meet again soon. I will always have a gift for you."

Pascal withdrew with a red face. Kamiyan and the elders followed him. Grid's face was filled with regret as he looked at them.

'His endurance is great.'

Grid couldn't attack senior NPC priests first. As long as they weren't abandoned by the goddess like Drevigo, they were always protected by the goddess. If he attacked them first, the goddess would curse him.

[Goddess' Curse]

The unlucky stat will be generated.

The unlucky stat was vague since it wasn't a status condition. Grid was reluctant to be cursed by the goddess. That's why he tried to provoke Pascal, but eventually failed.

'Well, don't be nervous and just wait.'

From Pascal's point of view, Grid was an eyesore. He would eventually attack Grid.

After Pascal and the elders left.

Isabel, who had remained silent the whole time, approached Grid.

"It has been a long time."

It was a dissatisfied voice. It seemed like she had something to complain about.

'I hate you.'

Isabel was plagued with terrible pain because of Grid. This situation happened because Grid forgot to seal Lifael's Spear.

"I'm sorry." Grid sincerely apologized.

Isabel gritted her teeth at the sight of him. "Why are you sorry? Are you apologizing for unsealing Lifael's Spear? Don't make me laugh. I was able to save my friends thanks to you releasing the seal. Thanks to you, the entire church was saved. So don't apologize."

She was grateful.

‘Then why is she angry?’

Tears filled Isabel’s eyes while Grid was puzzled.

“You always do this. Why do you only show up when I’m in a desperate crisis? Like a prince on a white horse.”

Isabel had a crush on Grid. Her emotions were stimulated because she was saved just before falling to hell. But Grid had already ignored her once. It would be the same this time as well.

“You won’t accept me anyway, so why are you acting like this...?” Isabel whispered as she bowed her head. Her words didn’t reach Grid. The problem was that her voice was too small.

‘Her condition is strange. Indeed, she must be in a lot of pain.’

Grid watched Isabel. Her beautiful platinum hair was now close to grey and it wasn’t even shiny. Her lustrous red lips were pale and her skinny body looked like a mummy. There was a bigger problem.

‘Her breasts have decreased in size.’

It was the effect of losing weight. Her original B cup breasts were now an A cup. It was really a pity.

“W-Where are you looking? Pervert!” Isabel covered her chest with her arms and shouted.

“What is there to look at?”

“What is there to look at? What does that mean?”

“Do I need to explain?”

“That’s okay!”

It had been a really long time since Isabel had been so energetic. Damian watched her and Grid and smiled.

‘Isabel-chan, you have always missed Grid.’

He hoped her heart would be communicated to Grid. He truly was cheering her on. Damian wasn’t a rival for Grid.

‘It’s natural for the heroine to be connected with the hero.’

He was just an extra. He was too incompetent, so he was satisfied just watching Rebecca’s Daughters from the side. Huroi approached Damian and whispered. “Don’t worry. She doesn’t fit My Lord’s taste.”

“ ... ”

The beautiful Isabel-chan didn't suit Grid's taste? It was upsetting. Damian was making a subtle expression when Grid urged him.

“How long are we going to stand here? Guide me to a suitable place.”

It was time to figure out how to create and seal Lifael's Spear.

# Chapter 267

---

“Beautiful and benevolent Goddess Rebecca, give your light to this weak and foolish servant who can’t move without it. I will use your light to save the weak and punish the wicked.”

The first prayer room. Pascal was praying in a place that originally only the pope could use. It was to shake off his anger about Grid and regain his senses.

“...May the whole world be bathed in the warm light.”

After a long time, his prayers finished. Pascal made a refreshed expression and got up from his seat. His anger was cleansed and he was now calm.

‘It isn’t simply riches or power that the current Grid is coveting now.’

If it was, Grid wouldn’t have been able to shake off his temptation.

‘It seems like there is a special link between him and Damian.’ This was an unexpected variable. ‘But eternal friendship doesn’t exist. Even blood and flesh will kill each other in front of greed.’

The only concept that didn’t change in this world was faith.

Ssik.

Pascal commanded with a smile, “Open the warehouse.”

“Yes!”

Pascal’s loyal followers that he brought from the Judar Church moved immediately.

Creak.

The secret warehouse door behind the statue opened and glittering gold poured out. There were treasures and gold piled up in the warehouse. Pascal used the secret warehouse that Drevigo had made during his days as the pope.

‘Grid, how much will make you satisfied?’

Pascal’s men started to gather up the gold coins. These gold coins would be used to obtain Grid.

‘I will offer more if it’s still lacking. If that is not enough, I will give even more. In the end, you will be caught by my hands.’

Kamiyan watched Pascal and asked. “That person called Grid, isn’t it better to just kill him?”

“He is the only one who can unseal the three divine artifacts of our church. He can’t die.”

“What if you can’t obtain him?”

“Haha, that won’t happen. He’s very greedy. He will surely accept my heart.”

“ ... ”

Pascal was confident, but Kamiyan was unsure.

‘He’s a wild beast. He can never be tamed.’

Kamiyan had noticed it when he aimed his sword at Grid’s wrist. Grid didn’t blink once. He was prepared to give his hand to strike Kamiyan’s neck. Honestly, it gave Kamiyan goose bumps.

‘It isn’t a skill that develops after fighting once or twice. His momentum was overwhelming. Perhaps I would’ve had to fight properly. His power might be praised by the church, but it will be painful in many ways if he becomes an enemy.’

The emperor had commanded Kamiyan. Pascal must become pope. Kamiyan faithfully carried out the emperor’s commands, so he couldn’t neglect any dangers.

“Come out.”



Kamiyan moved to avoid Pascal's eyes and summoned an assassin from the emperor. An assassin of the emperor, the assassin called 'Crow.' There was a flashing light in the darkness and the shadow asked Kamiyan.

"You saw that guy called Grid, right? Can you assassinate him?"

"Is that a question that needs to be asked? I can even kill a mouse."

It wasn't a lie. Crow had the ability to assassinate enemy knights. One day, the strongest assassins Doran and Kasim disappeared, so Crow was now the strongest assassin in existence.

"Good answer. Kill Grid as soon as possible."

"Look forward to tomorrow morning. He will be hung on Goddess Rebecca's statue."

Crow immediately disappeared.

\*\*\*

Grid frowned as he was guided into Isabel's room.

"What is this?"

It was a small room where the only furniture was a shabby bed. A chill that would make the bones ache dominated the inside of the room.

“There isn’t even a fireplace? It will be freezing in the middle of winter.”

He touched the grey wall and stone powder fell down.

“Hey, you will catch pneumonia.”

Grid shook off the dust and turned to Isabel.

“It’s still like this?”

“ ... ”

Rebecca’s Daughters had also suffered under Drevigo. Despite being the strong force, they didn’t rebel against the leaders of the church and endured this unfair treatment.

It was frustrating when he thought about it, but what could he do? The church raised Rebecca’s Daughters as a weapon and they were taught only obedience. This deep brainwashing was like a shackle.

It was the church’s fault, not theirs. On the surface, the church

expressed peace and charity, but there was no charity. From what Grid could see, the Rebecca Church was no different from the Yatan Church.

‘Bad people.’

Grid’s expression distorted as he thought about how Pascal and the elders treated Damian and Isabel.

The words that the assassin Shay had spoken popped up.

‘The Yatan Church is the one that stands for pure evil. They believe that evil is the right way. But the people from the Rebecca Church commit atrocities, even though they realize they have to do good deeds. The front and back are different, so they are far sneakier and more dangerous than the Yatan Church.’

This wasn’t the case with the Rebecca Church in the past. But Drevigo ruined everything.

‘He caused the rot.’

The current leaders of the Rebecca Church were those affected by Drevigo. Most of them had already tasted the sweet fruit he offered them and realized they felt joy in harassing others.

Could they let go of this pleasure?

No. The evidence was that they were following Pascal without trying to overcome his temptations. Pruning was required.

‘Damian should be pope.’

He might be an otaku, but Damian was a pure person. The Rebecca Church would change if he became the pope.

‘First of all, Pascal can’t become pope.’

Pascal was from the empire. He was the son of the powerful Earl Chirita of the empire. If Pascal became the pope, the empire would be able to utilize the Rebecca Church freely. Lauel was convinced that the empire would become much stronger than it was now. Grid agreed.

‘Someday I will become hostile to the empire when I become king, so they shouldn’t become stronger than they are now.’

Grid silently thought for a moment before opening his mouth.

“Damian, you should start your campaign right now. Make sure you thoroughly advertise that I am your guardian. Huroi will help you.”

“Yes!”

The first ranked orator, Huroi. His words had the power to

capture people's ears and hearts. He would surely be a great strength to Damian.

“In the meantime, I will seal Lifael's Spear.”

Grid sat on Isabel's bed. Then he observed Lifael's Spear in her hand.

“Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal.”

[The blacksmith who became a legend can appraise items with an excellent discerning eye. If a hidden feature exists in the target item, it will be found.]

[Lifael's Spear]

Rating: Myth

Durability: 1,500/1,500

Attack Power: :1,330~1,890

\* Divine Power +3,000

\* All stats +200.

\* 300% increase in health recovery.

- \* Fixed damage of +5,000 on each attack.
- \* There is a high probability of activating the 'Light Wheel' skill.
- \* There is a high probability of activating the 'Shield of Light' skill.
- \* There is a high probability of activating the 'Light of Guidance' skill.
- \* The skill 'White Transformation' will always be invoked.
- \* Attack power +50% against those with dark magic power.

It is one of the three divine artifacts of the Rebecca Church.

It contains a tremendous divine power that human beings can't afford to handle, placing a heavy burden on the user's mind and body.

Since Rebecca's Daughters became short-lived after being unable to cope with the power of this weapon, 5th Pope Franz asked Pagma to seal its power.

However, Pagma's Descendant appeared in the days of 13th Pope Drevigo and released the seal on the weapon.

Conditions of Use: Rebecca's Daughter.

Weight: 400

[You have already uncovered the hidden feature of the item.]

‘In order to reseal this...’

He needed to understand the structure of the item. Then he could figure out how to make it. In order to do so, the process of disassembly and assembly, as well as observation, were essential.

After becoming Pagma's Descendant, Grid had often disassembled and assembled items. He was confident that he could quickly grasp the structure of Lifael's Spear. That's why he thought this task would be easy.

‘But the reality is different.’

Things became difficult. Isabel was the problem. Her health was far more serious than expected. If she let go of Lifael's Spear, she would die immediately. It meant that he couldn't disassemble Lifael's Spear.

‘I have to do it with observation.’

He couldn't guarantee how long it would take. But one thing was

clear.

“Isabel, I will be sure to save you.”

Isabel was a precious person. She was a person he shared memories with and was loved by somebody. Damian thought of her the same way Grid thought of Irene.

‘I won’t allow you to die.’

Grid started to observe Lifael’s Spear. He carefully looked at the features several times. Was it possible to raise the understanding of an item to 100% just by looking at it? It was impossible at this time. It was out of reach with Grid’s current abilities. But Grid believed in his imperfection.

‘I have abilities that haven’t blossomed yet.’

Originally, if he completed the class quests, then he would gain abilities. These abilities were drawn out of him.

‘I can do it.’

Grid’s class quest couldn’t proceed at the moment. It had already been more than a year since he received it.

‘The developers aren’t brainless or manipulative.’



It was clear that they would've prepared some way to awaken his power in the case of an incomplete class quest.

The answer was likely to be hidden in Lifael's Spear. What was the reason for Grid unsealing Lifael's Spear? The system. In the past, the system arrow led Grid to unseal Lifael's Spear. That led to this present situation. It was a clear arrangement.

‘An arrangement that will allow my skills to blossom.’

Grid's eyes sharpened as he observed Lifael's Spear. His concentration started to rise to the extreme. The willpower and spirit he trained over many experiences was in effect.

‘Grid...’

Isabel's mind calmed as she sat opposite Grid. Somehow, she seemed to hear the voice of Goddess Rebecca.

‘Believe in him.’

\*\*\*

A serene dawn.

Crow appeared in the shadows of the window and looked at Grid.

‘It’s already been 8 hours.’

Grid was sitting in a small room. He had been examining Lifael’s Spear for 8 hours already. His mind was solely focused on Lifael’s Spear. It meant he was full of holes.

‘Rebecca’s Daughter has fallen asleep. This will be an easier assassination than I expected.’

Crow landed underneath a tree. Then he entered the building that contained Grid. He didn’t make the slightest noise during all of this.

“ ... ”

Crow moved stealthily down the hall. Even the sensitive rats didn’t detect his presence. But something was looking at him from the shadows.

# Chapter 268

---

But something was looking at him from the shadows.

Noe.

Twitch, twitch. Twitch, twitch.

His small, chubby butt shook from side to side. The short paws were completely pressed against the floor. The best demonic beast of hell was moving secretly to catch his prey.

‘This is a scientific, beautiful and perfectly designed hunting posture! Nyang!’

“ ... ”

Crow was unable to perceive Noe’s presence in the darkness. He was a good assassin, but it wasn’t at the level of sensing the best demonic beast of hell.

Suuk.

Crow climbed towards the landing of the third floor. The third floor was where Isabel’s room was located.

‘Soon.’

Crow imagined it. Stabbing Grid with his dagger. It was at that moment.

“Kyong!”

Noe jumped towards Crow. The sharp and small fangs gleamed in the darkness.

“...!”

Crow was confused. He never thought the day would come when he was surprised by a cat.

‘I didn’t notice a cat following me?’

It was the biggest shame and embarrassment he’d experienced since he was born. But it was only for a moment. He quickly regained his composure. Crow was a professional. He had survived many crises and assassinated 89 humans. In the process, he realized something. It was that he must remain calm under any circumstances. Crow’s experience meant he didn’t make a fuss about the surprise appearance of a cat.

Paang!

Crow blocked the cat’s paw swiping at him with his dagger. Then Crow hesitated as he was about to counterattack.

Snap.

He couldn't properly move his wrist after the blow.

‘Why is this cat so strong?’

This wasn't a normal cat. Crow noticed Noe's peculiarities. There were small horns on the forehead and short wings on the back. A high class demonic beast.

‘How is this demonic beast here?’

This place was the Vatican. The Vatican was filled with divine power. Monsters couldn't come near the Vatican. A monster that took one step inside the Vatican would die from the divine power.

That was the problem. Currently, Noe couldn't exercise his skills properly.

‘It's serious.’

Noe's master had ordered. Be prepared for any enemy while Master was concentrating. If an enemy invades, don't hesitate to hurry to Grid and tell him the news. But the problem was...

‘I unconsciously moved.’

Noe recognized himself as a rational being, but reality was different. Noe was still young and faithful to his instincts. When a dark man showed up and moved quietly through the darkness, he instinctively attacked. It was unintentionally done and the current situation was the result.

Noe was affected. He couldn't gather any strength in his body. The divine power of the Rebecca Church's Vatican was terrible. But how could the best demonic beast of hell lose to a human?

“Nyaang!”

Noe once again swung his paws.

Chukak.

Sharp claws tore at Crow's ears. Crow felt a chill as he barely managed to escape a deadly blow.

‘Fast...! A high class demonic beast!’

The cat was clearly a demonic beast. It might not look like it, but it must be a huge monster. Maybe it had the skills of an intermediate level demonkin. If not, it wouldn't have been able to move inside the Vatican that was filled with divine power.

‘I need to take it seriously.’

The reason why a demonic beast was here didn't matter. It was just one more target to kill.

Clink.

Crow, who had been fighting with only one dagger, pulled out a short sword. A dagger in his right hand and a short sword in his left hand. His attitude changed after he grabbed another weapon. It was the appearance of the famous Crow.

“Kiyong!”

‘No strength.’

Crow defended against Noe's scratches with his short sword. He drew his short sword in a diagonal line. Then he stabbed with his dagger. A light wound appeared on Noe's chest. The sword sword was cut slightly and the dagger was avoided.

Crow's expression twisted.

‘It avoided it?’

Noe bared his fangs.

“Nyaang!”

Jjejeong! Jjeejeeong!

“Kuk.”

Noe’s claws became faster and stronger. Crow found it difficult to avoid, and he tried to defend by crossing his short sword and dagger. Then he realized Noe’s real power.

‘A senior demonkin!’

Was this possible? Weren’t demonic beasts originally subordinates of the demonkin? Crow was shocked and pulled out the trump card he had been saving. The walls, the floor and the shadows on the ceiling started to shake. A shadow technique was activated.

Noe’s eyes widened with surprise at the strange sensation, while Crow smiled with satisfaction.

“Go to hell.”

Crow was convinced of his victory and opened his mouth for the first time. At the same time, the shadows on all four sides moved and changed their shape into that of a thorn.

Pa pa pa pat!



Six thorns flew from different orbits and pierced Noe's body. Noe determined it was dangerous and used Fluidization.

[Fluidization]

It was a skill that made it impossible for physical damage to impact his body. However, Noe couldn't use it properly due to the influence of divine power. He couldn't use Soul Ingestion at all. Unfortunately, Fluidization didn't work and Noe received damage.

Puok!

“What, nyang?”

One of the six thorns penetrated Noe's small body. Noe let out a pained scream and fell to the floor.

‘It is unfair, nyang.’

The biggest problem was that Noe couldn't use the Soul Ingestion skill. Noe hated the Vatican.

Crow trampled on Noe's protruding belly. Noe's snout gaped open. Then a pained sound emerged. Crow laughed at him. “This is the end of the demonic beast.”

Clink.

Crow aimed at Noe's face with the short sword.

“Die.”

“It's up to here.”

“...!”

Suddenly, a voice was heard. The surprised Crow hurriedly turned his head, but no one could see it. There were just darkness all over the place.

‘A hallucination?’

He had no choice but to feel doubts. There were no signs of anyone. It was a stealth ability beyond human limits.

“Eh?”

Crow's eyes twitched as he felt something. He was losing control of the shadows.

Pahat!

The shadows rose like a wave. Crow tried to avoid it, but it was impossible. The speed of the shadows was too fast.

Kwack!

Crow's body was pressured by the shadows.

“Kuak!”

Crow turned pale as he was caught by the shadows and thrown into the air.

‘The speed of the shadow control is ridiculously fast...!’

The shadow technique could evolve to this extent? He couldn't believe it. While Crow was feeling confusion, the shadows kept tightening around his body. Crow struggled but the pain just got worse. Who on earth could so easily overpower him? Crow's questions were deepening when a man appeared from the darkness.

“Y-You...!”

It was a man with black skin. His body was very dry and his arms were abnormally long. There was only one person who came to mind once all these things were summed up.

Crow screamed, “Kasim!”

Someone who could control shadows beyond mere attacking and defending. He was able to make soldiers from shadows. The

assassin who led an army. His nickname...

“King of Shadows!”

Why was that monster here? Crow had more questions. But the answer that came to him was death. The shadows pressed on him more strongly and he couldn't even scream as he died. Kasim removed Crow's body so there were no traces left. The shadows swept over the area and even the bloodstains disappeared.

“The more I look, the cuter it is.”

Kasim looked at Noe, who was unconscious, and disappeared into the shadows.

\*\*\*

Chirp! Tweet!

Birds made noises. Warm sunshine wrapped around his body.

“Nya.”

Noe woke up from his serene sleep. Then he looked to the left and right.

“Heok! What is going on? Kyak!”

When it was dawn. He had been fighting a savage human. Then he was hit by a lousy technique and got knocked out. Noe thought up to here and found it ridiculous. How could the best demonic beast of hell be beaten by a human?

“It’s a disgrace! Nyang!”

This was unacceptable, even if the location was the Vatican. Why should this great body, that could overcome humanity with its paws, suffer from such indignity? Noe trembled with anger and belatedly questioned it.

“Why am I alive? Nyang?”

If he was knocked out by a human, wouldn’t he be killed? Noe pondered it and concluded.

“It was a dream! Nyang!”

That’s right. What happened last night wasn’t real.

“Nyahahat! That is it! How can the best demonic beast of hell be beaten by a human? Nyahahat!”

Noe was sure of it.

In fact, he had no choice but to think that way. Otherwise, how

could Noe explain why he was still alive? Due to his tremendous resilience, the wounds he had the day before were completely gone, so Noe's thoughts were justified.

Ttiring~

Noe's status changed from frustration to self-gratification. But Grid had no interest in Noe. He was too busy with Lifael's Spear and didn't see the pet window at all.

\*\*\*

'I'm screwed.'

Grid was feeling nervous. He had observed Lifael's Spear, but despite two days passing, he couldn't figure out a way to seal it.

'Was I thinking too easily?' Had he let his recent victories get to him?

'I can't understand what's connecting the parts of the spear.'

The bonding area was too clean. Grid wasn't even sure what techniques were used.

'It's impossible to do this with forging alone. However, it isn't one whole item...'

If he disassembled and assembled the spear, he could uncover the secrets behind how the two parts were joined. But he couldn't do that because of Isabel. Grid continued to observe the spear while logically grasping its structure.

The next day, an uninvited guest came. It was Pascal.

“I want to give you a present.”

Pascal extended a box containing one million gold. It was almost twice as much as Damian's 530,000 gold. It was 1.2 billion won in cash.

[Would you like to receive Pascal's gift?]

[If you receive the gift, you must unconditionally accept one of Pascal's requests.]

“Are you kidding me? This is the extent of your gift? Get lost.”

Grid wasn't simple enough to cling to simple profits anymore. He was always looking ahead. He wouldn't allow the empire to swallow the Rebecca Church just for one million gold.

Two more days passed. Grid drove away Pascal and decided to change his viewpoint while observing Lifael's Spear.

‘Maybe the secret isn't in the technique but the materials?’

The main ingredient of Lifael's Spear was adamantium. Adamantium was a silver material but the color of the combined area was blue.

'No minerals were used other than adamantium. It seems like the adamantium is mixed with something else.

There was clearly something.

'This... perhaps?'

At that moment, something passed through Grid's head.



# Chapter 269

---

‘This... perhaps?’

At that moment, something passed through Grid’s head.

‘Goddess’ Essence!’

The Goddess’ Essence was an unknown item dropped by Pope Drevigo. He had neglected it for over a year. Grid pulled it out of his inventory.

‘It is unlikely that Drevigo would’ve dropped a useless item.’

Drevigo wasn’t a typical boss. He was a person who had a big influence on Satisfy’s story. The man who ruined Satisfy’s first religion, the Rebecca Church. What was the probability that the liquid he dropped was simple water?

‘None.’

The name alone made it sound special. Grid thought about it. The reason why he unsealed Lifael’s Spear. The cause of Pascal’s appearance. The cause of the elders sympathizing with Pascal’s cause...

It was all due to Drevigo.

‘It’s highly likely that the item dropped by him is a solution to this.’

This was originally a game. The items that the final boss dropped were often clues to overcome despair.

“I shall check it.”

Grid decided and opened the lid of the small glass bottle. Then he placed one drop of it on Lifael’s Spear.

Tok.

The moment that Lifael’s Spear made of adamantium and the Goddess’ Essence met.

Swaaaaah!

A bright blue light emerged and filled the small room.

“Ah!” Isabel exclaimed.

Grid gazed at the beautiful light before turning to her. A notification window popped up in front of Grid.

[The information about the Goddess’ Essence has been updated.]

\*\*\*

Five days had passed with no news from Crow. Kamiyan was forced to admit it.

‘Crow has died.’

At first, Kamiyan was dubious. Crow’s assassination skills were the best. It was difficult to imagine that he failed in his assassination. But on the fifth day, it was obvious that Crow had failed.

‘Stupid, you spoke such confident words.’

Anyway, things had become clear.

‘Grid’s strength is on the same level as me. There is no doubt.’

Even more.

‘I have to be careful.’

Grid hadn’t announced that there was an assassination attempt. It was like he had never received the assassination threat. It was a clear sign of his willingness to remain calm until he figured out who was behind it.

‘I thought he was ridiculous when he treated Pascal and the elders in that way, but he’s actually a fox.’

A tricky bastard. To be praised by members of the church while having individual power...

‘Pascal’s gift attempts are failing every day. It isn’t good to drag this out longer.’

Kamiyan shifted his gaze out the window. Damian and Huroi were still campaigning today. They were a nuisance.

‘Especially that person called Huroi...’

His speaking ability wasn’t common. He quickly took control of the hearts of the church members. Some of the senior priests bought by Pascal now seemed to favor Damian. If Huroi called dog feces a drug, they would believe it.

‘I will deal with it personally.’

In one week. The event that took place exactly 30 days before the pope election. The pope candidates would give speeches to the priests of the Rebecca Church scattered across the continent, as well as the nobles.

At that time, Earl Chirita of the Saharan Empire was going to attend. Pascal’s father was different from Pascal. He got rid of any risks.

‘I have to receive his support to hit Grid.’

He acknowledged that Grid’s individual power was superior. However, Grid’s total power wasn’t good. It was a Rebecca’s Daughter who might die today, Damian, and the orator Huroi. It would be easy to take care of him if Kamiyan joined forces with Earl Chirita.

\*\*\*

[Goddess’ Essence]

A liquid that contains the divine power of Goddess Rebecca. It is simple liquid to the general public, but it is a poison to those who possess black magic power and a miracle drug to those who serve the goddess.

When mixed with minerals, it will maximize the viscosity of the minerals and improve the mineral’s unique functions. In addition, it will inject divine power.

Weight: 0.1

‘Maximizing the viscosity? Does it mean like clay? This would make it easier to shape the item.’

The secret of the spear combination was hidden here.

[Your understanding of Lifael's Spear will increase by 40%.]

[You have discovered the hidden secret of the item! A great achievement!]

[Insight has increased by 30.]

[Intelligence has increased by 30.]

[The Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal skill has improved. When you observe an item, the understanding of it will increase.]

“Wow. Amazing.”

Grid was delighted. He was pleased that he had uncovered the purpose of the Goddess' Essence and the secret behind how the spear was joined. Now he also received bonuses.

‘Even more.’

Grid turned to stare at Isabel. Her complexion had noticeably improved. It was the healing effect caused by the ripple that occurred when the Goddess' Essence touched Lifael's Spear.

‘First, save Isabel.’

This was imperative. Isabel needed to be healthy to be separated from Lifael's Spear.

'Then I can proceed with the disassembly and assembly process.'

The mission was clear. Grid rose from his spot. He handed the Goddess' Essence to Isabel, who admired it.

"Drink."

Isabel refused, "I-I don't want to."

"Why?"

"I can't receive such a precious thing."

"Aren't you at the crossroad of life and death? Just drink."

"I don't want to."

"Why won't you drink it? Just drink a drop."

There was 1 ml of Goddess' Essence. The volume of one drop of water was 1/20ml, so it meant there were 20 drops. Isabel's health improved because of just one drop resonating with Lifael's Spear. Isabel could be healed if she drank one drop directly.

Grid was confident. But Isabel was stubborn.

“I appreciate the courtesy, but I don’t want to be beholden to you anymore.”

“No, isn’t it just one drop?”

“I don’t want to.”

The last five days. Isabel had many conversations with Grid while they were alone. In the process, she discovered something. Grid was already married. She couldn’t look at Grid in this way anymore. Isabel suppressed her feelings for Grid. In order to do so, she needed to draw a line. She didn’t want to receive Grid’s kindness anymore.

Grid shrugged as she bowed her head. “Isabel, aren’t you misunderstanding me?”

“...?”

“The reason I helped you is because it benefits me. It isn’t unconditional goodness. So don’t be mistaken and drink it right now. I’m busy.”

Isabel was too embarrassed to refuse after Grid’s words.

“Come on.”



“ ... ”

Isabel accepted the small glass bottle from Grid. Then she hesitantly raised it to her mouth. She was concerned that she would accidentally drink several drops.

‘She has become very timid.’

Originally, Isabel was a very willful girl. But she suffered thanks to Drevigo and Pascal. She was a tool, not a human, and was going to die... She had listened to those words for a while and couldn't help changing. She truly was a poor kid.

Grid sighed and took the bottle from her. He placed a drop of liquid on his finger and raised it to Isabel's mouth.

“Lick.”

“Eh...”

Isabel's face reddened. A man. Furthermore, the man wanted her to lick his finger. Her mind became complicated.

“Ah really, do I have to feed it to you directly?”

Grid shoved his finger into Isabel's lips.

“Hah...!”

Combined with the title effects, Grid’s dexterity was over 2,300. Isabel shivered as Grid’s finger entered his mouth. The sensations that she felt for the first time stirred her body and made her dizzy.

“Hah...!”

The thick and solid finger touched Isabel’s uvula...

Omitted.

After a moment.

“Hah... Hah...”

The drained Isabel collapsed on her bed. A warm blue light wrapped around her body. The Goddess’ Essence was immediately effective. Her platinum hair started to shine beautifully again, while her rough skin became transparent and smooth.

“Really pretty. Now if you can just recover your old figure.”

Isabel’s faced turned redder at Grid’s compliment. She covered her face with both hands and gasped for breath, while Grid wondered.

‘Her status is odd.’

Her health is recovering. But why did she look more tired?

Dok. Dok dok.

As Grid was feeling puzzled, a homing pigeon tapped on the window. It was a homing pigeon sent by Irene. Grid received the letter before taking Lifael’s Spear.

“You said there was a smithy here? I will go to the smithy, so you rest here.”

“Yes...”

Isabel’s eyes were wet as she peeked at Grid through the gap in her fingers. It seemed like she was eager for something. Her eyes were enough to remind him of Irene in bed.

Gulp.

Grid involuntarily swallowed his dry saliva. It was to shake off his raunchy imagination.

‘It seems that the process of restoring her health is quite pleasant.’

Grid thought and left the room.

“Nyang.”

Noe was sunbathing on the windowsill in the corridor. Grid looked at the cat rolling around on his plump stomach like he was pathetic.

“Tsk tsk, I gave him a job, but he’s just sleeping.”

Grid wasn’t aware that an assassin had come after him five days ago. It was a pity for Noe.

[White Transformation is activated.]

[You don’t have any divine power. White Transformation has failed to be activated. Side effects will occur to your body.]

[You have resisted.]

The notification windows kept popping up.

Before heading to the smithy, Grid stopped in the garden and put down Lifael’s Spear. Then he sat on a bench and opened the letter.

[I can feel the movements of the child in my belly. Every day is

mysterious and fun. I want to share this happiness with you soon. Dear Husband, what do you want your child to be interested in when they grow up?]

[Answer your wife's question. This will affect the child's abilities after they are born.]

I want the child to be interested in martial arts.

I want the child to be interested in magic.

I want the child to be interested in learning.

I want the child to be interested in theology.

I want the child to be interested in techniques.

I just want the child to be healthy.

‘I don't like number four.’

Grid had a negative opinion of religion thanks to Drevigo and Pascal.

‘I don't want number six either. The child might turn out like Jude.’

Among the remaining options, the most attractive one was...

‘Techniques.’

Grid thought that his child would become the estate's labor force when they were older, and started to write his reply. He wrote that he loved Irene and then gave his answer.

‘I will go to her once I finish my work here.’

Grid finished the letter and tied it to the leg of the homing pigeon.

Kwaduduk.

The homing pigeon flew towards the south west. It was the direction of Winston. As Grid was looking after the pigeon, someone approached.

# Chapter 270

---

“Duke Grid! What are you doing outside today?”

It was Pascal, who was accompanied by his men. A person needed to bend in order to obtain anything big. Pascal was determined to obtain Grid and completely abandoned his pride. He placed his disgrace deep into his heart and acted politely to Grid. He also didn't forget to have a bright smile on his face.

“Huh...?”

Pascal instructed his men to drop the treasure chest. His eyes shone. It was because he found Lifael's Spear.

“T-This...”

The false smile that concealed his anger inside transformed into a real one.

‘Isabel seems to have finally died.’

She was just like a cockroach. It would be more comfortable if she died.

‘It feels like a 10 year blockage has finally been relieved.’

Rebecca's Daughters were meant to follow commands. They

should be controlled. In that sense, Isabel, Rin, and Luna were truly troublesome. The former Pope Ruiz, who led the church to the light, and the former Pope Drevigo who corrupted the church. These girls served both popes, so they grew to a level where they could judge right and wrong. Rather than obeying orders unconditionally, they questioned it.

It was serious.

‘They are tools.’

For Pascal, who planned to make the Rebecca Church a part of the Saharan Empire, the current Rebecca’s Daughters were an eyesore. But now Isabel was dead, so his worries had disappeared. He would give Lifael’s Spear to a new owner, then order Rin and Luna to be removed in turn.

‘Finally, my world will come.’

He felt like he was flying with joy. Pascal’s heart wanted to burst out. But he refrained after looking at Grid. Grid was looking at him with cold eyes. “A girl who had her life sucked out for Goddess Rebecca and the church has died. Why are you so happy?”

‘Sucked out?’

Pascal’s face distorted. He wanted to beat Grid up for using such words to diminish serving the noble goddess. But what about all his patience so far?



Pascal barely repressed his anger and opened his mouth. “As you have said, Isabel is a child who has served the goddess and the church for all of her life. That child is heading to the goddess’ side... She can serve the goddess forever in the world of the gods and live happily ever after. I am happy and proud, so I can’t help smiling at the thought.”

‘Bullshit.’

Grid couldn’t stand the nonsense. Pascal handed him the treasure chest.

“I wish you would accept this today.”

[Pascal wants to give you 1.8 million gold. Would you like to receive Pascal’s gift?]

[If you receive the gift, you must unconditionally accept one of Pascal’s requests.]

“Damian won’t be pope anyway. What can he do if he wins the hearts of the congregation? There are only 100 senior priests with voting rights and at least 80% of them are already mine. Duke Grid, please look at the future and make a wise choice...”

“I don’t want it.” Grid interrupted Pascal’s words. “I have no intention of holding hands with you, when just looking at your face makes me nauseous.”

Grid hated Pascal. This was because Pascal resembled those who tormented him in the past. He couldn't erase the image of Pascal bullying Damian and Isabel in his mind. He would never hold hands with Pascal, even if he was given 100 million gold. In the first place, political issues were also intertwined.

“That’s too bad.”

The smile had disappeared from Pascal’s face. His patience had reached its limit.

“Then is it fine to stop talking nicely? For the past few days, I have done my best to be friends with you, but you always mock my efforts and insult me. Don’t you know the meaning of courtesy?”

“Why should I be polite to you? Don’t you usually enjoy mocking and insulting your opponent?”

“Ack...!”

Grid’s attitude showed that he wouldn’t be persuaded. Pascal was nervous and spoke bluntly.

“Tell me what you want! I’m willing to give you whatever you want as long as you join my side! What would make you hold my hand?”

“You will give me anything?”

“Yes!”

“Hoh, isn’t this very tempting?”

There was finally a nibble. Pascal was delighted and prepared to listen to Grid’s requirements. Grid told him, “A thousand trillion.”

“...?”

A thousand trillion? Was it the name of a treasure?

‘It is the first time I’ve heard of it?’

Grid spoke again to Pascal, who was struggling to understand.

“Give me one thousand trillion gold. Then I will be your true friend.”

“This is crazy!”

He reflexively exclaimed. One thousand trillion gold was the empire’s treasury. No, it was an astronomical sum that would wipe out all the treasuries of the nations on the continent. Grid demanding such a ridiculous amount showed he wasn’t normal.

“What? Crazy? You said you would give me anything I want, but I’m crazy?”

“Ah, no. I became delirious due to my shock...”

Grid waved his hand at Pascal. He didn’t want to hear any excuses.

“The negotiations have collapsed. Then let’s each go our own way.”

Grid reached for Lifael’s Spear. It was for the purpose of moving to the smithy. Then the silently watching Kamiyan aimed his sword at Grid’s neck.

“Leave Lifael’s Spear. How long is an outsider going to carry the item of the church?”

“...”

Grid’s eyes sank as he looked down at the shining blade.

“Second.”

“What?”

“This is the second time you’ve pointed a sword at my neck. I’m

the duke of a kingdom.”

Kamiyan ridiculed him, “So what? Will you run to Wiesbaden, your king, and tell on me?”

The knight of another nation was disparaging his king. How heated would Grid become? Kamiyan deliberately tried to provoke Grid. Grid would lose his temper and be unable to use his skills properly. But his intentions came to naught. In the first place, Grid didn’t have much loyalty to the king.

“It’s good that you called my king’s name as if he was the next door neighbor’s dog.”

Grid grabbed Lifael’s Spear.

[White Transformation is activated.]

[You don’t have any divine power. White Transformation has failed to be activated. Side effects will occur to your body.]

[You have resisted.]

“You can’t afford to play with me.”

The reason that Grid couldn’t attack the elders and Pascal was due to the Goddess’ Curse. On the other hand, what about Kamiyan? He wasn’t a priest of the Rebecca Church.

There was no reason to hold back.

“Let’s go.”

Suuk.

Grid knew the strongest spearman, Pon. He had watched Pon fighting. In fact, they had sparred many times. Grid had developed an incomplete method of Pon’s spear technique.

Chaaeng!

The spear moved in a diagonal manner, causing Kamiyan’s sword to be deflected downwards.

“You!”

Kamiyan was surprised by the naturally flowing spear and stepped back. Grid extended his right leg back in this gap and stabbed the spear forward.

Peeeeeeong!

[Lifael’s Spear’s option effect is activated, causing the skill ‘Light Wheel’ to be generated.]

[Lifael's Spear's option effect is activated, dealing an additional 5,000 damage to the target.]

“Keook!”

Kamiyan couldn't believe it. Grid's stab suddenly shifted to a circle. It was an irregular attack that even those with 'Keen Senses' couldn't respond to.

“Cough! Cough!”

Kamiyan was hit in his waist by a heavy blow, causing him to fall down while coughing up blood.

‘Such power...!’

Kamiyan was stunned. The pain was as if his bones were broken, while his internal organs felt like they were going to burst. This was the power of a myth rated weapon and skill.

“T-this is impossible...”

Pascal was astonished as he watched Kamiyan. Red Knight. One of the strongest knights on the continent fell down so easily? There was something even more surprising.

“H-How can you use Lifael's Spear?”

The Rebecca Church's three divine artifacts were available only to selected beings. They needed to have innate transcendent divine power. The person also needed to pray to Goddess Rebecca for at least nine years. Finally...

‘They needed to be a woman!’

Pascal shouted.

“Y-You...” Grid remained impassive as Pascal turned pale blue. “Grid, you! Are you a woman?”

“...”

It was the most uncomfortable phrase Grid had heard since he was born. It wasn't even worth arguing about, so the 181cm tall and sturdy Grid tightened his grip on Lifael's Spear. He really meant to kill Kamiyan.

Pascal couldn't accept it and used Heal. Kamiyan was able to recover thanks to this and rose from his spot. There was fear on his face as he fixed his sword posture.

‘I has been a long time since I've seen Heal.’

Heal in Satisfy was much better than in usual games. It was because too much had to be given up in order to become Rebecca's priests. There were very few users who chose to become a Rebecca priest.



‘There are too many eyes watching.’

People were flocking to the garden. Grid believed that killing Kamiyan could adversely affect Damian’s election, so he withdrew.

“I will leave it for today.”

Kamiyan’s eyes glared at he gazed after Grid who was leaving leisurely.

‘Kill...! I will kill you Grid!’

The reason he was defeated today was due to his carelessness. He never dreamt that Grid could use a divine weapon.

‘Damn bastard!’

The wound in his side was causing him severe pain. He felt nauseous. Kamiyan pledged that he would make Grid kneel in a week when Earl Chirita back.

“Then I am going.”

The smithy inside the Vatican. The weapons for paladins were produced here. Grid held the Legendary Blacksmith’s Hammer in his hand.

“Shall I begin?”

Ttang! Ttang!

Lifael’s Spear. The weapon that a god made was reinterpreted by human hands.

# Chapter 271

---

Combat. In particular, replaying battles where one was defeated was a big help to their growth.

Kamiyan closed his eyes and replayed it.

‘When Grid decided to stab me.’

What if he didn’t defend, but decided to push forward instead?

‘I would still be hit. If Grid hit me from the side, the result would be the same.’

What if he backed off?

‘I would still be hit. At that time, Grid was already narrowing the distance between us with the maximum stride.’

No matter how he looked, defense was the best choice. However, the problem was that Kamiyan’s swordsmanship couldn’t defend against it.

‘It took an instant for the straight orbit to change into a circle.’

The spear flying in a straight line changed to a circular orbit just before it hit his sword. Honestly, it gave Kamiyan goose bumps. He was able to feel that Grid was an expert with the spear.

‘I have to respond with a skill.’

If he used Super Armor, he could defend against the attack. Then he would be able to counterattack while Grid was being pushed back.

‘Then I would’ve been the winner.’

He was hesitant to use his trump card in the first battle. He didn’t use the skill, so the result was a defeat.

“Dammit... I didn’t think it would hurt so much.”

He wore the Red Armor, but he couldn’t even survive one shot. The attack power of Lifael’s Spear was beyond imagination. It was truly a divine artifact.

‘It was a wrong fight from the beginning.’

Kamiyan hadn’t expected that Grid could use Lifael’s Spear. Therefore, he wasn’t vigilant and didn’t respond when Grid retrieved Lifael’s Spear. From there, the flow passed onto Grid. It was unfair.

‘Isn’t he a swordsman?’

Several members of the church had witnessed Grid fighting

against Drevigo. There were also elders among them. The elders had explained what happened. Grid was said to use a greatsword. Then how could he use a spear?

‘In addition, it’s Lifael’s Spear!’

Wasn’t Lifael’s Spear a weapon that could only be used by a few ‘women’ who received the goddess’ divine message?

“It’s really annoying.”

The biggest cause of his defeat was ‘wrong information.’ This error-prone information planted useless preconceptions and caused him to lose.

‘I should’ve assumed that Grid could use Lifael’s Spear.’

Then he wouldn’t have been hit so hard!

Kwaduduk!

Kamiyan gritted his teeth. It was enough to drive him crazy. He was boiling with anger. The anger was unleashed through his sword, as he trained.

“Grid! Next time will be different! I will be alert! I will show you the true power of the Red Knights!”

It was evaluated by the enemies that the current Red Knights were weaker than they were in the past. It was inevitable. The former Red Knights had the great swordsman Piaro, so the current Red Knights without Piaro were judged to be one level lower. Duke Limit had never once won against Piaro. But that was a story of the past.

‘Lord Limit is now over Piaro.’

It was clear that the Red Knights who studied under Duke Limit had also surpassed him. In order to prove it, the Red Knights had to be undefeated. Kamiyan was determined to beat Grid.

“You will see soon!”

Kwajak!

Kamiyan’s sword was covered in aura and smashed the large rock. He became even stronger.

\*\*\*

“Pagma.”

The legendary blacksmith and the best swordsman after Sword Saint Muller. He was known to be able to handle all types of weapons. The same was true for Grid, who inherited his power. But to even be able to use the three divine artifacts of the church...

“This is very frustrating.”

Pascal needed to quickly determine Isabel's successor. Pascal planned to raise his position by appointing a girl he secretly fostered as the new Rebecca's Daughter. But the problem was that Grid would definitely not hand over Lifael's Spear.

“...Damian, that bastard.”

This must be Damian's trick. He asked Grid to protect Lifael's Spear in order to contain Pascal.

“I won't be hit by such a trick.” Pascal went to meet the elders. He made them write an order for Grid to return Lifael's Spear. “Grid, even you can't violate the official order of our church.”

If the command was broken?

‘Then it can't be helped. You will be considered an enemy... Huh?’

Pascal held the order while heading towards the smithy.

“Pascal?”

“Damian!”

Pascal stumbled across Damian, who was campaigning. Damian was raising the atmosphere with the help of that fellow called Huroi, who was like a charlatan. Pascal was upset when he saw Damian.

“You! Lifael’s Spear is a divine artifact of our church! How could you give it to Grid illegally? You have to clear this up or you will be punished!”

Damian didn’t understand. “What are you saying? The current owner of Lifael’s Spear is Isabel-chan. She is the one who left it directly to Grid...”

“Shut up!”

“...”

“Isabel is already dead! So the ownership of Lifael’s Spear returned to the elders... Heok?”

Pascal suddenly closed his mouth. He looked like he had seen a ghost. His complexion was worse than when he wondered if Grid was a woman. It was because he saw a woman with brightly shining platinum hair approaching.

“What’s the fuss?” The woman questioned. It was Isabel.



“W-What is this?”

Isabel wasn't dead? Rather than dying, her color was completely recovered and she was walking fine on her own? Damian asked the stunned Pascal, “Isabel-chan is dead? Have you finally become senile?”

“Unbelievable!”

How did she suddenly recover her health after dying?

‘Things are going terribly wrong!’

Some unknown actions were occurring in a place that he couldn't see. This was a serious problem. Pascal held his head as he tried to understand the situation. Then he saw something dropping. It was hair. The stress that occurred since Grid appeared led to hair loss.

Hwaduk. Hwaduuk.

“ ... ”

A bunch of hair fell every time he touched his head, causing Pascal's anger to escape.

“Gridddd!”

This person. Things started to become twisted the moment he appeared. Pascal could no longer tolerate Grid's presence. He nervously tore up the order he just had written.

‘Grid! You are now my enemy!’

It was thoroughly decided. Damian and Isabel felt a sense of catharsis after seeing Pascal's state and clapped.

\*\*\*

[Light Wheel]

Stabbing, hacking, cutting, etc.

Any type of attack will be linked to a circular attack. The target won't be able to escape this irregular attack.

\* The hit rate is 100%.

\* Contains the light attribute.

This skill gave Lifael's Spear a 100% hit rate. There was no resource consumption or cooldown time. This skill had a 'high' chance of activating during a general attack, and the power was really fraudulent.

“I thought it wasn’t good because there was no additional damage.”

It was a miscalculation. Thanks to the extraordinary high base damage of Lifael’s Spear, the option of a 100% hit rate was huge. It was enough to knock down a famous Red Knight with one hit. It was an unexpected result even for Grid.

‘Lifael’s Spear. This is the majesty of a myth rated weapon.’

But there was one regrettable thing.

“A spear doesn’t fit with me.”

Pagma’s Swordsmanship Lv. 3 When deactivated, it increased Grid’s attack power by 32%, the chance of a critical attack by 22% and the damage of a critical attack by 15%. When activated, it allowed him to use active skills such as Kill, Link and Transcend.

However, this was on the condition that it was a sword type weapon. The skill wasn’t activated when weapons other than a sword type were equipped. It was a sad fact for Grid.

‘I have to give up on using Lifael’s Spear for myself.’

However, he scheduled it to be included in Grid’s set. It was for Pon, the guild members, and the soldiers who used the spear as their main weapon. That’s right. Grid planned for a day when the guild members and soldiers would wear Grid’s set.

“Kukukuk! Puhahahat!”

Overgeared Kingdom! Grid felt a thrill at the people who would praise the cool name, while the soldiers of his fantastic kingdom would wear the Grid set.

“That person... Isn’t he scary?”

“Right? I think so as well.”

“He doesn’t seem like a normal person...”

The smithy inside the Vatican. The blacksmiths muttered as they felt an negative energy coming from Grid. Their eyes weren’t good as they looked at Grid. But Grid didn’t care about the gaze of others. No. To be precise, there was no need to worry about it. His mind was solely focused on Lifael’s Spear.

Ttang! Ttang!

Lifael’s Spear was completely disassembled over two days. Grid tried to figure out the hidden structure of the spear through the process of reassembly. He spent a few days studying the spear in the smithy.

The process of observation, disassembly and assembly were tirelessly repeated. Thanks to his natural talents of ‘persistence’

and ‘concentration,’ Grid was able to immerse himself in the tedious process without ending it. The result...

[Your understanding of Lifael’s Spear is now at 100%!]

[Blueprint: Lifael’s Spear has been acquired.]

[Experiencing every detail of a myth rated weapon will raise your skills to the next level!]

[The level of all skills related to production will increase by one.]

[(Witness of God’s Weapon) Legendary Blacksmith’s Craftsmanship Skill has evolved into (Understanding of Gods’ Weapons) Legendary Blacksmith’s Craftsmanship Skill.]

“Good!”

Including the time he spent with Isabel in her room, he achieved this in 11 days. The hidden abilities didn’t appear as he expected, but he grasped how to use the Goddess’ Essence and various skills were strengthened. No, that wasn’t all. He had acquired the design of a myth rated item.

Grid was just as happy as when he obtained Piaro and Asmophel.

“First of all.”

Right now, he had no material to make Lifael's Spear. But...

Grid made a meaningful smile and grasped the hammer again.

## Chapter 272

---

‘I just need to obtain the materials if I don’t have them.’

Grid’s eyes were filled with greed as he dismantled Lifael’s Spear.

‘Shouldn’t I get some profit?’

Grid had saved Isabel by sacrificing the Goddess’ Essence. He wanted to receive a little something in return.

‘I will melt Lifael’s Spear.’

Then he could obtain some adamantium. It was a unique opportunity to obtain a god mineral for free.

‘It will be okay if I can take off a small portion of the spear.’

(Understanding of Gods’ Weapons) Legendary Blacksmith’s Craftsmanship Skill was level 6 and ‘greedy eyes’ was mastered. According to the result of his analysis, Lifael’s Spear was longer and thicker than necessary. It was somewhat unsuitable for women to use.

‘It will turn out nicely for Isabel if I reduce the length and thickness of the spear.’

Grid justified it to himself as he threw the spear into the furnace.

There was no hesitation. The essence of Grid's nature was greed. This was fueled by his desire as a blacksmith to make an item of a higher level as soon as possible. The present Grid was the embodiment of desire. No one could control him. Even the person involved couldn't suppress himself. He was like a drug addict in front of drugs.

Ttang! Ttang!

Grid's hands were much faster and sophisticated than before. It was thanks to the increase in skill level of his production skills. Lifael's Spear became shorter and thinner under his hands.

“Ohh!”

The blacksmiths in the smithy were at a loss for words. They looked at Grid's skills and wondered if this was a blacksmith of the gods.

“It's finished!”

After three hours of struggle, Grid reconstructed Lifael's Spear. His face distorted. The result was terrible.

[Incomplete Lifael's Spear has been created.]

[Incomplete Lifael's Spear]



The harmony designed by god is broken. This is a useless stick.

“...It’s like this.”

Had he experienced this only one or twice? Satisfy was thoroughly designed not to give any easy benefits.

“Sigh.”

Ttang! Ttang!

The frustrated Grid started to restore Lifael’s Spear. Unfortunately, it couldn’t be helped. He didn’t know what Goddess Rebecca would do if he gave Isabel an incomplete spear.

Ttiring~

Thus, he invested another three hours into restoring Lifael’s Spear. Then there was a cheerful sound effect and an unbelievable message window popped up.

[The result was terrible, but your vision and spirit to challenge reinterpreting a god’s weapon is deserving of high praise. You are qualified to become a true legend.]

[One of Pagma’s Descendant’s hidden pieces ‘Sealed Ability’ has been acquired.]

[The skill 'Legendary Blacksmith's Reconstruction' has been acquired.]

[Legendary Blacksmith's Reconstruction Lv. 1]

Reinterpret items with a 100% understanding into a new form.

The performance of the modified item will depend on your interpretation, skill and intentions.

\* An item can only be reconstructed once.

\* When the skill level increases, the number of reconstructions will increase by one.

[You have taken one step closer to becoming a true legend by opening the hidden piece 'Sealed Ability.' Skill cooldown time will be reduced by 10%.]

[Reputation throughout the continent will rise by +2.000.]

[You currently have 30,011 reputation throughout the continent. You can now use the Reputation Store.]

“...The old saying isn't wrong.” Grid clenched his fists before he burst out laughing. “Nice people live well! Kuhahahahat!”

Grid benefited greatly from returning Lifael's Spear to its original shape, and saw himself as a good person. That's right. His original malicious intent of trying to obtain adamantium was erased from his memories. The brain resembled its owner and was selfish.

\*\*\*

OGC was the world's first gaming specialty channel.

Decades before the emergence of virtual reality games, it held various game content and established the e-sports culture. Now Satisfy dominated the games market and OGC reigned as one of the world's top gaming stations.

“Let's do a live broadcast of the pope candidates' speeches.”

The director of OGC. He was a former PD who rose to an executive status, and had many accomplishments. It was enough to give him the nickname of 'Guaranteed Viewership.' But the members of his planning team raised concerns.

“How many people will be interested in who the pope of the Rebecca Church is? No one will be interested apart from the users who are part of the Rebecca Church.”

“Speech events are just static. The ratings will hit the floor and it won't be easy to obtain advertisements.”

“Wouldn’t it be better to air the PvP tournament that is taking place in the Zik Principality at that time?”

“We can record it, but why does it have to be a live broadcast? It’s the prime time.”

“It isn’t worth recording. It is better to cover it briefly in the news...”

The director watched his rebellious team and clapped. Once he confirmed that their attention was on him, he made a shocking remark.

“I was informed that a user is a pope candidate.”

“Heok?”

“I-Is this true?”

Last year, the Rebecca Church had around 71 million members. But this year, the number of members had crossed 80 million. It was estimated that it would cross 90 million by the end of this year. It truly was Satisfy’s first religion, as the growth rate was unbelievable. It was difficult to gauge how big it would grow in the future.

Then what if the master of this religion was a user? This was a rare scoop. It was a scoop comparable to the events that Grid was involved in. The motivation of the planning team started to burn.

“A live broadcast is good! Start promoting it right now!”

“I will seek sponsors.”

“I will obtain advertisements!”

“Whoa, whoa.” The director calmed his excited team members. “Do you want to create rumors? I don’t want to share this expensive information with other broadcasters. Our goal is to have the exclusive live coverage. This information should only be disclosed once it has started.”

As SNS evolved, the people’s speed of information sharing was fast enough to exceed common sense.

“This pope candidates speech event. At the start, the ratings might be less than 0.1%, but it will reach at least 15%. The prices of the ads we insert in the middle will be a new record. Now, go and prepare.”

“Yes!”

“Ku~ we will be busy.”

At the time, the director didn’t know this. OGC would secure the highest audience rating since its creation.

\*\*\*

Earl Chirita.

Pascal's father was a mere viscount 10 years ago. The political circles of the empire didn't pay attention to him. But 10 years ago. His position suddenly changed after his son Pascal became the head of the Judar Church. He was the father of the leader of a church with 20 million members, so he played a major role in politics and he earned the title of earl.

And now...

“Hup~! The air of the Vatican is very clear!”

Earl Chirita received the favor of Emperor Juander. It meant he became one of the best powers in the empire. It was natural, since his son would soon be pope. The earl's body was covered with various luxuries, so he really stood out. The various nobles who came to listen to the speeches of the pope candidates gathered around him.

“Earl Chirita, it's an honor to meet you.”

“In a month, you will be the father of His Holiness.”

“Won't you be awarded the title of duke at that time?”

The earl was excited at the behavior of the nobles from other nations. His life had changed like this thanks to having a good son. Pascal approached him at this time.

“Welcome, Earl Chirita.”

“Ohh, Sir Pascal. It has been a long time.”

Pascal was married to the church. Since he had an official position, he had to treat his father like everyone else. The two people excused themselves and moved to a secret place.

“Did you receive support from the emperor?”

“Um, yes. He sent five Black Knights and one Red Knight.

Pascal’s face twisted.

‘Only one Red Knight...’

The Red Knights were called the strongest group on the continent. But not long ago, didn’t Grid take down Kamiyan with one blow? He was skeptical about sending only one Red Knight as support.

“What is the number of the knight?”

“The 19th knight.”

“...!”

Pascal’s eyes widened with surprise. The disappointment and anxiety on his face disappeared.

‘A knight in the 10’s was sent!’

The number attached to the knight was a measure of strength. The 30th knight was called a 100 man army, while the 20th knight was called a 1,000 man army. The 10th knight? They were at a level that could cope with five people with the strength of the 20th knight alone. The 19th knight was dozens of times stronger than the 30th knight, Kamiyan.

‘The emperor truly cares about me!’

Pascal trembled with excitement when Earl Chirita asked him.

“But why did you ask for support?”

“A fly is bothering me.”

Pascal had seen Grid as a disaster just a while ago. But not anymore. Now that the 19th knight came, Grid was just a fly.



‘My hair loss will soon disappear.’

Pascal’s forehead had become exposed in just a few days, but now he had a wide smile on his face.

\*\*\*

“There will be a fuss.”

The Vatican was fully crowded. Grid frowned as he watched the surging crowd.

‘OGC Station?’

Broadcast cameras were installed throughout the Vatican. Choi Hyeyoung, an OGC announcer was rehearsing in front of the fountain.

‘It will be annoying.’

The public’s interest in the pope election seemed to be much higher than expected. If they saw him here, he would be flooded with interview requests. In order to avoid this, Grid wore the Slaughterer’s mask and eye patch. His face and ID were hidden.

‘It’s easier these days.’

Damian and Huroi approached the relieved Grid. Isabel was with them. Then Grid handed Lifael's Spear to her.

“White Transformation was sealed. It won't eat at your health anymore.”

“Thank you... Thank you very much.”

Isabel was thrilled to tears. Thanks to Grid, she was saved from a hellish life and she liked Grid more than before. To her, Grid and Damian were bright lights from Goddess Rebecca. Meanwhile, Huroi was sighing with relief.

‘I was worried that My Lord would try to take some of the materials and receive a divine punishment...’

Fortunately, it seemed like he didn't do anything to the divine weapon.

‘Not becoming greedy when seeing such a great item... My Lord has grown further. It's really commendable.’

Huroi gave Grid a thumbs up.

‘Why is he doing that?’ Grid was bewildered.

Meanwhile, there were eyes closely watching him.

# Chapter 273

---

OGC Station's PD, Park Jongsoo. He entered Satisfy directly and watched Damian.

"He's the pope candidate?"

"Yes, the audience ratings will become 15% due to him. Stick seven cameras to him."

"That's the rumored Isabel who is a Rebecca's Daughter? She's prettier than the rumors say."

"That's right. Put two cameras on her."

Her beauty will increase the number of male viewers. It was an indispensable element in broadcasting.

"I understand. Eh? That person...?" Park PD was looking at Damian and Isabel, when he became excited at the sight of an Asian man. "Huroi! The person next to Damian is Huroi!"

"Huroi? The first ranked orator, Huroi?"

"Yes! Overgeared!"

"The person closest to Grid?"

“It’s certain!”

“Hoh? What is this?”

Someone close to Grid was attached to a pope candidate? The eyes of the director shone.

‘Is Grid related to this election?’

Grid. He was the first to obtain a legendary class and South Korea’s pride. He was involved in a variety of events, and now he was intervening in the Rebecca Church?

“Maybe this... Perhaps we might obtain a scoop?”

Of course, regardless of Grid, Huroi could be doing a personal activity.

“But we need to keep an eye out. We need to find out what type of relationship pope candidate Damian and Grid have. Put two cameras on Huroi as well.”

“Yes, I understand. Then what about that man?”

The man wore a bizarre half mask that had a curious symmetry between crying and smiling. His face and ID couldn’t be seen. He seemed to be close with Damian’s group.

“Put one camera on him.”

The courtyard that Huroi was in. Park PD agreed with the director’s command to observe the man more thoroughly.

\*\*\*

Grid’s current insight stat exceeded 1,400. He could feel the attention of two low level users from 50m away.

‘They are the station officials.’

As soon as they logged out, the cameras would start to roll. Grid was able to grasp their exact distance, despite not seeing them.

‘It’s too annoying, which is why I hid my identity.’

Grid scoffed. He didn’t find the cameras particularly intrusive. It would be easy to escape them.

Damian asked him, “You have sealed Lifael’s Spear, so are you returning to Reidan?”

Both Damian and Isabel looked regretful. Grid shook his head.

“No. I still have something to do.”

Pascal finally recognized Grid as an enemy. It was what he wanted. The moment that Pascal attacked him...

‘I will get experience.’

Damian spoke to Grid who was smiling wickedly. “Then please watch over me. I will do my best. I will tell everyone why I must become pope. I believe it is the reward for your infinite grace.”

Damian had been making speeches with Huroi, so his eyes were filled with confidence. Grid nodded as he saw the imposing gaze.

“I’ll trust you.”

“Thank you. Then go and get ready.”

“Grid, you must tell me before you leave. Don’t leave without telling me. Understood?”

“Yes.”

Damian and Isabel left for the venue, leaving Grid and Huroi alone. Isabel looked back a few times, like she was worried that Grid might disappear, but Damian just looked ahead and vowed again.

‘I have to work hard today to build a foundation that will allow

me to become pope.'

Grid saved Isabel-chan. Huroi also helped Damian gain the trust of the church's members. Damian was desperate to give back to those who hadn't been able to hunt for two weeks because they were stuck in the Vatican.

'I need to gain the ability to repay them. And in order to defend Isabel, I must become pope.'

Damian looked like he was heading to the battlefield. After a moment. Huroi asked carefully after he was left alone with Grid.

"Can I ask what it is you still have to do?"

"Hunting."

"Hunting... What are you saying?"

"Yes, apart from Ruby and Sexy Schoolgirl, aren't you and I the only ones who haven't reached level 300? Since we came all the way here, shouldn't we get some levels?"

The Vatican was an area with no monsters. It meant there was nothing to hunt.

"What are you going to catch to level up...? Can I ask about your plan?"

He had some idea. But he wanted his prediction to be wrong, so he asked out loud. Grid laughed at Huroi. “Elders.”

Pascal and the elders. They were trash who despised the weak and were a huge barrier to Damian. What would they do if Damian gave a good speech? He could never become pope with Pascal in the way. Grid had to take care of Pascal.

“And.”

Grid’s gaze shifted behind Huroi.

“There is a bonus of seven knights.”

“...!”

Huroi hurriedly looked back. There were two knights in red armor and five knights in black armor.

“Grid, I will pay back that disgrace.”

Grid welcomed Kamiyan, “You came.”

He was relaxed. According to his own experience, the Black Knights and Red Knights were weak, unlike the rumors. The rumors must be exaggerated. Grid judged that he could take care of two Red Knights and the Black Knights in an instant.



At that moment.

[The pope candidate's speech event will begin soon. For the sake of safety, all outsiders are prohibited from possessing weapons.]

[All weapons in your inventory will be disabled.]

“...Eh?”

“Huh?”

The bewildered Grid and Huroi cried out. Kamiyan laughed at them and pulled out his sword. Kamiyan received the warning from Pascal ahead of time and registered the knights with the Rebecca Church. It was an effective temporary measure. Unlike Grid and Huroi, they could use weapons.

“This will be your grave.”

‘Ah, really.’

It had been a really long time since he stepped in shit. As Kamiyan approached, Grid retreated behind Huroi and said.

“We should leave here for now.”

“Good decision!” Huroi immediately summoned his drake.  
“Descend! Lord of the Skies above the Grasslands!”

“...”

There was only silence. Grid’s expression stiffened.

“Why isn’t your drake coming?”

“T-That...” Huroi started sweating. “My pet summoning doesn’t work.”

“That joke isn’t funny in a situation like this.”

Grid tried to summon Noe and Randy.

[Goddess Rebecca is watching the pope candidates. Due to the extreme divine power concentrated on the Vatican, non-human existences can’t enter.]

[Pet summoning has failed.]

“There really is a variety of things.”

The relaxation disappeared from Grid’s face as he grumbled.

\*\*\*

“The problem with the Rebecca Church is that it is divided into several factions. Unity must be achieved in order to properly go against the Yatan Church...”

The speeches from the pope candidates began. They were free to speak as they liked. It caused drowsiness.

OGC Station. The employees had dark expressions. It was because the rating for the live broadcast didn't meet their expectations.

“Did you spread the information that a user is appearing among the pope candidates?”

“The candidate's speeches are more boring than expected. There isn't enough to make the viewers stick around.

“Try to focus on Damian more than the speeches of the other pope candidates. Keep filming the people I mentioned.”

“I understand.”

Out of the dozens of monitors, the most notable one was Isabel's beautiful face.

“This?”

The director was biting his fingernails out of nervousness, when his eyes suddenly widened. Something was happening on a small monitor at the bottom.

“Number 19! Look at monitor number 19!”

\*\*\*

–This is boring.

–Why am I watching this broadcast?

–Isabel is really pretty.

The netizens, who came to the OGC web channel after hearing that there was a user among the pope candidates, started complaining. The chat window was bombarded with curses.

–No fun. No fun.

–Guys, is the pope going to be decided today?

–Nope. The pope election is in one month. This is just publicity for the pope candidates.

–What? Then I don't need to watch this.

–I know who the pope candidate is, so I will be going.

–The PvP tournament is live on another channel right now. There is more benefit to watching that.

–I should go see. There’s no point watching this broadcast.

Thus. There was a quick reduction in the number of viewers on the OGC web channel. Suddenly, knights in red armor and black armor filled the screen that previously contained Isabel’s face and the boring pope candidates.

–Huh? Red Knights?

–Wow! Red Knights and Black Knights?

–This isn’t fake?

–It’s real if you look at the pattern on the armor.

–The Saharan Empire’s strongest knights!

Their unannounced appearance excited the viewers.

–But why are the Red Knights and Blacks Knights in the Vatican?

–Who are they fighting?

The attention of the audience focused on the people that the enemy knights were attacking. The opponents were two users. One was an unidentified masked man and the other was the first ranked orator, Huroi.

–Why are users fighting knights...?

–Huroi will die.

–Even if he is part of the Overgeared Guild, he still can't beat a knight ~ ⇨ ⇨ ⇨

–It will be the first time the Overgeared Guild is defeated.

–Who is the masked man?

–Who cares? It won't last long.

It was a one-sided battle. The knight called Kamiyan was driving back the man in the mask, while five Black Knights were surrounding Huroi. They wielded swords, while the masked man and Huroi could only evade and defend without any weapons.

Why weren't they holding weapons? As the viewers started to question it, subtitles rose that explained the current situation.

[Non-Rebecca Church members are prohibited from using

weapons.]

Who was the man in the mask? Why and how were they under attack by the Red Knights and Black Knights? The viewers wondered. But they quickly realized that their questions wouldn't be resolved.

–It's over.

–Boring.

This fight will soon be over.

The man in the mask and Huroi would soon be pierced by the swords and turned to ashes, then the screen would once again show the boring speeches of the pope candidates. The viewers were sure of it, but the man in the video didn't allow the obvious development.

“You disgraceful bastards are really cheap.”

The man in the mask cursed...

This voice was familiar?

–Eh???

-Grid?

-God Grid!

The comments in the chat window and the ratings started to rise exponentially. OGC's director was startled. As everyone's attention was focused on the screen...

“Lifael's Spear.”

Grid pulled out a gold spear. It was the pavranium that used to be divided into seven blades in the past. Now it exerted an overwhelming attack power, causing blood to spray from Kamiyan's chest. Earlier, the director said that Damian would cause the ratings to rise to 15%.

“We are unable to measure the audience ratings!!!”

The call to raise the advertising shook OGC Station.



# Chapter 274

---

Detecting the target. Predicting the risks. These were phrases that described the insight stat. Before meeting Piaro, Grid had only used insight to measure combat power. But in fact, insight was an absolute factor that could elevate his combat power.

In other words, he could predict risks.

“You rat bastards!”

He could read the enemy’s movements. Grid didn’t easily allow Kamiyan to attack him. He evaded or defended, then linked a counterattack. These were movements that Piaro had taught him several times.

“Keok!”

The efficient movements helped him draw out 100% of his abilities. Grid dealt a strong punch.

“K-Kuaaack! You bastard!”

Kamiyan couldn’t believe it. Rather than overwhelming an opponent who didn’t have a weapon, he was receiving damage.

‘The difference between me and this guy is so large? Something is wrong...! It can’t be!’

Kamiyan believed that the empire was the whole world. He was indifferent to the happenings of small kingdoms. Therefore, he had no idea about Grid. He only knew about the first time Grid came to the Vatican. Grid was just someone who ‘barely’ defeated ex-pope Drevigo.

But what was the truth? Grid had experience raiding bosses much more powerful than Drevigo. Under the guidance of Piaro, he had fought Pagma’s clone 83 times. To be exact, Grid studied under Piaro, who was once the captain of the Red Knights. He wasn’t an opponent that the 30th knight Kamiyan could go against.

Grid provoked Kamiyan. “Is your sword just a decoration? Isn’t it disgraceful that you can’t even subdue a bare handed opponent?”

“Shut up!”

Kamiyan lost his composure, then a gold spear suddenly flew and stabbed his chest. It was because his movements had become bigger after falling for Grid’s provocation. This gave an advantage to Grid. The ‘Vital Spot Detection’ of the Slaughterer’s Eye Patch combined with his high insight to create an explosive synergy. At this moment, Grid was the person controlling the puppet called Kamiyan.

Peok! Peeeeek!

The strongest martial artist, Regas. It might be awkward, but Grid could follow his movements. Sometimes short, sometimes

cool, his powerful fists stretched out nonstop. The attacks that tenaciously aimed at the seams of his armor confused Kamiyan.

‘Another five...!’

When Grid punched once, his gloves intermittently emitted light. Once that happened, Kamiyan felt like he was struck five times. It was the effect of the ‘5 Joint Attacks’ attached to Holy Light Gloves.

That’s right. Grid was actively relying on his items as always.

Swaeek!

Puk!

Lifael’s Spear shot like a bullet every time there was a gap. This was the pinnacle of the power of items, a reproduction of a divine weapon made of pavranium. Unlike Grid’s bare hands, it dealt damage to Kamiyan that couldn’t be ignored.

[You have dealt 3,830 damage to the target.]

‘Okay, this time it struck properly.’

[Lifael’s Spear (Reproduction)]

Rating: Unique

Durability: None

Attack Power: 101~730

\* Divine Power +200

\* Fixed damage of +1,500 on each attack.

\* There is a low probability of activating the 'Light Wheel' skill.

\* Attack power +20% against those with dark magic power.

Maybe by the blacksmith G, who is being reborn as a true legend.

It is a miniature version of one of the three divine artifacts of the Rebecca Church, Lifael's Spear.

It is made from the legendary mineral with a will, pavranium. Therefore, it has a strong tendency to protect its owner. It makes decisions and moves by itself.

Weight: 14

There was no handgrip on the spear, so people couldn't use it directly. So it wasn't classified as a weapon. It might be due to

that, or because it had divine power, but Lifael's Spear was free from the ban on weapons.

Grid aggressively took advantage of it. Kamiyan became increasingly injured.

“Kuaaah! Kill! I will kill you!”

Originally, Kamiyan was planning to play with Grid slowly. Now he became irritated and impatiently used a skill.

Papat!

Kamiyan used Keen Senses and consecutively avoided Grid's attack. His sword drew several lines without a time delay. It was the manifestation of Dual Cross Sword. It was only four strokes, but the quickly was comparable to Link. This was followed by a wave of energy.

The red light from Grid's eyes darkened. His high insight was warning him.

‘I can't avoid it.’

Should he fight back right afterwards? No. Grid's bare hands would only receive damage that way. It was too weak. Then,

‘Crush it.’

Grid formed a fist. Confronting an aura blade with his bare hands, it was crazy. Kamiyan believed that Grid's fist would be torn into eight pieces. The millions of viewers watching the battle were the same. But it was too arrogant to judge a legend by a moderate genius.

There was a reason for Grid's behavior that the public couldn't imagine. The power of items.

Chaaeng!

The moment the cross sword collided with Grid's fist...

Flash!

There was a light from the ruby ring Grid was wearing.

[The option effect of 'Dark Bus' Earring' is activated, neutralizing the target skill.]

“What?”

Kamiyan was shocked!

–Wow, what is that?

-The skill disappeared;;

-No, in the first place, why is Grid's control so good? How can he punch back against such quick swordsmanship? Is that really Grid?

-His agility is high.

-○ ○ It seems like his agility is maximized by his gear.

The viewers admired it.

'If I can't avoid it, then I should use it.'

Grid's expression shot through the magic ball was splendid.

'Take a good look.'

Chaaeng!

Grid's fist pierced through the cross sword and struck Kamiyan's face. Kamiyan staggered and Lifael's Spear aimed towards him. Grid took out the Red Lightning Summoning Bead that he obtained from hunting the Frostlight Orc Chief in the past.

'I am the master of the Overgeared Guild.'

The Overgeared Guild was the strongest.

‘Don’t look down on us!’

This was a warning to the seven guilds who dared to invade Reidan while he was away. Then the red lightning bolt fell.

Kurururung.

The red lightning bolt that fell from the sky was nestled in Lifael’s Spear.

Puok!

Additional lightning damage was added to the spear, which pierced Kamiyan.

[Critical!]

[The red lightning adds 30% damage. The target has received an electric shock.]

[You have dealt 17,300 damage to the target.]

“Kuaaaaak!”

Kamiyan screamed. It was the worst pain since the battle began. Now that he was in shock, it was a chance to deal a fatal injury.



Grid determined and activated Blacksmith's Rage. Rather than using Grid's Boots that maximized the power of a greatsword, Grid equipped Braham's Boots. Then he wore the Hooded Zip Up. His movement speed was increased by 40%.

“W-Wait a minute...!”

Kamiyan begged as he was faced with the evil red light, but it was useless. Unbreakable Justice, the skill that was learned by rescuing Huroi and acquiring the title of Apostle of Justice. It was expressed through Grid's fist.

Kwaaaaang!

“...!”

Kamiyan couldn't even scream. His head was struck and he was thrown into the smithy wall. His teeth were broken and blood covered the Slaughterer's Mask.

[Critical!]

[The Holy Light Gloves's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[You have dealt 7,020 damage to the target.]

Jjejeok! Jjejejeok!

Cracks started to appear on the wall of the smithy above where Kamiyan's head had struck. This scene was proof of Grid's strength, which exceeded the level of a human. But more than two-thirds of Kamiyan's health still remained.

This was the limit of bare fists. First of all, Kamiyan's health and defense was too high.

‘He won't be defeated unless he dies.’

There was another Red Knight in the distance. Grid would take full advantage of the lazy attitude of the knight who stood on the sidelines without participating. Grid would kill Kamiyan before the knight intervened.

Chaaeng! Chaaeng! Jjejejeok!

Grid's fists continuously punched Kamiyan's face. Grid's damage and speed were enhanced by Blacksmith's Rage, so he completely neutralized Kamiyan. Kamiyan used Super Armor and tried to get away from Grid, but Dark Bus' Ring neutralized it.

‘This bastard is a dragon!’

The golden spear, fast moving boots, ring that neutralized skills, gloves that hit several times, armor with overwhelming defense, and so on. Grid was covered with artifacts that appeared in legends. It was like an imperial treasury was walking around. Due

to the short life span of humans, it was impossible to collect such artifacts in their entire life.

Kamiyan didn't like Grid. In the meantime, Grid's punching continued.

Kururung!

The wall of the smithy completely collapsed. As the place to lean on disappeared, Kamiyan fell down and Grid's knee hit his jaw. Then Lifael's Spear flew towards Kamiyan and wounded him,

Puooook!

Blood scattered all over the remnants of the smithy. It was a scene reminiscent of a battlefield.

-Wow...

-God...

This strength was beyond common sense. After the golem invasion, Grid had grown much more aware from the public's eyes. He seemed to have also overcome his only weakness, control. Items, skills, stats and now control, Grid was becoming truly perfect.

-I had to change my underwear.

–I’m wearing a diaper.

–But isn’t a Red Knight weaker than the rumors?

–This is the 30th knight? It is said that they are strong according to their number.

–○ ○ The single numbers must be a real wall.

–What? I was almost scared of Grid again.

–I am scared.——

–So that’s the 30th knight? Even other rankers can defeat him.

–No. Grid is using his bare hands.

–What bare hands? He has the golden spear. Isn’t that a weapon?

There were dozens of chat messages per second in the OGC web channel chat window. The chat administrators tried to restrain abusive users, but were forced to give up halfway. On the other hand, the TV channel’s ratings were exceeding 30%. The ratings soared in real time.

It was 6:20 p.m. on a Saturday. It was prime time with various

popular programs, so this was a phenomenal record for a cable channel.

‘Indeed, Grid’s power on audience ratings is beyond imagination.’

It was difficult to predict how the ratings would go up. But there was one problem.

“Isn’t this too cruel?”

“We will be hit with a warning. We might have to stop broadcasting for a while.”

Grid’s battle style wasn’t good for minors to watch. The opponent was an NPC, but Grid kept smiling as he hit the vital points. He was called a psychopath for a reason. The team members were concerned.

“I will take responsibility for everything. Don’t worry and keep broadcasting.”

His broadcaster’s blood was boiling. He would take responsibility for any repercussions, even if he needed to take off his clothes. He would write a new legend in the broadcasting world.

# Chapter 275

---

19th knight, Fulito. He was dissatisfied with this mission. His high pride meant he was upset at having to follow the orders of a priest.

‘I am a knight in the 10s.’

He questioned why a such a distinguished person the Red Knights had to do a chore like this.

‘It is sufficient for the guys in the 20s, tsk.’

This disgruntled thought disappeared the moment he witnessed Grid overwhelming Kamiyan.

‘Strong.’

Was he a duke of the Eternal Kingdom? That person called Grid, his skills were excellent and he was also holding several artifacts that were at the level of a national treasure. In particular, the performance of the golden spear was phenomenal.

‘A competent person is hiding in a small kingdom.’

It was true that Kamiyan was inexperienced, but he was still a Red Knight. He was a member of the strongest group. It was honestly surprising that Grid could crush him so easily.

‘It is approximately the level of the 21st knight. I have to intervene.’

The restlessness and boredom in Fulito’s eyes disappeared. He was finally motivated.

“Let’s take a look.”

Lifael’s Spear stabbed continuously at Kamiyan, who suffered a fatal wound. Right before Kamiyan died, Fulito fired a skill. At the same time, Grid used Fly. Fulito witnessed Grid flying towards him and smiled with satisfaction.

‘Did you notice that I am your rival?’

Fulito wasn’t careless. He pulled out his sword and tried to attack Grid, only to stop.

‘What?’

Regardless of his will, his consciousness headed to another place. He became completely indifferent to Grid. He didn’t swing his sword.

‘Why am I doing this?’

Swaeek!

Grid brushed past the side of the confused Fulito. It was a dreadful speed.

\*\*\*

“Pant... Pant...”

Apostle of Justice’s Partner. Very few people knew about this part of Huroi’s identity. When he was with Grid, all of his stats increased by 20%. He also had many skills that could be used without needing weapons. But he was different from Grid.

He didn’t have overwhelming stats like Grid. He was fundamentally an orator, so his combat related stats like strength, stamina and agility were extremely low. He didn’t even have the power of his items. It was impossible for him to confront five Black Knights with his bare hands.

“Ugh...”

Huroi moaned while bleeding. The Black Knights glared angrily at him.

“Wicked person! How could you scorn my late grandmother? I will surely kill you!”

“Why are you talking about my parents?”



“My colleagues didn’t ask me to pick up soap!”

That’s right.

Huroi had already ridiculed them. He debuffed the enemies, but now he reached his limit. The cooldown of Spiteful Tongue had yet to end and his whole body was already wounded. His health had fallen to a dangerous level.

But Huroi wasn’t worried about his own life right now. He could die a hundred times. Lost experience and items? It was incomparable to his lord’s life. Huroi just wanted his lord to be safe.

“M-My Lord...!”

How much frustration was he feeling while fighting against a Red Knight with his bare hands? Huroi turned his gaze towards Grid. He thought that Grid would be going through a lot. But it was different.

“Die! Die! Die! Puhahahat!”

“...”

Grid was fine. He was enjoying himself while one-sidedly beating up the Red Knight. The knight’s face was swollen to the point that

it was pitiful.

“Wow.” Huroi felt like an idiot for worrying.

Puok!

As Huroi’s attention was wandering, a sword flew and deeply pierced his side.

“Where are you looking?”

“Kuck!”

Huroi’s field of view shook. Now he had less than two-tenths of his health left. If he received two or three more attacks then he would die. Huroi gritted his teeth.

‘I need to bring one of them with me.’

It would relieve the burden on Grid. Huroi made up his mind and moved with all his strength. He grabbed one of the Black Knights and punched with all his strength. But with his skills and strength, he couldn’t hurt the Black Knight. His fists falling on the black armor was just like a cotton bat.

“This weak brat! I don’t even feel a tingle!”

The sneering knight grabbed Huroi's wrist and raised his arm. Then the area around Huroi's heart was exposed. Another Black Knight stabbed precisely with his sword.

–This is normal. How can a Black Knight be taken down without a weapon?

–Right... Grid is abnormal.

Huroi and the viewers took Huroi's death for granted. But Grid was different. Grid didn't party with Huroi because of the waste of experience, but he didn't want Huroi to die. He was anxious about Huroi and used the 'Secret Hero' ability.

Secret Hero was one of the titles he won while raiding Dark Bus. The condition to acquire this title was to 'raid' three named bosses higher in level 'alone.' It wasn't a title that just anyone could get, and its value was unmatched.

[You have dispersed the consciousness of the enemies.]

The aggro was turned off.

[The skill 'Influence' has been activated. This effect will last for 10 seconds.]

[Reduces the defense of all enemies within 50m of you by 50%.]

[The skill 'Freely Move' can be used once.]

[Creates a high level daash skill that avoids all attacks until it reaches the 'desired target' that is within 200 meters.]

“You dare!”

Teong!

Grid became furious after seeing Huroi and floated in the air. Then he rushed towards the Black Knights. His movement speed was so fast that the camera lost him for a moment.

“Huh...?”

Fulito, who was rushing towards Grid, stopped in place. He wasn't able to focus on Grid due to the effect of his consciousness being dispersed. Grid ignored him and passed by.

“A really strange ability.”

Fulio clicked his tongue and swung his sword towards the distant Grid.

Pahat!

A strong aura poured out like a flash of light. Grid's back was

fully exposed. It was natural that he would be hit by Fulito's aura. But Grid had Freely Move activated. He was able to avoid all attacks except for automatic targeting skills. As if he had eyes in the back of his head, Grid moved his body and avoided Fulito's attack. Then he broke through four Black Knights.

“W-What?”

The Black Knight trying to stab Huroi's heart was shocked. Grid's movements were phenomenal.

“Get lost.”

Peeok! Puk!

“Ugh!”

The combo of Lifael's Spear and Unbreakable Justice was used. The Black Knight's defense was reduced due to Influence, so he suffered great damage. Grid kicked the Black Knight away and grabbed Huroi.

“Are you still weak? You still have the status of a punching bag.”

“Haha... I am weak.”

In the end, the power of his items was still lacking.

“Let’s aim for the third advancement class soon. Then I’ll make new items for you. Your biggest problem is that you are lacking items.”

“I will keep that in mind.”

“Join my party now.”

It happened when Grid extended a hand to Huroi. Kamiyan regained his posture, rushed over and attacked Huroi.

“Cough...!”

“...!”

Huroi’s blood soaked Grid’s Hooded Zip Up. Grid’s expression stiffened. Huroi was worried about Grid even when dying.

“Please... Stay alive. My Lord absolutely can’t collapse.”

[Your morale has increased.]

[Your attack power and magic attack power will significantly rise for the next attack.]

[The next attack will be a critical hit!]

Flop!

Huroi sat down after using the strongest buff skill that he saved for Grid. Kamiyan wielded his sword again, aiming at Huroi who only have a sliver of health left. He saw that Grid cared about Huroi.

Chaaeng!

It went as Kamiyan intended. Grid moved to protect Huroi. He took out the Divine Shield after a long time and blocked Kamiyan's attack.

“You! You are like a turtle!”

Kamiyan laughed at Grid who was protecting his colleague with a shield and swung his sword.

Chaaeng! Chaeeeeeng!

Puok! Puk puk!

Grid could only face Kamiyan and defend. He couldn't respond to the Black Knights who were stabbing from the rear. He couldn't avoid it and protect Huroi at the same time. Huroi didn't like it.

“My Lord, why are you sacrificing yourself for me! Wake up! Fight against the enemies! I don't want to grab at My Lord's

ankles!”

“You and I, aren’t we friends before the master and subordinate relationship?”

“...!”

“Well, I usually treat you more like a subordinate than a friend.”

He would repay Huroi’s honest heart someday. He had promised many times.

Puk! Puuok!

Seokeok!

After that, the injuries on Grid’s body increased as he protected Huroi.

‘Foolish man. Sacrificing yourself to protect your subordinate, you are no match for me.’

Fulito folded his arms. He lost interest in Grid and returned to his bystander’s attitude. Meanwhile, Kamiyan’s onslaught continued.

“Without that golden spear, you are nothing!”



Kamiyan didn't give Grid a chance to breathe. Then a notification window flashed in front of Grid.

[The Legendary Blacksmith's Patience skill has been activated.]

[Health, defense and dexterity will rise by 200% for one hour.]

It was a skill that couldn't be used intentionally. It was only triggered when he was showing extreme patience. Grid had some room to move thanks to its help, while Kamiyan and the Black Knights turned pale.

‘What ridiculous defense!’

Grid wouldn't fall, no matter how much he was injured. Therefore, Kamiyan and the Black Knights looked at Grid like he was a monster. Grid's armor and shield were so powerful. How long could he endure?

“Light Sword!”

Kamiyan used a skill that he developed from Duke Limit.

Chaaeng!

A sword of aura moved through the air and struck the Divine Shield. It was the overwhelming attack power. Grid's body was

defenseless for a moment, and five Black Knights stabbed at him.

At that moment. The Slaughterer's Mask that covered half of Grid's face was painted a clear red. This was why Grid allowed the attacks of the Black Knights without defending using Lifael's Spear.

[The effect of Evil Spirit's Bloody Tears is activated. Attack power will increase by 50% for 5 seconds.]

"Now it's my turn." Grid invoked Blacksmith's Rage and declared towards Kamiyan. "I will kill all of you within five seconds."

A dark red light shone from his eyes. Kamiyan perceived the danger and triggered Keen Senses. Grid's fist flew towards him. Kamiyan tried to avoid it, but Lifael's Spear flew and constricted his behavior.

"Kuheook!"

What was this damage? It was much more powerful than before. Grid's fists continuously struck Kamiyan's face, who was shocked by the previous impact through the red armor. The Black Knights tried to control Grid by attacking him, but it was useless. Lifael's Spear flew over and protected him.

Chaaeng! Jjang! Jjejejeok!

Crash!

Blacksmith's Rage, Evil Spirit's Bloody Tears and Morale Boost.

Kamiyan was constantly struck for four seconds by Grid's fists that had the strongest buff skills overlapped, and eventually kneeled down. His remaining health was already low so he couldn't survive five seconds.

"This... Yo...u."

A grey pillar rose into the sky. It symbolized Kamiyan's end.

"..."

A Red Knight was defeated with bare hands! Everyone was shocked. All of South Korea was shaking. The news spread around the world within minutes. Currently, OGC's audience rating was 41%.

"Are you having fun?"

OGC Station.

The director was cheering like it was a jackpot, when a visitor arrived. Her perfect proportions and slender legs captivated everyone's eyes. She was so beautiful that all other existences faded away. It was none other than Yura.

“I came to receive Youngwoo-ssi’s payment.”

Yura made a smile that fascinated those of all ages. Her eyes were as cold as ice.

# Chapter 276

---

Yura was praised as one of the best beauties in the world. Her beauty transcended race and people's tastes. She was a hundred times more beautiful in reality than on TV or photos. It felt like they would go blind when they stared at her.

It was so astounding that everyone was silent.

“...”

The director was entranced by Yura's beauty and came forward. He was 45 years old. He married his first love 20 years ago and hadn't cheated once. But this was the first time he faced a crisis.

“Hum hum! Hum!” The director regained his senses. He cleared his throat and smiled brightly. “It is the most auspicious day for this station thanks to Yura-ssi's presence. But why did you come here?”

“I came to claim Youngwoo-ssi's fee.”

“Youngwoo...?”

One man came to mind.

‘Grid.’

His real name was Shin Youngwoo. The team members were agitated.

“Did Grid give you permission to broadcast live?”

“What permission? We didn’t know it was Grid in the first place.”

“Huh, you can be in big trouble if you aren’t careful.”

“Why is Yura coming forward for Grid?”

“The rumor that she is close to Grid is true.”

“...Isn’t Grid together with Jishuka? Wasn’t there a scandal last time?”

“There was also a scandal with Yura.”

“...”

The men trembled. They really envied Grid. It was to the point where they wanted to cry.

‘In my next life, I must be born as Grid!’

They would hit the ground and wail with regret if they were born

as Grid, but they didn't know this fact.

“Let's go somewhere else.”

The director led Yura to his office. The chief director's office. Elegance flowed from Yura as she sat on the sofa. Even the way she held the cup of tea was reminiscent of a noble. Yura sipped the tea before cutting to the chase.

“Pay Youngwoo-ssi 30% of the ad revenue generated by this broadcast. Then Youngwoo-ssi will forget that it was broadcasted without his permission.”

“30% of the ad revenue?”

It was absurd. It was enough to break down the broadcasting system.

“This joke is too much.”

Currently, the best star in South Korea was Yura. Even she wasn't given a proportion of the advertising revenue for a broadcast. Grid was a popular trend, but Yura's demands were too unrealistic.

“I will give 350 million won.”

It was an amount that put him in the same class as Yura. This

was more than necessary. But it didn't come close to satisfying Yura.

“You know that you can be held seriously liable if you use the gameplay video of another person for commercial purposes without permission.”

“...”

“Many cruel things were shown on this broadcast, so the Communications Commission is likely to come down harshly on you. It will become bothersome. Excess greed is just a poison.”

Yura was one of the wealthiest people in South Korea. She had the best lawyers. The director wasn't ignorant of this. He thought carefully and replied, “I know that our position is disadvantageous. But 30% is too much.”

It was estimated that the advertising revenue of this live broadcast would be close to 15 billion won. This was an industry record. But to hand over one-third of it to an individual? It was beyond common sense and he couldn't make the decision alone.

“In the first place, we relayed without knowing that the man in the mask was Grid. There is no reason to believe that we intentionally exploited Grid. In addition, Grid didn't directly reveal his face, so it doesn't infringe on his image rights. Besides, the filming stage was a public event. We have the right to broadcast everything that happens in a public venue...”



In fact, OGC Station's position wasn't disadvantageous. However, the person holding the sword was Yura.

“Please handle it flexibly. If you show me your sincerity, I will coordinate my schedule with OGC. Who knows? Youngwoo-ssi might also like OGC because of this work.”

“Ah...!”

It wasn't time to look at the immediate profit and loss. Grid and Yura. Wasn't this an opportunity to build a relationship with the two top stars who represented South Korea? If he could plan a broadcast around them, OGC would be able to steadily generate profits like today.

“I will contact you after a meeting. If we're to transfer the advertising revenue, we will need to draw up a few separate contracts that I hope you'll review.”

“Okay, now the conversation is good.”

Yura smiled brightly at the director's clever judgment. Then the director asked her a careful question as she rose from her seat.

“However... You recently disappeared from the rankings. Is it because you obtained a hidden class like everyone guessed?”

“Maybe one day I will explain in an interview with OGC news.”

“Oh my! If this is true... I’m happy just imagining it!”

A huge smile. The director’s rising lips were unwilling to go down. He escorted Yura out of the building.

Click.

Yura entered the limousine with a bright expression. She was very satisfied, because the negotiations proceeded more easily than she had expected.

‘It would’ve been different if this was a major broadcasting station.’ Fortunately, the opponent was OGC. As a broadcaster that only dealt with the ‘games’ genre, they appreciated Grid’s value. ‘Won’t Youngwoo-ssi be happy?’

Demon Slayer was a class hostile to the Yatan Church and demonkin. Therefore, she had no choice but to build up a relationship with the Rebecca Church. Yura was interested in the pope candidates for this reason. She watched OGC’s live broadcast of the speeches.

But what was this? The broadcast’s main character changed to Grid. Yura was worried when she watched the broadcast. Grid still didn’t know about the broadcasting world and this could harm him. She was concerned and immediately took action.

She visited OGC and made it so that Grid received a huge profit

rather than a loss.

Her reasoning was simple: Yura wanted to look good to Grid. As the former 5th ranked user, she was well aware of Overgeared's importance and wished to join them. She needed a place to rely on until her level was restored.

A few private emotions were also mixed in.

\*\*\*

The Vatican.

“Such a pathetic person.”

Kamiyan might be inexperienced, but Fulito never thought he would be killed by a fist. He was the shame of the Red Knights. Fulito didn't mourn Kamiyan's death. Rather, he cursed Kamiyan.

“I'm in this embarrassing situation because of that jerk.”

After Piaro betrayed the empire. The new Red Knights developed by Sword Duke Limit were reputed to be black-hearted. They sneered at the residents of the empire, calling anyone not part of the Red Knights weak. In such a situation, a Red Knight was killed by a man's bare fists? The dignity of the Red Knights was shaken to its roots.

Fulito was obliged to prevent this situation.

“Wait until the end of the event.” Grid would be able to use weapons once the event was over. “At that time, I will beat you up and regain the dignity of the Red Knights.”

“Hoh.”

This was good news for Grid. Fulito’s combat power couldn’t be measured. He was much stronger compared to Kamiyan. He wasn’t someone that could be beaten just by relying on Lifael’s Spear. Grid hadn’t been sure how to deal with him, so it was good that Fulito was giving him a chance.

The viewers cheered.

–Wow, Fulito of the Red Knights is a little scary. He gave Grid time to beat his colleague to death.

–His confidence is incredible. Is he a single number?

–No, single number knights have gold epaulettes on their shoulders.

–Hmmm... Then he must be in the 10’s.

–Even the 20th knight is several times stronger than the 30th knight.

The illegal gambling sites were booming with all types of speculations.

[Grid vs. Red Knight Fulito]

The gamblers started betting on who would win the match. Surprisingly, many gamblers bet on Fulito's victory. He had leisurely watched while Kamiyan was killed by Grid. Considering that he also gave Grid time to use weapons, Fulito must be much stronger. In any case, Fulito seemed certain that he was stronger than Grid, so the winner of the battle would naturally be Fulito.

-It's time for my chicken to come.

-My chicken arrived 5 minutes ago and I've already eaten two chicken legs.

-Sigh... When will this start? I will drink a bottle of soju while waiting.

-There are many boring pope candidates.

-Ah ⇨ ⇨ ⇨ ⇨ I just remembered that this broadcast was originally a speech event for the pope candidates ⇨ ⇨ ⇨ ⇨

As Grid waited for the end of the event, OGC's audience ratings surpassed 43%. Rumors that the confrontation between Grid and

the Red Knight would be started soon began to spread. Millions of foreign viewers flooded to the OGC web channel, almost paralyzing the server.

As the whole world was watching,

[The pope candidate's speech event has ended.]

[The weapons that have been disabled for safety are released.]

[The +9 Failure has been equipped.]

[The +8 Doppelganger's Greatsword has been equipped. Only 50% of the weapon's attack power will be applied due to the penalty.]

Grid held the two greatswords in both hands. The users were excited.

-Two sword style?

-Is he a rookie? How can Two Sword Style be used with greatswords? Really stupid;;

-It should be very restrictive to swing two large weapons at the same time. His posture will easily crumble.

-Aish, you should only use one greatsword while fighting. This is

just to look cool.

The community of the gambling sites fell into chaos. The gamblers who bet on Grid started complaining.

-Ah, this sucks.

-I stupidly believed in him. Hah...

-I was mistaken when I thought he was better than before.

-The nightmare is starting again...

-Does he know he's being ridiculed?

Grid attacked Fulito without saying a single word.

Jjejeong!

When the attack from the Doppelganger's Greatsword was blocked...

Papat!

Failure was swung. Unlike Kamiyan's Keen Senses which was an active skill, Fulito's movements were affected by a passive skill, so it was hard to hit him. Fulito avoided Grid's counterattack and

used a skill.

“Light Sword.”

The power of this skill was incomparable to what Kamiyan used before. It was obvious that Grid would take a lot of damage when defending, and the orbit was too exquisite to avoid. Then what should Grid do? The maturing Grid knew how to cope with this.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship, Revolve.”

Peeeeeeong!

A counterattack triggered at the perfect timing. The power of the skill also rose due to the Doppelganger’s Greatsword. Blood spurted from Fulito’s chest.

‘What?’

Fulito was shocked. Grid was much stronger than when he defeated Kamiyan. It was natural.

Pagma’s Swordsmanship increased attack power, critical attack chance, and critical attack damage, as well as generating all types of passive skills. But this was only applied when a sword type weapon was equipped.

When armed with a greatsword, Grid was strong enough to



exceed the extent that Fulito had assumed.

–Wow, Two Sword Style really appeared.

–Kyah~ truly God Grid.

As always, the viewers' switch in opinion was fast. The people who were ignoring Grid just a minute ago were now praising him.

Currently, OGC's audience rating was 45%. Reaching 50% wasn't a dream. It was a record in the decades of Korean broadcasting. Grid was once again writing a new legend.

# Chapter 277

---

Rankers were mainly popular around the world, but Grid was different. Most foreigners disliked Grid. There were those who mocked and criticized him for his poor control skills in the National Competition.

But at this moment, the flow started to change. Grid elevated his control after endless efforts and was silencing the criticism against him.

“Aura Festival!”

Pepeng! Pepepepeong!

It was like firecrackers. The chain of aura explosions put pressure on Grid.

‘Let’s concentrate.’

It was a great skill, but there was no need to shrink back in front of it. A red light shone from Grid’s eyes. He utilized his high insight to grasp the trajectory of the explosions and evade, causing the viewers to feel admiration.

[You have suffered 2,362 damage.]

[You have suffered 2,510 damage.]

[You have suffered 2,487...]

The advantage of Aura Festival was its range. It was such a widespread attack that it was impossible to avoid them all completely with Grid's agility. However, it was such a large-scale skill that its damage was weak. Allowing a few attacks wasn't fatal. Thanks to the doppelganger's accessory set, his indomitable stat was maximized and helped reduce the damage.

“Pagma's Swordsmanship.”

Kuoooooh!

The atmosphere in the sky started swarming towards Grid. A huge explosion of energy burst from Grid. No, it was at the level of a gravity pull. It was the precursor to Grid's conversion from a close range damage dealer to a ranged damage dealer.

“Transcend.”

Supak!

Every time Grid swung the sword,

Kukwakwang!

An energy blade was shot at Fulito on the ground. The

momentum was comparable to lightning.

“Ugh!”

The attack speed and downpour of energy blades from Grid served as a disaster for Fulito. Failure hit once. Then the Doppelganger's Greatsword hit once again. The two greatswords that were continuously swung without rest were fast and strong. They didn't give Fulito any breathing room.

‘An entirely different level!’

Fulito ran around the crumbling ground and gradually realized the seriousness of the situation.

‘A single number...!’

The single number knights were a target of awe for their fellow Red Knights. Grid's skills resembled them. From the moment Aura Festival was beaten, Fulito had already determined the gap between himself and Grid.

‘Eternal! A mere small kingdom was hiding a monster like this!’

It was scandalous and dangerous. He had to tell this fact to the emperor. There was an obligation to raise their vigilance towards the Eternal Kingdom.

Peeng!

Fulito was hit in the right shoulder.

‘Damn!’

He was helpless. He couldn’t avoid the storm of energy blades that was pouring towards him. Fulito used Super Armor.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

The golden protective layer neutralized the energy blades. It was tremendous defense, but unfortunately, the duration of Super Armor wasn’t very long. Fulito shouted to the Black Knights.

“I will retreat! Tie up his feet and earn me some time!”

It was a desperate command. The Black Knights paled at the thought of sacrificing themselves. But the principles of the subordinates were absolute. The Black Knights grasped their swords and attacked. They confronted Grid’s energy blades to allow Fulito to retreat.

Grid stopped using Transcend and descended to the ground before using Link.

“This is Huroi’s share.”

It was punishment for their sin of attacking Huroi.

Chaaeng! Chaeeeeeng!

The Black Knights' attacks were offset by Link and then the onslaught began.

Pit! Pipipipit!

Puhwahak!

“Kuaaaak!”

Blood emerged from the seams of the black armor. His swordsmanship combined with Vital Spot Detection was much more mature compared to the past.

“Don't send...!”

The Black Knights barely managed to strike back against Grid. They all aimed at him. They used their strongest skills, without caring about defense. It was an obvious crisis for Grid.

–Wow.

–Will Grid die?

The viewers were immersed in the broadcast and forgot to eat their chicken.

Hwiririk!

A white hooded zip up was seen. Grid used the movements that he saw when Piaro sparred against Faker and rotated his body like a spin top. The Black Knights simultaneously used five skills, but two of them were non-targeted skills and didn't hit him. He was lightly grazed and only received minor damage.

“Shit!”

The frustrated Black Knights found themselves covered in a blue light. Pagma's Swordsmanship, Wave threatened the five Black Knights.

“This is my share!”

This was punishment for the sin of aiming their swords against him!

“Kuheok!”

The waves of energy that stretched out from Grid caused the Black Knights to scream. In the process, Grid was hit by three skills, but he suffered less damage than the Black Knights. It was natural. Grid was currently armed with the armor set made by the legendary blacksmith Pagma out of a god mineral.

“This is my share! Pinnacle!”

“Why do you have another share?”

The behavior of Grid, who took more of a share than the beaten up Huroi, confused the Black Knights. Anyway, the attack hit them regardless of their feelings.

Seokeok!

The Black Knights were slowed by the effects of Grid, and the one in the front had his armor completely broken by Grid. It was the power of Failure.

[You have defeated Black Knight Dever.]

[8,960,000 experience has been acquired.]

[79 gold has been acquired.]

[Your level has risen.]

Grid had gained a large amount of experience from Kamiyan, so he enjoyed the sight of the level up notification window. He was now level 296. There were four more levels left until he reached 300. Very soon, his stats would undergo the third awakening.



Ssik!

Laughing while cutting a person in half? Grid was wearing a bizarre mask with an eerie red light behind it. He looked like a blood covered demon as he laughed. In other words, he seemed crazy.

–It reminds me of old times.

–When Grid was called the Butcher?

–Right. It was when he killed the Giant Guild. At that time, a regular user going against the Giant Guild. It was invigorating to watch.

What was the reason why users became fans of rankers? It was because they could live vicariously through them. The users were thrilled when they saw the rankers do things that were impossible for them. Then they gradually became fans. This was how the viewers watching Grid felt now. There were also foreigners watching the broadcast through the web channel. In the chat window, the anti-fans fell silent.

Teong!

Grid used Fly magic to break through the Black Knight that turned into ash. He moved at a fast speed and reached Fulito, before switching his shoes. Braham's Boots disappeared and Grid's

Boots were equipped.

At the same time, the Fly spell was turned off. Grid's body rapidly gained weight and fell to the ground. Fulito used a skill to defend against the two greatswords that were falling rapidly.

“Red Sword!”

It was one of the strongest skills passed down through the Red Knights for generations. A secret technique that only the Red Knights from the 10s onwards could receive.

Hwaruruk!

The golden aura around Fulito's sword was stained red. It was flames itself. The flames flying towards Grid were enough to blow away a small mountain. But the viewers knew.

–Grid has more skills.

–Legendary skills.

“Kill.”

The greatsword was strengthened by Grid's Boots, so the fierce Kill decided Victory.

Peeeeeeong!

“Heeok?”

Kill crushed the Red Sword that it collided with. One of the Red Knights, with their 300 years of history, collapsed to this extent? Fulito’s face was stunned as the blow overwhelmed the Red Sword. Fulito screamed as he offset half the power of Kill with Limit Sword.

“Who the hell are you? How could a strong person like you be so anonymous in the meantime?”

Fulito had determined that the source of Grid’s power was in the artifacts, including the golden spear. But that was a clear misjudgment. Grid’s strength was his swordsmanship. It was a rare transcendental swordsmanship.

Transcendental swordsmanship! It wasn’t an exaggeration. Grid had inherited the powers of Pagma, the legendary blacksmith and great swordsman, as well as studied under Piaro. Just looking at this environmental aspects, Grid had the foundations to leapfrog above existing legends.

The problem was that his natural talent was low.

“Anonymous? I am famous?”

The Red Knights believed that the Saharan Empire was the whole

world. Grid was well aware that they were frogs in a well and stabbed Failure at Fulito's heart.

“It won't be so easy!”

Fulito fired Super Sensitivity, which lasted for five seconds, avoided Failure and rushed to Grid's side. Using Super Sensitivity caused his brain to overload, so Fulito was already determined to die.

‘If I have to die, I will take you with me!’

This was the last resort. But by the time he reached his destination, the Doppelganger's Greatsword was already flying. Grid had predicted the behavior. If the stabbing of a greatsword failed, how would the enemy respond?

‘I fought Randy who cloned Pagma over 80 times.’

Puok!

“T-This...!”

“Goodbye, fake knight.”

Piario and Asmophel. Only Red Knights with their strength would be a threat to Grid. No, Piario's strength surpassed Grid. Compared to them, Fulito was just shameful.

“Kukuk...! You might be strong enough to win over Kamiyan and I! There are many Red Knights who I can’t be compared with! You can’t go against the single number knights!”

“Stop speaking long words.”

Grid didn’t exert his full skills in this battle. There were still a lot of items and title effects that would be saved.

“Damn bastard!”

Fulito still had one-third of his health left despite his heart being pierced. He was secretly preparing a counterattack. He secretly gathered his aura while pulling Grid’s attention. He was planning to inflict damage on Grid by exploding his aura and then link up his swordsmanship. But Grid’s sword was faster than the aura explosion.

“Where are you going?”

Grid read the suspicious actions and successively swung Failure and the Doppelganger’s Greatsword. The two greatswords crossed many times and Fulito’s health fell to the bottom. Grid checked it and declared.

‘Bring it on, Pascal.’

The price for aiming at Grid's life would be repaid. Then Grid smiled as many notification windows appeared in front of him.

# Chapter 278

---

[You have defeated Fulito, the 19th Red Knight of the Saharan Empire, who slaughtered ethnic minorities under their banner.]

[If this news is spread to the empire, the empire will order your assassination.]

[43,908,500 experience has been acquired.]

[81 gold has been acquired.]

[Red Armor has been acquired.]

[Skill Book: Aura Festival has been acquired.]

[Red Armor]

Rating: Unique

...

...

User Restriction: Level 300 or higher. Advanced Heavy Armor Mastery Level 5 or higher.

## [Skill Book: Aura Festival]

Rating: Unique

Launches aura that causes a wide explosion.

The higher the skill level, the better the range and power.

Acquisition Conditions: Must be able to use aura.

The red armor was too heavy and boasted high durability and defense instead of having options. It was lacking for the Overgeared members to use.

‘But it can be sold at a pretty high price.’

The Overgeared members felt like the Red Armor was lacking because Grid made items for them, but general users were different. For general users, the Red Armor was an S-grade item. It was the case even if they couldn’t wear the armor.

‘But it’s better to sell it after making modifications.’

If the reconstruction was successful, the value of the item might surge. Maybe it would be enough for the Overgeared members to use.



‘Skill book...’

It was amazing. Aura Festival. There was a reason why it was dangerous.

‘Unique skill.’

Skills could be used permanently once learned. The value of a unique skillbook was similar or better than the value of a legendary item.

‘I should sell this to Pon or Ibellin.’

He earned a huge amount of money after a long time. He had been living as a beggar after pouring all his money into the building construction, and now he had room to spare again.

‘I’ll have a pizza for celebration.’

He planned to eat a cheese crust, which cost an extra 3,000 won more. He would also add grated Parmesan cheese and hot sauce for an extra 700 won each.

“Kukukuk.”

Grid was filled with joy. His smiling face while wearing a bloody mask caused the viewers to get the chills.

‘Wait.’

Grid stopping laughing and turned his gaze towards the camera.

‘Aren’t a few people watching?’

OGC was recognized as a professional gaming channel. Grid assumed there would be at least 100,000 people watching the broadcast right now.

‘A broadcast that appeared unexpectedly.’

He should thoroughly utilize this. Grid started promoting his guild.

“The Overgeared Guild is recruiting guild members with secondary classes like cleaners, chefs, tailors, construction workers, blacksmiths, alchemists, etc. For more information, please contact Lauel.”

Except for Grid and Euphemina, the Overgeared members were solely dedicated to combat. The soon to be merged Silver Knights Guild also had a much higher percentage of combat classes. In order to develop his estate, he needed to employ a large number of secondary classes.

‘Maybe 100 people will apply to join. There should be a few talented people that could be used.’

Grid never knew it, but OGC's audience rating now exceeded 55%. The peak audience rating was close to 63%. A record was set after half a century. It was the first time a single channel in South Korea monopolized the views since the end of full-fledged channels in 2011.

15 seconds of advertisements were sold for around 3 billion won. Now that the broadcast reached its climax, Grid was promoting to millions of people for free. The impact was tremendous. Right now, tens of thousands of users were writing letters to Lael to ask to join the guild.

Now Lael was so busy that he even ran out of time to sleep. Grid unintentionally gave a lot of work to Lael.

Then a new notification window appeared in front of Grid.

[The time attack quest 'Evidence Destruction' has been created.]

[Evidence Destruction]

Level of Difficulty: AAA

The fact that you have defeated the Black Knights and Red Knights of the Saharan Empire will inevitably bring a crisis towards you.

Destroy the remaining enemies and kill or appease the leaders of the incident.

Quest Clear Conditions: Eliminate the surviving Black Knights (0/4). Kill or reconcile with the leaders of this incident, Pascal and the elders.

Quest Clear Rewards: Rumors about you won't spread to the Saharan Empire.

Quest Failure: The Saharan Empire will issue an order for your death.

Time Period: 2 hours.

“Huroi.”

“Yes.”

Huroi had restored his health under the protection of Lifael's Spear while Grid had been fighting Fulito. Grid told him, “Kill the remaining Black Knights.”

It would give him an opportunity to get revenge for his humiliation and get some experience. Huroi was thrilled as he understood the meaning and replied, “Leave it to me.”

“Okay.”

Grid immediately left the place. His destination was the elders' meeting room. After being left alone, the Black Knights immediately surrounded Huroi. They smiled with satisfaction.

“Grid, he’s stupid. Leaving you alone.”

“We’ll kill you, then return to the empire to accuse Grid!”

“Don’t mention My Lord’s name with your dirty mouth.”

“Someone who will soon die should shut their mouths!”

The Black Knights made fun of Huroi. They had seen Huroi’s skills earlier, and they was terrible. Didn’t Grid actually say it? Huroi was weak. The Black Knights were the second most influential knights group on the continent. It was four against one, so the fight seemed advantageous to the Black Knights.

“Die!”

The Black Knights attacked in unison. The momentum was overwhelming. However, Huroi didn’t shrink back. Huroi pulled out the smaller one-handed version of Dainsleif and defended against the Black Knights’ attacks.

“You...!”

“You aren’t our opponent!”

The Black Knights increased their momentum and tried to attack again. Then a huge shadow appeared above them.

Kuwoooooh!

A red drake roared. It was said that only 100 out of two billion users owned a drake. This was Huroi’s true identity.

“I am weak, but that is only when compared to My Lord.”

“T-This...!”

Kwaaaaah!

Flames poured out. Huroi broke down the Black Knights one by one. The Apostle of Justice’s Partner started his rampage.

–Wow...

An orator killing the Black Knights? Huroi’s appearance gave a new shock to the viewers.

\*\*\*

One hour before the pope’s speech event began.

Pon and Regas, who had been out of contact for a month, finally returned to Reidan. Did they succeed in clearing the dungeon? No. It was a failure. The strongest duo in Overgeared died without even reaching the boss. The vampire city had countless numbers of powerful vampires.

“It isn’t a dungeon that is originally intended for two users. There needs to be at least 10 third advancement classes in the party. More than 20 people is probably necessary if we want to clear it within four days.”

“The vampires’ evasion ability is designed to disable attacks apart from the divine attribute. If we want to hunt them more easily, we need weapons or skills with divine power.”

“We tried to reach the boss and obtain the information before we died, but it wasn’t enough.”

“Our preparations were too insufficient. We ran out of potions and food, and our items’ durability fell, so it was unavoidable.”

And so on.

Pon and Regas shared the information about the vampire city with the guild members. Lael looked at the overall situation.

‘There are at least 13 vampire cities in the western part of the Eternal Kingdom.’

The city was categorized as a dungeon and the entrance was blocked 10 seconds after people entered. The exit wouldn't be created until the vampire boss was knocked down. The only way to escape was to hunt the boss or die.

'In the 13th city, the vampires are at least level 280 to 350. They are sensitive to the smell and blood and light, and have excellent ability to read facial expressions. Their main skills are dark magic and the evasion of other attributes. Some of them use the sword as a weapon. The items they drop are various jewellery and cloth armor.'

In the case of 'true blood vampires,' which were classified as quasi boss grade monsters, they also dropped spellbooks and elixirs.

'Elixirs... It's huge.'

Elixirs permanently raised stats. Naturally the value was astronomical. A vampire city was a great growth platform for a guild if they could monopolize it.

'The boss monster information is still unknown.'

Seuk seuk.

Lauel's hands moved quickly as he wrote a report for Grid. He was concentrating when he heard a knock on the door.



“Come in.”

“Hasn’t it been a while?”

Lauel was an earl of the Eternal Kingdom and acting lord of Reidan. There was only one person, apart from the Overgeared members, who would treat him like this. It was Minor, who was famous for being indifferent.

About 3 months ago. Grid had ordered the minerals detector boy to search for pavranium, and he had finally returned safely.

“Sigh, really. It was a hard search.”

Lauel didn’t object to the rude behavior of the boy, who sat on the couch without permission. Lauel’s standards for evaluating people were their capabilities over personality.

That was how he decided to follow Grid.

“I’m glad to see you’ve come back safely.”

Lauel said with a smile, causing Minor to shrug.

“I’m not glad at all.”

“Hahaha! You’re still like this. By the way, did you find the golem’s labyrinths?”

“No. No labyrinths exist here in the west.”

Lauel’s expression stiffened. “No pavranium...? Duke Grid will be very disappointed.”

“Who said there is no pavranium? I just said there were no golem labyrinths.”

“What are you saying?”

Minor handed a map to the puzzled Lauel. “I can feel the energy of pavranium from these dungeons marked here.”

A map of the west. There were 15 places marked with a X and unfortunately, one of the coincided with the vampire city.

‘This, perhaps...?’ Lauel asked. “Are the dungeon entrances in the form of an ant hill?”

“Eh? How did you know?”

Indeed. The places that Minor marked on the map were vampire cities.

“Kukukuk...”

Lauel covered his face with his hand and his shoulders shook as he laughed. He muttered as he exposed the whites of his teeth.

“This, this... If the pavranium are sealed in the vampire cities... Lady Luck that I used to love in my past life hasn't forgotten me, and it's giving me great help. In order to give back to her, I should retrieve the memories of my past life that I have sealed. Then I will give her a kiss on the cheek.”

‘Crazy guy.’

Minor was a young boy, but he could see that normal people were rare to find around Grid. It was natural. Grid himself wasn't normal.

‘I don't belong in this place. I should be the emperor's genius right hand.’

He dreamed of a place with great fame.

“Huhuhut...”

“Kukukuk...”

Lauel and Minor laughed wildly while absorbed in their thoughts.

“Um.”

Jude felt a strange feeling as he came to the office to report to Lauel.

# Chapter 279

---

“There’s gold painted on his mouth.”

Damian was the biggest player in the pope candidates’ speech event. The other candidates criticized the factions, the Yatan Church, and showed their political colors, while Damian emphasized charity.

By calling up the basic doctrines pursued by the Rebecca Church, it stimulated the nature of the clergy and reminded them of how wicked Pascal’s behavior was. It was a speech technique based on Huroi’s teachings that if the audience’s attention was scattered, it was better to approach them indirectly.

The effect was big. Pascal’s supporters stood indecisively as cracks showed, and some showed a small affinity for Damian. In the past two weeks, Huroi had thoroughly trained Damian. But Pascal was scornful.

“Your ideals can never be realized. Most of the existing senior priests are already dirty because of Drevigo. Charity? Why are you so obsessed with that meaningless act?”

“What do you want to say?”

“It means that flattering the junior priests are useless. The senior priests with the right to vote won’t agree with you. Your speech targeted the wrong people.”

Damian wasn't upset at all.

“That might be the case right now. However, it will change slowly. Most of the priests aren't rotten to the core, unlike you. I will try my best to help the priests recover their past. Today is only the first step.”

“You...”

Damian's atmosphere had changed significantly over the past two weeks. He was more proud and didn't know fear. A firm belief was giving him confidence. He had unwavering eyes since Grid emerged.

‘It's unlucky.’

He was becoming more like that dirty Grid. Pascal shrugged and said with a sigh. “Well, you might believe in Grid now, but that is just short-lived. Sooner or later, you will realize reality. I look forward to it. In a month, I will become pope and treat Rebecca's Daughters harshly. You will be helpless and have to watch with despair.”

Isabel, standing next to Damian, flinched. Her past hell-like days surfaced when she saw Pascal's snake eyes. She felt the fear more strongly because she was at the crossroad of life and death just a few days ago. Damian hid Isabel behind his back and declared, “Even if you are the pope, I will protect Isabel-chan.”

“You still haven’t grasped things to the end. If you don’t have the strength, you should shut up and sit down. It’s providence.”

Only the strong could reign, while the weak existed to be trampled on. It was the value of the empire that conquered many colonies and turned the people into livestock. If Pascal became the pope, the Rebecca Church would be transformed into a religion that followed the interests of the empire.

“Hahahahat!”

Damian covered the frightened Isabel. Pascal laughed at them and left the room. Damian shook his head and reassured Isabel.

“Don’t worry. Isabel-chan will be happy. I will make it so.”

“Damian...”

The young man’s pure and true heart started to reach the girl.

\*\*\*

The elders’ meeting room.

23 elders were having a drinking party in a place that oversaw the divine affairs of the Rebecca Church. Some people had naked women beside them. They were prostitutes that Earl Chirita

brought from the empire.

Pascal's face twisted. "What are you doing? Have you forgotten how many people from all over the world are coming to see the Vatican today? You should be careful today when there are a lot of eyes!"

"Now, now. Don't be so angry. Aren't we in a secret place?" Earl Chirita rose from his seat among the elders. He pulled Pascal down into a chair and smiled at him. "That guy called Grid, he should be dead by now."

Pascal suppressed his temper.

"Are you sure?"

"Isn't it obvious? 19th Knight Fulito is capable of killing thousands of soldiers alone. As soon as Grid became his target, there was no room to escape, no matter what tricks he used."

There was no doubt. The Red Knights might be less than the ones of the previous generation, but the power of the knights in the 10's was absolute. They couldn't be defeated.

"Let's drink to my son, he will become the father of 80 millions members in a month."

Pascal received Earl Chirita's drink. They were father and son, but their behavior was quite natural.



“Hrmm.”

Grid was an eyesore. He couldn't help feeling pleasure at the thought of Grid being dead. It seemed like new hair would grow out from his bald patches.

‘I am finally free from that damn hair loss.’

Pascal was feeling invigorated over the glass of alcohol when the door burst open. Was it Fulito returning after his mission? Everybody thought so.

“Kuak!”

Ku tang tang tang!

Someone crossed the door without permission. No, one of Earl Chirita's knights came flying. He was one of the six knights guarding the entrance. He was already dying.

“R-Run away.” The knight stuttered. He was frightened. It was like he had witnessed the grim reaper.

“Run away?”

This was the meeting room of the elders. As one of the most sacred places in the Vatican, its safety was guaranteed for

hundreds of years. This was the final stronghold that people escaped to, not run away from! So what was this person saying now?

A drunk elder rose from his seat.

“Who dares intrude on this sacred place?”

“Is this a sacred place? I thought it was a rotten place?”

Then a sarcastic voice was heard from behind the door.

Step step.

The steps came closer. It was someone that nobody expected. The identity of the intruder...

“G-Grid?”

“Unbelievable!”

Pascal and the elders looked like they were seeing ghosts. Wasn't Grid supposed to be killed by the Red Knights and Black Knights!?

‘It can't be!’

A chill went down Pascal's spine.

‘Grid defeated the 19th knight?’

As the confusion spread, Grid looked over at the prostitutes. There were some women with large breasts, and usually his gaze would be fixed on them.

“Look at this.”

At this moment, Grid was convinced.

‘Goddess Rebecca is wrong.’

They broke the doctrines and committed wicked acts, but they still had divine power as long as they sincerely believed in her? She was a very narrow-minded and careless goddess.

‘No, the goddess might just be pure.’

The problem was with those who abused the purity of the goddess.

‘Whatever, it doesn’t matter to me.’

Now there was only one thing Grid wanted. “All of you will die here.”

“...!”

Pascal and the elders flinched with fright. Grid grinned at them with a hard expression in his eyes.

“Didn’t I tell you? I’m in a different position from Damian, so I can deal with you as I like. This is the truth, but thank you for aiming at me.”

Pascal and the elders turned red. The system recognized that they had sent the Red Knights and Black Knights as assassins. Therefore, he could attack them without fearing the Goddess’ Curse. Earl Chirita yelled at the grinning Grid.

“You dumb bastard! Don’t you know who I am? Who are you to come her and say such random things?”

Thanks to his son, Earl Chirita had lost his sense of reason. He thought that everything would always go his way.

“What are you doing? Go and kill him!”

He ordered the wounded knights. They were going to die anyway. The knights of Earl Chirita rose up again. Then they immediately struck at Grid. They didn’t feel fighting spirit, or the will to live. They only felt fear. However, they weren’t in the 200’s yet and couldn’t be Grid’s opponent.

Seokeok!

The biggest advantage of a greatsword was its destructive power. The superb sword cut the knights to pieces. The blood of the knights scattered all over the table filled with delicacies.

“Kyaaak!”

The prostitutes and Earl Chirita fell back down.

“R-Really... He is stronger than Fulito...”

Earl Chirita muttered blankly, while Pascal tried to calm Grid down.

“Duke Grid, what happened that made you in such a rage? First of all, let’s settle down and talk out the misunderstanding.”

Indeed, Pascal was a real trickster. At this moment, his acting was really natural.

Grid snorted. “What should we speak about when you sent the Red Knights and Black Knights to assassinate me? Just stay silent and die.”

Pascal angrily denied it. “No, was there such a thing? I don’t know anything about it.”

“Stop acting.”

“Ah!” Grid didn’t believe him, so Pascal glanced towards Earl Chirita. “Earl Chirita, was it you? Did you send assassins to kill Duke Grid?”

“W-What...?”

This guy was trying to sell out his own father? Earl Chirita received a big shock and was speechless. Pascal whispered to him, “Sacrifice yourself. I am the one who is going to be the pope.”

“Pascal...! How can you do this to your father?”

Pascal’s expression became angry as he gazed at Earl Chirita.

“Over the past decades, you were able to become a favored lord thanks to me. Haven’t I done my best as your child? On the other hand, what about you? Have you done anything for me as my father?”

“P-Pascal...”

“You should be a father once before you die. Isn’t that right?”

“U-Ugh...”

Earl Chirita finally shed tears. It wasn’t due to fear of Grid. He was shocked and sad when he was treated as insignificant by his

son, who was his only pride. As he bowed his head and sobbed, Pascal grinned towards Grid.

“Haha, it’s like this. Earl Chirita seems to have done something foolish. Now Duke Grid. Pour your wrath towards the earl and receive my glass of alcohol...”

“Crazy bastard.”

The fundamental reason why Grid hated Pascal was because he was the type to trample on the weak. He was in a bad mood whenever he saw Pascal, because he was reminded of the people who taunted and bothered him in the past. But at this moment, Grid found another reason to hate Pascal.

“Unfilial bastard.”

Grid was born and grew up in the East. He was a filial son who gave the chicken legs to his parents whenever they ate chicken. Pascal sacrificing his father was unacceptable, causing Grid to feel extreme hatred.

“Don’t try these tricks on me. In any case, I am the only one who can leave here alive.”

Grid clearly changed as he equipped the mask and eye patch. Pascal was threatened by the red light and shouted.

“Quit being stupid! The Saharan Empire will punish you if you

touch its ambassadors! Aren't you afraid of them?"

"Of course I'm afraid."

He couldn't become the enemy of the Saharan Empire just yet. Reidan would be crushed in half a day if it had to face the power of the empire.

"So I have to kill all of you. The fact that I killed the Red Knights and Black Knights can't be passed onto the empire."

"You should be worried! Even if you kill us, things would go out of control! Do you think there is no one who witnessed you heading here? You will die after being pinpointed as the criminal, and Damian won't become pope since he has ties with you!"

"There's no need to worry about that. 'I' am currently chatting with the church members in the Vatican's gardens."

Doppelganger Randy.

"I have the perfect alibi."

"I don't know what you're talking about!"

"It doesn't matter. You will die soon."



“Ugh!”

Grid’s killing intent thickened. Pascal realized the battle was unavoidable and shouted to the elders.

“We can endure if we use buffs and heals! The paladins will rush over once the turmoil grows!”

Pascal’s divine power was currently close to former pope Drevigo. It was truly great to have pope level divine power despite not being crowned pope yet. What if Pascal and the 23 elders decided to join forces?

‘We won’t die!’

As long as they weren’t killed by a single blow, they could continue to heal each other. It was a fairly rational thinking. But the problem was that the opponent was Grid. Divine power and black magic power were the antithesis of each other.

“Blackening.”

[Your black magic power has increased.]

[You don’t have any black magic power. It will be replaced with demonic power.]

[While Blackening is activated, your species will change to half-

demon.]

[As a half demon, your maximum health is reduced by 50%. Your attack power, magic power and agility will increased by 20% each.]

[All attacks will be converted to the black magic attribute.]

Blackening. This was a skill that belonged to the legendary rated accessory, 'Dark Bus' Earrings.' It had good compatibility with Grid, who possessed demonic power.

Sururuk.

His skin became pale white and there were no whites in his eyes, as it became entirely black. The black hair fluttering with demonic energy made him look ominous. Grid's current appearance wasn't much different from the demons imagined by humans.

“Transcended Link.”

A berserk demonic power filled the room. The elders' meeting room was filled with fear.

# Chapter 280

---

Kwa kwang!

Kukwakwang!

It was like being hit by a tsunami of black energy blades. The elders' meeting room was turned into ruins in an instant.

‘Enormous damage!’

Pascal and the elders thought. The prostitutes shaking in the corner were protected by Lifael's Spear, but the elders only had each other to rely on..

“Holy Shield!”

“Resist the Dark!”

Pascal and the others increased their physical and black magic resistance before using heals on each other. There was no room to worry about mana. Their top priority was enduring and surviving the aggressive attack.

“The paladins will rush over when the turmoil grows! Buy time until then!”

“Don't stop healing!”

Flash!

The green light restoring their wounds and health shone without rest. It was like looking at an aurora. These were heals used by the highest ranked priests of the Rebecca Church. It could even endure a dragon's breath for a while. But the current reality was different.

‘The amount of recovery can't keep up with the damage!’

‘This isn't a destructive power that humans can exert! Grid is surely a demonkin!’

The +9 Failure. It was a weapon that had an attack power comparable to the Rebecca Church's three divine artefacts. The +8 Doppelganger's Sword. The attack power couldn't be fully exerted thanks to the penalty, but it had the option to increase the damage of skills by 20%.

The power of the legendary skills used by these two swords was more than imagined.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

“Kuaaaak!”

The 23 elders had an average level of 300. Among them, seven were still second advancement priests with a level of 290. They

were the ones severely injured.

Black magic was the antithesis of divine power.

‘These people are the hole.’

The seven elders were torn into rags. Grid’s red light detected their weaknesses.

‘I have to finish it as quickly as possible.’

The duration of Blackening was only five minutes. If he didn’t win in five minutes, he wouldn’t be able to cope with the resilience of Pascal and the elders’ heals.

“Blacksmith’s Rage.”

[Attack power will increase by 25% and attack speed will increase by 40%.]

Blacksmith’s Rage was now level 4, so the duration was longer. 35 seconds. It was a golden opportunity for Grid.

Teong!

He leapt over the crushed round table. He moved carefully so that the prostitutes wouldn’t be harmed.

“Link.”

Pit! Pipipipit!

Several dozens of black energy swords were drawn around the seven elders as Grid narrowed the distance. Afterimages were formed because of his quick speed.

‘What?’

The elders didn’t even notice that they were cut.

Puhahak!

They were bewildered for a moment. Blood simultaneously poured from the bodies of the seven elders.

“Hueok!”

“H-Help me...!”

Those struck didn’t even know it. How creepy was this? The terrified elders used Heal. However, Grid’s attack speed was much faster than the casting speed of Heal. In the first place, they shouldn’t have allowed him to get close.

Seokeok!

Puok!

“Kyaak!”

The ‘5 Joint Attacks’ attached to the Holy Light Gloves and the ‘Bisect’ skill attached to Failure turned the elders to grey ash.

[You have defeated the corrupt elder Huda.]

[12,910,300 experience has been acquired.]

[Advanced priest’s clothing has been acquired.]

[A high quality emerald ring has been acquired.]

[You have killed a human in the half demon state, so demonic magic power has increased by 10.]

[You have defeated the corrupt elder Furell.]

[12,552,000 experience has been acquired.]

[Advanced priest’s shoes have been acquired.]

[You have killed a human in the half demon...]

...

...

...

The notification windows after killing the seven second advancement elders came to a halt in Grid's sight. The dropped items weren't anything special, but the experience was significant. However, the fact that demonic power increased by 10 points made Grid uneasy.

The increase in demonic power made it possible for him to go to hell, but was that really all? Perhaps he might change species into a demon.

Chaaeng!

A green light hit Grid while he was filled with anxiety. It was a Heal from Pascal. He had aimed it perfectly after Grid took care of the seven elders.

[You have been affected by Great Heal.]

[The Holy Light Armor raises the recovery magic's power by 300%.]



[Great Heal is a deadly poison to a half demon!]

[You have suffered 23,640 damage.]

“Kuak!”

The Holy Light Armor gave Grid absolute power. That strongest armor was now his weakness. Grid's health gauge fell by two-thirds in a single blow. Pascal identified Grid's pain and was confused.

‘What? It was more effective than expected?’

Why? Pascal didn't know the exact reason, but he interpreted it in his own way.

‘The goddess is blessing me!’

For sure! Goddess Rebecca was hoping for Grid's death! Pascal was convinced by this and his momentum rose.

“Now! Pour out your heals towards him! Give the goddess' punishment to that wicked demon, who is trying to deceive everyone!”

Flash!

All of the survive 16 priests were third advancement priests. The power of the Great Heals they used was different from the seven elders who died earlier.

Chaaeng! Jjejeong!

16 rays of green light hit Grid. At first, Grid tried to avoid it, but he stopped in place as soon as one attack was allowed. Grid was caught by the light and hit by multiple healing magic. Pascal and the elders smiled with satisfaction at the sight.

‘Surprisingly easy!’

‘He sold his soul to the demons!’

‘Grid is killed!’

The moment that Pascal and the elders were convinced of their victory.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship.”

Rather than dying within the light, Grid started moving again.

“What?”

Teong!

Grid approached the astonished Pascal. It was really a tremendous speed. It was due to Quick Movements that was attached to the +8 Ideal Dagger. A blue light shot in a straight line.

“Kill!”

Peeeeeeong!

Pascal’s Holy Divine Shield was crushed in a single blow. This was despite the fact that it was three times more powerful than a typical Holy Shield.

“Y-You! Why are you alive?”

Grid’s status wasn’t fine either. He was deeply wounded everywhere and shedding blood.. There was a hole in the vicinity of his chest. It wouldn’t be strange if he died. However, Grid had a passive skill.

[A legend doesn’t die easily. You can resist all attacks for 5 seconds with a minimum of health.]

Grid had long been dependent on the invincible skill, and he was now enraged.

“Rotten bastards! How can multiple people attack one person?”

“What now...? Aren’t you the one who came to attack all of us alone?”

Pascal felt that Grid was ridiculous as he used Heal on himself. At the same time, his Holy Divine Shield was restored. It was double casting. Grid didn’t stay still. Evil Spirit’s Bloody Tears had been activated and his attack power increased.

After using Wave to slow down Pascal and the elders’ speed, he was able to link Unbreakable Justice with no time difference, not giving Pascal the chance to complete the shield. Then he used his strongest skill straight away.

“Linked Kill!”

Puk!

One blow to Pascal’s heart.

Puok!

The second blow.

Puook!

The third blow. Two greatswords stabbed at the same time. Grid smacked his lips.

‘I would’ve been able to kill him if there were two more blows.’

The number of strikes that Linked Kill dealt was random. It couldn’t be intentionally controlled. It was unfortunate. Pascal was struck in the heart and suffering from terrible pain.

“Y-You cruel bastard...!”

Grid hadn’t once frowned while persistently aiming at the heart. Now he looked like he found this delicious, so he certainly wasn’t normal.

“What right do you have to denounce and punish me, when you are just as cruel?”

Pascal cried out to Grid with an unfair expression.

“The right of the strong.”

This was enough. Pascal had trampled on many weak people just because he was strong. Now he was reaping what he sowed. Pascal felt like he had been hit in the back of the head.

There were no apparent objections, so Grid wielded Failure successively. The elders used Heal to save Pascal, but it wasn’t enough. Pascal was directly hit by Linked Kill and lost almost all his health. Demonic power also infiltrated his body, so Heal

couldn't have a proper effect.

“This guy!”

The veins bulged on the balding Pascal's head and his eyes became red and bloodshot. In one month! In one month, he would've become pope and reigned over 80 million people!

“Why did you appear before me...? Youuu! Kuaaaaak! I won't die alone! Light Blaze!”

Pascal was level 330. His divine power was lower than former Pope Drevigo, but his level was much higher. Named NPCs grew in proportion to the average level of the users. The magic that he used couldn't be ignored.

Peeng!

Pepepepeong!

Pascal caused a divine explosion, firing dozens of magic power rays at Grid.

‘It isn't a big deal!’

There were still two seconds left on the invincible duration. Grid attacked without fleeing from the magic power rays.

“Crazy!”

Pascal couldn't understand the situation at all. He meant for both of them to die, so why didn't this person lose momentum?

“Even if you are a zombie, you won't be able to survive this! Goddess' Wrath!”

Pascal had no place to retreat anymore. He depleted all of his divine power and health to cast this spell. It was his final decision to end Grid who ruined his life.

Papat! Pa pa pa pat!

Two large gold circles, approximately 3m in diameter, were quickly created behind Pascal's back. It was the magic spell that Pope Drevigo used in the past. The size of the magic circles was much smaller than when Drevigo used it, since he was lacking divine power. However, it was still enough power against the current Grid.

Kuwaaaang!

A brilliant flash of light was emitted from the circles. The whole room shook and cracked in the aftermath. This was the goddess' magic that surpassed Transcended Link in terms of power. As the light shot at him, notification windows appeared in Grid's vision.

[The duration of Invincible is over.]

Would he die?

‘No.’

The strength of Pascal with the healing shuttles called the elders was beyond Grid’s expectations. But the result wouldn’t change. Grid knew it from the beginning.

‘I will win.’

It had been a year and three months since the fall of Pope Drevigo. In the meantime, Grid had made considerable progress. Regardless of the variables, it was impossible for Grid to be defeated by Pascal, who was on the same level as Drevigo.

“Freely Move!”

It was the skill attached to the title ‘Secret Hero.’ There were limits to the range of use, and the cooldown time was one hour. However, it was a top dashing skill that allowed him to avoid all non-targeting skills until he reached his target.

Teong!

Grid rushed towards Pascal. He turned in the air and avoided two flashes of light from Goddess’ Wrath.



Kuoooooh!

His raging demonic power concentrated on Failure and the Doppelganger's Greatsword.

"This is ridiculous!"

His magic couldn't hit the target in front of it? The greatswords fell towards the astonished Pascal.

"Pinnacle!"

[The level of Pagma's Swordsmanship, Pinnacle has increased.]

[The amount of damage done to the target and the mana consumption will increase.]

Seokeok!

"Kuk...! Kuaaaaak!"

Pascal screamed. The elders determined they couldn't save him and used Heal against Grid.

Flash!

It was immediately after Invincible and Freely Move ran out. He

only had one health left and 16 rays of green light were aiming at the unprotected Grid. Would he die now? No. Grid was no longer the helpless person who tasted countless deaths.

He was careful and clever... No, it was common sense. It was easy to calculate.

[Dark Bus' Earrings have been turned off.]

[The effect of Blackening will disappear.]

[You have been affected by Great Heal.]

[The Holy Light Armor raises the recovery magic's power by 300%.]

[Your health has been restored.]

[Your health has been restored.]

[Your health...]

“What...?”

Shortly before dying. Pascal was happy at the thought of having Grid as a companion on his journey of death, only for his expression to twist. Grid was close to death, only to be restored by

the elders' Heal.

“This is crazy!”

It was Pascal's last call before he turned to ash.

# Chapter 281

---

Earl Chirita's third son, Pascal. He was well aware of the world's unreasonableness, just because he was born later in the line of succession. Did he feel frustration and resentment against the world?

No. Pascal tried hard. After looking for a path, he endured the trials and only served Goddess Rebecca. As a result, his fate changed. He could soon become pope.

‘Now it is my turn to reign!’

He was ready to enjoy the end of this unreasonable world.

Then Grid intruded.

‘Grid! You ruined my life!’

He felt resentful. His heart felt like he was going to burst. Blood was ejected from his eyes.

“Kuaaaaak!”

Pascal's resentful gaze penetrated Grid as he started turning grey. Grid knew that curses were contained in that gaze. But Grid wasn't afraid.

‘Curse? Try it if you want.’

He had already lived and overcame a life of hell. Even if this curse opened up a new hell, he could overcome it. It was the firm belief of the growing Grid.

“This guyyyy!”

Pascal witnessed Grid’s unshakable eyes and couldn’t hide his anger even as he disappeared. The scream echoed through the room, then new notification windows appeared in Grid’s field of view.

[You have defeated pope candidate Pascal, who has caused heartbreak to numerous people.]

[725,477,950 experience has been acquired.]

...

...

The amount of experience was a huge 720 million! Pascal gave a truly huge amount of experience as a high level named boss. But Grid wasn’t satisfied. He seemed disappointed.

‘I thought it would be at least two levels.’

So far, Grid always gained multiple levels every time he raided a boss. But now he was level 296, so things were different. The problem was that the amount of experience needed to level up dramatically increased. Despite having gained over 700 million experience points, the experience gauge wasn't even half full.

This was an unexpected result.

‘Now it’s impossible to raise my level with raids alone.’

Grid had made giant leaps in level by hunting bosses alone, but now there was a limit to that method. Now grinding mobs was required. Prepare potions, go to hunting grounds, kill monsters and repeat. It was time to experience these repetitive tasks. Of course, the first hunting targets were...

“Heok.”

The 16 remaining elders flinched as they met Grid’s greedy eyes.

“All of you.”

The ‘Blackening’ effect that belonged to the Dark Bus’ Earrings could only be used once every 12 hours. The duration was five minutes and the cooldown time was 12 hours. Unlike White Transformation attached to the divine artifacts, the Blackening built into this one artifact was incomplete. It wasn’t efficient.

Now Grid couldn’t rely on demonic power. He faced the 16 elders

with pure power.

“Holy Missile!”

“Holy Wave!”

“Great Heal!”

The elders tried to resist Grid. Their determination not to suffer like Pascal amplified their concentration. Their spell casting speed was faster than before.

“Link!”

Grid had acquired one of the hidden pieces ‘Sealed Ability’ and his skills cooldown time was reduced by 10%. Now he was able to use Pagma’s Swordsmanship more often. After swiftly slashing at two elders, he finished with Unbreakable Justice. This was followed by Kill.

Puok!

Despite his companions using Heal on him, the elder coughed up blood on the Hooded Zip Up. He looked stunned at the blue greatsword piercing his chest.

“K-Kuack...!”

[You have defeated the corrupt elder Haiber.]

[45,908,230 experience has been acquired.]

[Your demonic power has increased by one.]

[You have defeated the corrupt elder Sairus.]

[46,441,000 experience has been acquired.]

[Your demonic power has increased by one.]

[You have defeated the corrupt elder Raid.]

...

...

The experience of third advancement priests was terrific. It was at least 10 times more than normal monsters. It was possible because they were semi-named NPCs. It was pleasing for Grid, but the actual situation wasn't good.

After Blackening was gone, Grid didn't deal much damage to the elders. It was impossible to hurt them without using a skill. Grid was stuck with his skills on cooldown, so the elders were able to hold on with Heal, while aiming attack magic at Grid.



Pepeng!

Pepepepeng!

The bombardment of light continued. The number of wounds on Grid increased. The Holy Light Armor was dyed with blood and became rags.

‘This can’t continue.’

Grid determined and recalled the pavranium that was protecting the prostitutes. It was an unavoidable choice.

Jjejeong! Jjejejeok!

The golden spear started to assist Grid. Sometimes it defended Grid, sometimes it attacked the enemy, doubling Grid’s attack power.

“Kuaack!”

Lifael’s Spear broke the Holy Shield and the Grid attacked, lowering the health of the elders. He took mana potions and used skills whenever the cooldown ended, dealing with the elders one by one.

‘It is hard to endure!’

The faces of the elders were panicked. In the first place, priests were more suitable for secondary roles than fighting at the front. Their ability alone couldn't deal fatal injuries to Grid.

“Ohhhhhh!”

Grid's rampage grew increasingly wild. His physical abilities far exceeded the elders. Of course, there was a moment of crisis, but Doran's Ring saved him. 5 seconds of invincibility and Doran's ring.

It was like Grid had three lives. It was a fraudulent combination of his class and items.

‘Dammit!’

There were eight elders left. They eventually used the worst means. They took the prostitutes trembling in the corner as a hostage.

“Don't move a single muscle. If you move, I will kill them”

Innocent prostitutes. They witnessed a scene of slaughter and were now being threatened. It was regrettable. The elders smiled as Grid hesitated.

‘Indeed, it worked!’

‘Now we just need to hold on until the paladins arrive!’

Grid had protected the prostitutes with the golden spear. Thus, the elders assumed that he cherished the life of the prostitutes. But.

“Kill them.”

“What...?”

Grid once again started walking. He didn’t care that the power of the elders was aimed at the prostitutes.

“I won’t receive any damages even if they die.”

Of course, he felt bad. This was a moral issue. He might be called a psychopath, but who would accept an innocent person being swept away by the turmoil he caused. Thus, Grid did his best. He took care not to damage the prostitutes and supported Lifael’s Spear.

That was enough. He didn’t want to fail the quest because of them.

‘This is better.’

The prostitutes were witnesses. As the witnesses who saw Grid

hunt Pascal and the elders, there was concern that she would bear testimony against Grid. It was better for them to die instead of Grid.

Step, step.

The frightened elders cried out as Grid approached.

“D-Don’t come closer! I really will kill them!”

Yiing.

The power in the fingertips of the elders pointed towards the prostitutes became stronger. Grid snorted. “Kill them?”

Teong!

Grid leapt forward. The eyes of the elders widened as Grid drew his sword.

“I really will kill them!”

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

The bodies of the fearful prostitutes were swept away by an explosion of light. Grid’s eyes sank as he identified their ashes.

“Wave.”

Chaaeng!

A wave of energy hit the eight elders. Their speed fell and they were cut by the blue sword. After around 10 minutes of fighting.

“Pant... Pant...”

Now there was only Grid and Earl Chirita left in the room.

“P-Please! Please spare me!”

Earl Chirita staggered and begged as he approached Grid. He witnessed the helpless Pascal and the elders, and was half insane. Grid spoke coldly, “I told you. I’m the only one who will survive here.”

Puok!

“Cough...!”

[Earl Chirita of the Saharan Empire has been defeated.]

[3,110,400 experience has been acquired.]

[2,000 gold has been acquired.]

[Your demonic power has increased by one.]

“This is another unexpected harvest.”

2,000 gold. It was 2.4 million won. Earl Chirita dropped a huge amount of gold from his luxurious clothing.

[The time attack quest ‘Evidence Destruction’ has been completed!]

[Rumors about you won’t spread to the Saharan Empire!]

Kurururu...

Due to the aftermath of the battle, the room started to collapse. Grid identified the sinking ceiling and cracking pillars, before hurriedly leaving this place.

“Master! Why do you look like this? Nyang!”

Grid escaped to Isabel’s room. Noe worried about him as he lay on the bed. It was because the atmosphere around Grid was dark. Grid stroked Noe’s head while feeling guilty about the prostitutes who died because of him.

“It isn’t a big deal.”

He forgot this fact sometimes due to his love for Irene, but this was ultimately a game world. It was good to cherish NPCs, but this could also be a poison. Grid controlled his heart. Then he looked at the items Pascal dropped one by one.

[1 Goddess' Essence]

[5 Blessed Weapon Enhancement Stones]

[7 Blessed Armor Enhancement Stones]

[11 High-rated Magic Stones]

[Pascal's Secret Warehouse Key]

No equipment items dropped. It was somewhat disappointing, but Grid was satisfied enough.

[Goddess' Essence]

It was an essential material when making the three divine artifacts of the Rebecca Church (Reproduction). It was only a small amount of essence, but he was happy that Pascal dropped it.

[High-rated Magic Stones]

Each one was worth 4,000 gold and could be used to make magic items.

‘The more enhancement stones I have, the better.’

None of the items dropped by Pascal were unrecognizable. Among them, Grid was particularly interested in a golden key.

[Pascal’s Secret Warehouse Key]

The key to opening Pascal’s secret warehouse.

There is a mountain of gold and silver piled up in Pascal’s warehouse.

‘Mountain...!’

How many riches were there for it to be described as a mountain?

‘I will become rich!’

Grid rose up excitedly. Then he received a whisper from Damian.

–It is a mess out here! Someone has killed Pascal and the elders!

–I killed him.



–Huh?

Grid asked the puzzled Damian.

–Do you know the location of Pascal’s warehouse?

Damian was absent minded for a moment, before replying belatedly.

–Warehouse...? I don’t know, but Pascal always uses the first prayer room.

‘The first prayer room.’

Grid didn’t delay. He ran straight towards the first prayer room.

Clink.

He opened the warehouse door by inserting the key.

Swaaaaah!

The brilliant gold light filled his field of view. It was painful to the eyes.

“Amazing...”

Gold was really piled up like a mountain inside the huge warehouse. It was the epitome of a dragon’s lair.

“Is this all mine?”

If he took all of this, he would have tens of billions of won. He was so excited that his sphincter muscles contracted.

“Puhahaha! I will be rich! Rich!”

The joyful Grid!

The notification window that popped out was like lightning out of the blue.

[The safekeeping system of the secret warehouse has failed to detect Pascal’s divine power and has activated.]

[The warehouse will explode after three minutes!]

[Gather as much riches as possible in three minutes.]

“Dammit!”

Things were going to well. What should he do to get as much gold

as possible in three minutes? Grid thought hurriedly as he poured gold coins into the mouth of the confused Noe.

“Summon Knight.”

The system that he never used when he was a crisis, in order to save experience, was triggered.

“I have responded to My Lord’s call.”

“Please give a command.”

“Grid!”

Piario, Asmophel and 10 members of Overgeared emerged from the light. Grid shouted, “Get the money! Money!”

“...”

Their historic first mission, after being the pillars of the empire in the past, was to pick up gold coins. Complex emotions crossed Piario and Asmophel’s face.

# Chapter 282

---

‘I want to see him.’

Expert archer Jishuka.

She was doing her duties as ruler of Bairan. When developing Bairan, she regularly raided the Guardian of the Forest and distributed the resources generated from the raid. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that Reidan was able to hold on thanks to her efforts.

However, Jishuka felt irritated. She hadn't met Grid once in seven months. She was dying to see Grid. She was regarded as the most beautiful woman in South America and courted by the world's top 0.1% males, but she was irritated because of Grid.

“Hah.”

She sighed and wanted to drop everything so that she could go to Grid's side.

[Your lord ‘Grid’ has summoned you. Would you like to accept the summons?]

“Oh my?”

The notification window she had been waiting for finally

appeared at the right timing.

‘Do you know that I want to see you right now?’

It must be telepathy. Jishuka felt like this was fated, and her heart started thumping. Her delusions unfolded due to her lack of dating experience.

‘Asking for a summoning without prior notice...’

Did he prepare a surprise event?

“Jishuka, I wanted to see you too. I imagined your beautiful appearance every night and struggled.”

She imagined Grid talking like this with a sexy appearance. She smiled widely. Jishuka’s blinded eyes looked down at her body. She was shy. This was the first time she had liked someone since she was born. The problem was that her clothing and attire were unsuited for minors to see.

“I will respond to the summons.”

Jishuka responded to Grid’s call without worrying about it. The sight she first witnessed after being teleported to Grid’s side was a mountain of gold coins.

‘Did he prepare this for me?’

Jishuka's long eyelashes trembled. She was touched by Grid's event.

“This money would be used for our wedding funds.”

Jishuka's face turned red as she imagined it.

‘Grid, dating should come before marriage.’

It wasn't urgent to get married before they even had a chance to date. She might have a crush on Grid, but she wasn't someone who acted prematurely. Jishuka wanted to know more about Grid before she got married. What type of man he was during the day and what type of man he was at night...?

Then familiar voices broke through her delusions.

“Hey Jishuka. Hasn't it been a while?”

“Have you become prettier in the meantime? Did you get a boyfriend?”

“Why does women's armor become more exposed the higher the level? I am thankful.”

Pon, Regas, Vantner, Toban, Faker, etc. Once she returned her eyes to reality, she was able to see all of the Tzedakah members.

“...?”

Grid wasn't trying to meet her alone? The embarrassed Jishuka turned her gaze towards Grid. Grid didn't even look at her. He was busy shoving gold coins into Noe's mouth. Grid shouted, “Get the money! Money! This place will explode in 2 minutes and 40 seconds, so make sure you get as much money as you can!”

“...This is the reason for summoning us.”

The Overgeared members quickly grasped the situation. On the other hand, Lael urged the blank Jishuka.

“What are you doing? Go and grab the money.”

It was a huge amount of gold coins. If they could obtain it, Reidan could overcome its financial burdens.

[62 gold has been acquired.]

[75 gold has been acquired.]

“There is a limit to picking it up one by one.”

The amount of gold coins a user could take in a single action was limited. The problem was the volume that the hands could contain.

“If Euphemina was here, she could move it all at once with Mass Teleport.”

“That... Why is she disconnected when this is happening?”

“I’ll use a shovel.”

“Should I pick it up with my shield?”

“Oh, that is a good idea?”

“Hrmm.”

Lauel thought for awhile between the grumbling Vantner and Toban before using a skill.

“Dragon Claws.”

Kururung!

Three stone pillars appeared from the bottom of the warehouse and soon disappeared. Lauel confirmed the depths of the pit, then created wind.

“Wind Dragon’s Roar.”



Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

The wind poured the gold coins into the pit like a waterfall. The gold coins buried in the ground were not guaranteed to be safe from the explosion that would soon occur. The other Overgeared members also started utilizing their skills.

“Mach Spear!”

Kuwaaaang!

Vantner’s sonic spear broke the wall of the warehouse. A passage was opened to the outside.

“Charge!”

Kuuong! Kung!

The combination of Vantner and Toban, standing side by side with their shield, was reminiscent of a bulldozer. They slowly pushed the mountain of gold coins towards the collapsed wall. On the other hand, Piaro climbed on top of a mountain with a hand plow and hoe in both hands.

“Free Farming.”

Pa pa pa pa pak!

It was amazing. The hoe and hand plow moved at a speed that wasn't visible, extracting gold coins from the mountain. A large amount of gold flew outside the wall and piled up neatly. Amosphel, who hadn't been able to adapt to the mood, no longer stayed still.

“Aura Explosion.”

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

Due to the strong explosion, a hole larger than the one drilled by Pon appeared in the wall. Asmophel aimed a large Aura Tornado there and blew a huge amount of gold coins out the wall. It was an amazing sight. It seemed like they could carry out most of the gold coins in the warehouse within the time limit.

Then what about Grid?

“Oh! I will pack all of this!”

Both hands squeezed out gold coins into his inventory and Noe's mouth. Piaro suggested that Grid was so blinded by money he couldn't look around.

“This limited field of view is poisonous.”

Grid already knew this. But he forgot due to his boiling greed. Grid recovered quickly and observed the Overgeared members.

‘I can use skills.’

Grid had a late epiphany and let go of Noe. Tears appeared in Noe’s large eyes.

“Spit spit spit! These shiny things are tasteless! Nyang! Kuuock!”

“Taste isn’t important. Don’t spit it out and keep eating... You, why are you burping?”

“Didn’t I say I won’t eat this? Nyang!”

“No! Don’t chew it and keep it in your mouth! Like a squirrel keeps acorns!”

Noe, the best demonic beast of hell. When using Soul Ingestion, the size of his mouth could be increased freely. It was obvious that he could constantly inhale the gold coins. The confident Grid ordered Noe to obtain the gold coins, then he pulled out Failure.

‘Grid, how much have your skills increased now?’

The attention of the Overgeared members focused on Grid. Piaro and Asmophel were also expectant. Grid wore the Slaughterer’s Eye Patch and used a skill.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship, Transcend.”

Kuoooooh!

There was an emission of energy and Grid's black hair fluttered. The red light contemplated the gold coins and he carefully swung Failure.

Kwaang! Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

Kurururung!

The mountain of gold coins' balance collapsed due to the exquisite strike and poured out of the hole in the warehouse previously created by Pon and Asmophel. Piaro and the Overgeared members were amazed as they saw the gold coins pouring out like the tide.

‘Wonderful.’

His skills had increased. It was proof that Grid hadn't be relaxing while acting alone for the past few months. The ability to break down the balance of things was great, even if he relied on the power of an item. As everyone was feeling thrilled, Jishuka pouted and pulled back her bowstring.

“Avoid this. Phoenix Arrow!”

Kuwaaaaaang!

It was overwhelming power. Half of the mountain of gold coins left in the warehouse caught on fire as they were blown outside. A great amount of them couldn't withstand the high temperatures and melted, but it wasn't regrettable. It was already 10 seconds until the warehouse exploded. If Jishuka hadn't acted, half of the mountain of gold coins would be lost.

“Pant pant... Avoid it!”

Grid winced after almost being hit by the Phoenix Arrow, then he and the other members ran out of the warehouse. Immediately afterwards, there was an explosion that shook the earth.

Kuwaaaaaang!

“Kyaaak!”

“What is it this time?”

The guests gathered near the collapsed building turned their gaze in the direction of the explosion. The first prayer room beyond the waterfall was burning. The paladins shouted, “It must be the criminal who murdered the elders! Go there now!”

Damian quickly called out to them. “Wait a minute.”

“Yes, Goddess' Agent.”

Damian might've been ignored by the elders, but he gained great support among the members. Damian spoke to the paladins who stopped.

“You will remain here and investigate. I will go there with Isabel-chan and Grid.”

“I will follow the will of the Goddess' Agent.”

Damian was currently one of the highest ranking survivors. The paladins immediately opened the path for him.

“Let's go.”

Damian glanced at Isabel and Grid. The Grid in this location was Randy. His shape was gradually becoming strange due to the influence of divine power. He was like Grid, but not.

“Follow!”

The OGC team moved hastily after Damian's group. OGC Station wanted to find out who killed the elders of the Rebecca Church. However, Damian didn't stand still. He exhibited the swordsmanship that he developed training with Piaro and Kraugel. Then he poured out dozens of magic spells. It caused indignation among the viewers, but he didn't hesitate.

It was an effort to protect Grid.

\*\*\*

“It is Pascal’s hidden wealth.”

Grid and the Overgeared members were shoving the scattered gold coins into their inventory. Damian’s expression twisted as he saw this. He remembered what Pascal had done with these riches and hated it.

“Damian, become the pope.” Grid spoke with a serious expression. He didn’t look as impressive while squatting down and picking up gold coins. But to Damian, Grid seemed to shine.

“I will surely become the pope, whom you need.”

Grid had done everything. He saved Isabel and killed Pascal. If Damian couldn’t become pope after this, he would have no pride left. Grid was reassured by Damian’s resolute eyes and laughed, “I believe in you.”

“...”

Damian was shaken. He was well aware that Grid didn’t help him for pure motivations. But Grid still believed in him? It was the first time Damian, who was an otaku, was treated like this.

“Perhaps... Would you like to join Overgeared?”

A pope becoming a guild member? It was nice to hear. However, Lauel restrained Grid.

“The Rebecca Church is supposed to be neutral on the surface.”

It was right to maintain the neutrality of the Rebecca Church, who preached their doctrines regardless of species or nationality. It was feared that the value of the church would decline if various powers opposed the blatant favoritism.

“That’s right.” Grid was sincerely sorry and held out a hand to Damian. “Well, so what if we aren’t in the same guild? It doesn’t change the fact that we are eternal companions. Join the guild after your term as a pope is over.”

“...Yes.”

He got a friend. Damian smiled with delight and shook Grid’s hands.



# Chapter 283

---

The mountain of gold coins was close to a height of 4m. During the three minute time limit, how much could the Overgeared members obtain? The result of adding up the amounts they obtained.

“21 million gold.”

“Heok! Really?”

“Wow, terrific.”

“Grid did it again! This is amazing!”

21 million gold! When converted to Korean money, it would be around 25.5 billion won. It was close to half the salaries of the world’s top sports players. The impressed Pon asked Vantner.

“At the time of the Vasco raid, how much profit did Seuron get?”

Two months before the Reidan invasion. Soul Predator Seuron went through Vasco’s Labyrinth with his guild members. Vantner had watched it in real time, so he pulled up his memories.

“Adding up the value of the Brutal Heavy Sword, it was about 8 million gold.”

“Grid got nearly three times that amount alone?”

Strictly speaking, this time it wasn't alone. If it was Grid alone, he wouldn't have been able to pick up 200,000 gold by hand. It was true that he raided Pascal through his own efforts, choices and abilities. His decision to summon the knights was admirable. Grid's achievements couldn't be downplayed.

“Grid, you're the best.”

“Of course our master should be the best.”

“Congrats on becoming a rich man!”

The Overgeared members praised Grid. They sincerely congratulated him for the huge sum of money, and rejoiced as if it was their own. There was no jealousy or envy. Their respect and friendship with Grid wasn't cheap.

“Haha!”

“Kilkil.”

“...”

The Overgeared members were excited, producing a cheerful atmosphere. On the other hand, Grid was silent. The Overgeared members thought he was so happy that he was at a loss for words.

But it was a misunderstanding. Grid was sincerely angry. He was speechless because it was ridiculous.

‘Why? Why isn’t it one trillion?’

The amount of gold coins that Grid had seen in the warehouse was beyond imagination. He thought it would be at least one trillion won. Yet he only got 21 million gold?

“This is ridiculous! We carried out most of the gold coins in the warehouse before it exploded! Countless gold coins were kept! But why? Why is it only 21 million gold!!!”

“...”

Who would use the word ‘only’ for 21 million gold? The Overgeared members fell silent at this unexpected reaction.

“It’s a scam! A scam!”

Lauel explained to the furious Grid.

“The explosion was so strong that it affected the outside of the building. At that time, a lot of gold coins were lost. In addition, there were many gold coins that were damaged after being hit by a skill.”

Gold coins that were damaged slightly were always destroyed. It seemed to be some type of safety device designed by the S.A Group.

“Dammit!” The damaged gold coins were designed to be destroyed and the warehouse to explode? “You bastards!”

It couldn’t resist angrily screaming out curses. After losing his temper, the only person who could completely calm him down was Lauel.

“Isn’t 21 million gold a huge amount? In fact, the S.A. Group must be more baffled right now. They never imagined that we could get so many gold coins in just three minutes.”

How could they imagine that he would use the skill Summon Knight for gold coins? They might’ve predicted that Grid could only obtain up to one million gold. The result was that Grid had hit the S.A. Group in the back of the head. Grid should be the one feeling invigorated. However, Grid didn’t get any comfort from this.

“Shit! Dammit! The gold coins could at least be melted down and made into metal, so why were they destroyed?”

‘It does seem to be the case.’

The Overgeared members started to sympathize with Grid. The S.A. Group’s effort to fight inflation wasn’t so well received. There were more than two billion users in Satisfy. If the NPCs were

included, billions of people used the same currency. The possibility of the value of currency falling was extremely low.

Grid and the group left the Vatican.

“You said you were going to Winston?”

“Sigh... Yes.”

“I thought so. You should show your face to your wife.”

“Isn’t she pregnant?”

“The childcare system and a prince maker, I am envious. It would be fun to raise a child.”

“Umm... Grid Junior. Umm...”

Grid regained control once the story of Irene and his child emerged. He couldn’t lose his composure so easily when he was going to become a father. After a moment of consideration, he handed Lael 20 million gold.

“Let’s use this money for Reidan’s development fund. If all of you weren’t here in the first place, I wouldn’t have been able to obtain so much.”

“...!”

Lauel and the Overgeared members were greatly amazed. They never dreamed that Grid would be willing to invest the money into the territory.

“Aren’t I incompetent because I do nothing as a lord? I should at least give you money.”

Grid should originally be the one working the hardest for Reidan. But what was the reality? Grid didn’t fulfill his obligations as the lord, and the Overgeared members were suffering from all types of problems. Grid was always sorry and thankful about this fact. He wanted to help with the development of the estate.

“If Reidan develops, the benefits will return to all of us in the end. Isn’t that right?”

“Your words are correct.”

The development of Reidan would make Overgeared strong. This would be a stepping stone to build Grid’s kingdom and would bring enormous wealth to Grid. 20 million gold couldn’t be compared to that huge amount of money. Grid already knew this. That’s why he decided to invest in Reidan.

“By the time you come back, Reidan will be more developed than before. Look forward to it.”

This 20 million gold was enough to invigorate Reidan. Once the yellow mithril mine was activated and the alchemy business expanded, Reidan would become one step closer to its goal.

‘The second Talima!’

Talima. A city of dwarves that produced the best battle gear. But it was in the territory of the dragon Trauka, so it was off limits to humans. If Reidan could one day compete with Talima...

Lauel’s brain turned quickly. He kept in mind the merger with the Silver Knights Guild and made plans for Reidan’s development.

\*\*\*

“This is the first time we have walked together alone.”

“Y-Yes.”

After saying goodbye to Lauel’s group. Grid and Jishuka were heading to Winston.

Gulp!

Grid couldn’t help gulping through the journey. This was a very natural phenomenon. He couldn’t help appreciating Jishuka’s beautiful face and great body.

‘Grid is looking at me.’

Jishuka was conscious of Grid’s eyes and deliberately walked like a model. She showed a gentle gait that emphasized the curves of her body.

Gulp!

Grid couldn’t resist staring at her swaying hips. This was unavoidable. Jishuka’s busty body was perfectly to Grid’s taste. It was the same with her personality.

“Let’s camp here today. Excuse me... Grid, can I use your arm as a pillow?”

“Huhu, Grid’s body is so solid.”

A provocation woman by night.

“I will cook.”

“Oh my, Grid. Shouldn’t you watch where you are going? You should focus on hunting.”

“I am embarrassed.”

A mild-mannered woman during the day.



“I’m going crazy.”

Grid’s appreciation towards Jishuka rose exponentially. He was seriously considering buying a ‘Love Potion’ from the Reputation Store that would reset the penalty once a month. However, Jishuka had no intention of allowing that.

‘There is no point in Satisfy.’

Grid was already married to Irene. She couldn’t be a concubine. It was appropriate to convey her true heart in reality. Right now, she was just acting to stimulate Grid. Thanks to that, Grid was suffering. He wanted to quickly see Irene.

\*\*\*

Just before arriving in Winston. Grid promised to meet Jishuka six hours later and logged out. It was because he received a call from Sehee outside the capsule.

“Why did you call?”

Grid exited the capsule and bluntly asked Sehee.

“A guest.”

“Guest?”

He saw that it was 11 a.m. A Sunday morning. What guest would come at a time when families should be together? Grid tilted his head. No, Youngwoo went out into the living room. Then he panicked.

“Y-Yura?”

Yura was sitting on the sofa and smiling while chatting with his parents. She looked particularly beautiful. Her neat charm was the best. If Jishuka’s beauty 100% matched his tastes, Yura had a beauty that made his taste meaningless.

Youngwoo admired Yura’s beauty before recovering his spirit. It was due to his mother’s words.

“Youngwoo, what are you staring at? Come and sit down.”

“Ah, yes.”

Grid awkwardly sat on the couch. His parents were sitting side by side on one sofa, so Youngwoo naturally sat beside Yura. A nice scent tickled his nose. Yura asked for understanding from his parents and said to Youngwoo.

“Please buy me a meal.”

“What?” Youngwoo was confused by the sudden request. “Why

are you suddenly asking me to buy you a lot of food? Can't you buy food for yourself? No, how did you hear that I made money?"

This witch had come for his money! Yura was different from the Overgeared members. She helped him a lot, but he was still wary of her. It wasn't enough to be considered a friend yet. His parents noticed Yura's sad expression and scolded him.

"How can you talk that way to a guest?"

"Youngwoo, we taught you better."

Yura was pretty, talented, and had a lot of money. Youngwoo's parents wanted her to be their daughter-in-law.

'You don't know that her nickname is Blood Witch.'

A murderer who hurt people without changing her facial expression! The impression from his first meeting still wasn't erased from his brain. Youngwoo sighed and got up from his seat.

"Let's go."

Youngwoo didn't care about washing up. He was still dressed in sweats that had food splattered on them. Youngwoo's mother tried to convince him to change, but Yura didn't care. She thought that Youngwoo not caring about impressing others was attractive.

\*\*\*

A restaurant near his house.

“What’s going on?”

Yura observed the inside of the shabby restaurant while Youngwoo ordered two servings of bulgogi rice. Yura extended a passbook to him.

“What is this?”

“This is the broadcast fee from OGC Station.”

“Ah.”

He didn’t expect much of a broadcast fee. Youngwoo didn’t understand why Yura had it, but he was happy about receiving money.

‘I should go to a restaurant tonight for a celebration.’

He would eat a big meal. Bean sprouts as well. A lot of monkfish! He thought it was millions of won, but his eyes bugged out when he opened the passbook.

“Eh...? Eek!”

It was a huge amount. A huge 500,000 mi...

“No, it is 5 billion?”

Yura explained to the astounded Youngwoo.

“Some of it was withheld as tax.”

“N-No, why is it so much?”

“It is my ability.”

It wasn't arrogance. Yura was just telling the truth.

“Why are you doing this for me?”

Yura answered Youngwoo's question without hesitation. She had a busy life, so time was valuable to her.

“Please let me join Overgeared.”

Youngwoo didn't hesitate. Collecting talent was his desire and Yura was a better talent than anyone else. Wasn't she 5th on the unified rankings? That's right. As a private ranker, Youngwoo wasn't interested in the ranking system and didn't yet know that Yura had disappeared from the rankings list.

“Welcome!”

The two people ate the delicious bulgogi meat. Yura had a happy expression throughout the meal. People who knew her would be surprised.

# Chapter 284

---

‘Did he forget about me?’

The great magician Braham. Much longer than a year ago, he had commissioned Grid to make him a Vessel of the Soul. A Vessel of the Soul was necessary for his resurrection. But until now, there was no news from Grid. Based on the little he observed through Mumud’s Orb, Grid seemed to have no desire to fulfill the request.

‘He plans to take all the pavranium!’

Braham had reached the limits of his patience. He had sent a golem army as a warning. However, things didn’t work out and Braham’s anger skyrocketed.

[Pagma’s Descendant...!]

The expression of a soul’s emotions was honest. His soul fragments scattered throughout the continent simultaneously turned red. There was someone who found one of the soul pieces.

The first vampire city.

“Oh my? I feel a dirty magic power, who is it?”

The wards were easily cracked and a mysterious woman appeared in front of Braham’s soul. The magic power that could be

seen inside her was tremendous, like the light from a dragon heart. It was enough to make even Braham nervous.

[Y-You...!]

A black-haired beauty who exuded gentleness and sensuality. She was so beautiful that it was unrealistic, but Braham's soul shook frantically.

[Marie Rose! How did you escape from your seal?]

Vampire duke, Marie Rose. A direct descendant of the founder Shizo Beriache and the one with the strongest magic power, she directly grabbed Braham's soul.

"I was able to break the seal at any time. I was just bored and enjoyed sleeping."

Then she woke up due to the bloody smell coming from a human male's cloak. Marie Rose's eyes curved into a crescent moon shape.

"Braham, you lost your pure blood and degenerated, eventually dying. Now only your soul is left. This insignificant appearance suits you."

[Don't taunt me!]

Marie Rose gazed at Braham's soul, which was gradually turning



redder.

“Our Braham wouldn’t have no countermeasures. What are you planning to do now?”

Marie Rose handled Braham’s soul like it was clay, then she suddenly smiled. It was a brilliant smile that was enough to illuminate the dark city.

“You, are you dreaming about resurrection?”

Braham was a peculiar presence. He didn’t rely on the innate power of the clan and explored magic power. He might’ve completed the resurrection magic. Braham didn’t deny it.

[Then what are you going to do? You can’t stop my resurrection! If even one of my souls hidden in all parts of the continent doesn’t disappear, I will someday be fully resurrected! Then I will surely use all my effort to destroy you!]

Marie Rose found the shouting soul to be cute.

“I wonder how far you can go as a mortal.”

[...!]

Mortal! Braham hated that cursed word. Marie Rose returned the soul to its original position and turned around. Braham called out

to her.

[Aren't you going to destroy my soul fragment here?]

Braham had been banished from the clan. He used the fact that it was dark to hide his soul in the clan's cities, but he thought they would be destroyed because they were found by Marie Rose.

However, Marie Rose had no intention of dealing with Braham. Braham was a mere worm in front of her.

“How annoying.”

This was the end.

Marie Rose immediately returned to her palace. Braham's soul looked like a flame as he watched her leave.

‘This mutation that transcends the founder...!’ He must be resurrected. ‘I will kill the one who made me like this, take away their heart, and regain eternal life!’

\*\*\*

Winston had problems. As it grew into the second largest city in the north, all types of groups infiltrated it and problems occurred. Various forces were created and confronted each other, causing the deterioration of security.

‘Lady Irene needs to recover...’

After entering the sixth month of her pregnancy, Irene became depressed. Her only flesh and blood, her father, was at Frontier, and her husband Grid was in Reidan, so she was alone.

“Sigh...”

A wrinkled face sighed. Winston’s chief knight, Phoenix, was now old. It was too much for him to supervise the work that Irene was supposed to do.

‘If only Grid was here.’

Phoenix was sighing over a pile of documents, when an urgent voice was heard.

“Captain Phoenix! Blood is being shed in Rein!”

Rein was the name of a bar in the slums. It was a place filled with many crooks that disturbed security. Phoenix’s face twisted.

“Who is causing trouble?”

“The Double-Billed Merchant Group and the Yellow Guild are colliding!”

The Double-Billed Merchant Group had a tight grip on Winston's market.

Recently, they started to buy orc leather and collided with the Ikeil Merchant Group as they expanded their business. The Ikeil Group seemed to have hired the Yellow Guild to attack the the Double-Billed Merchant Group.

‘Those Yellow bastards!’

The Yellow Guild was a powerful group. The average level was close to 200 and they were the strongest guild in Winston. In order to suppress them, Phoenix had to go out himself.

“Let’s go!”

Phoenix was accompanied by soldiers and knights.

\*\*\*

“The strongest knight in the north isn’t that great?”

Rein Tavern. Dozens of people watched as Phoenix fell to his knees. He was badly hit by the Yellow Guild.

“You...!”

Phoenix gritted his teeth.

He was glaring at a priest of the Rebecca Church.

Dong Pao. The Rebecca Church priest, who once enjoyed PKing with Shay's group, recently added his strength to the Yellow Guild. Of course, it was due to money. How wonderful and happy was it to earn money by playing games?

"This is a tip."

The master of the Yellow Guild, Ank, threw a purse towards Dong Pao. It was the payment for approaching Phoenix as a Rebecca priest and distracting him. Dong Pao smiled with satisfaction after confirming the amount.

"Good, good. Don't forget to kill all the witnesses just in case."

"Of course."

Ank had no intention of sparing Phoenix and his men. Was he scared by the penalty of killing the knights and soldiers? He could take the chance. He planned to leave the Eternal Kingdom after this work.

'If only I can obtain the Sword of Self-transcendence!'

Sword of Self-transcendence. A legendary item that was supposed produced by Grid during his novice days. The expected selling price was 1.5 million gold.

‘No, the number of users who are level 180 have increased recently, so it will go over 2 million if I put it on auction.’

It was an amount that could reverse his life.

‘I can go drink with girls!’

Indeed, it was a low level of greed. The joyful Ank approached Phoenix. Phoenix was in a miserable condition. He fell into a trap and struggled against 40 Yellow Guild members alone. More than half of the guild members had died, so the price wasn’t cheap.

“Please drop the Sword of Self-transcendence after dying.”

Ssik!

Ank said with a smile. If he could get money, he wouldn’t feel guilty for killing NPCs. Ank was a man who didn’t care about killing.

Swaeek!

The moment that a vicious sword was able to stab into Phoenix’s forehead.

Puok!

A golden blade flew and stabbed Ank in the neck.

[You have suffered 3,900 damage.]

“Ugh!”

A throwing weapon could cause him that much damage? Ank turned his gaze in the direction where the blade was thrown.

“Where is this fellow?”

The answer came from behind him.

“Guess.”

Kwajak!

[You have suffered 11,900 damage.]

‘This is crazy!’

Why was this attack power so strong? The astonished Ank looked at the greatsword that was stabbed in his side. It was a blue

greatsword that reminded him of the predator of the sea.

‘D-Don’t tell me!’

Ank turned pale and looked back. Then it was like he saw a ghost.

“Grid!”

Why was he here in the north when he should be in the west? Ank and the other Yellow Guild members couldn’t believe it. Grid swung the greatsword at those who were speechless.

“These cheeky bastards, how dare you mess around in my wife’s territory?”

Peok! Puk puk!

The one-sided assault wasn’t even worth describing. Users in the early 200’s couldn’t stand up to Grid.

“G-Grid, it has been a long time since I’ve seen you.”

Dong Pao, who was hiding in the corner, awkwardly greeted Grid. The scammer started to act.

“Today I was moved by the guidance of Goddess Rebecca. I happened to be reunited by you in this place! Grid! I have been



repenting since I first met you, but then I was taken hostage by these villainous people and used! You have saved me, so I should repay this grace...!”

“Who are you?”

Dong Pao was embarrassed by the unexpected question.

“Y-You don’t remember me?”

“Yes, I can’t remember you because my brain capacity isn’t good enough.”

“W-What are you saying?”

“Shut up.”

Peok! Bam bam bam!

“Kuheook!”

On this day.

The Yellow Guild and Dong Pao, who was beaten up like a dog, were deprived of their citizenship. Now they couldn’t step anywhere in the Steim territory. They were also sentenced to two weeks of Satisfy time in prison.

It was frustrating for a user to be imprisoned for two weeks. In particular, Dong Pao felt the desire to quit the game because his work had been ruined twice by Grid.

“I need to set up security straight away.”

Grid received a report on the statue of Winston from Phoenix and immediately summoned Jude. Jude was very strong after being armed with Dainsleif and the best armor. His level was above Phoenix, who was no longer developing due to his age.

“Teach the soldiers here and punish those who cause disturbances without any mercy.”

“Yes.”

Jude had no thoughts. He just followed Grid’s orders. The Winston soldiers had to taste hell from Jude’s harsh training. There were deserters and wounded soldiers as a result, but the few soldiers who endured the training could become elites.

Jude rallied the soldiers and quickly stabilized Winston’s security.

# Chapter 285

---

A pleasant breeze blew over the grass. A young couple was sitting next to each other under a big tree.

Grid and Irene.

“Dear husband. Heheh.”

There seemed to be hearts around them. Irene was reunited with Grid after six months, so she was the happiest person in the world.

“This moment seems so unreal. I don’t want this dream to end.”

Irene’s smile couldn’t be erased. She had already overcome the depression she had been suffering from. The more she rejoiced, the more pained Grid became. He felt sorry that he made her so lonely.

‘I want to take her to Reidan.’

It was his original desire. But unfortunately, Irene couldn’t leave Winston.

“I love you.”

“I love you too.”

Their love deepened in proportion to the amount of time they missed each other. The two people felt like this time was more precious than ever as they hugged each other.

“I’m happy about this system.”

The parenting system. There was a child in Irene’s belly. Grid pressed his face to Irene’s swollen belly.

Duguen. Duguen.

The sound of the fetus’ heartbeat reached his ears. It was a small but energetic sound.

Grid felt the infinite mysteries.

‘My child...’

He would be a father. He felt fear since it was his first experience, but his happiness was greater. It felt like he had left his trace in this world. Words couldn’t describe the sense of fulfillment.

‘I was lonely until last year and never thought this day would come.’

Money, colleagues, friends. A woman he loved and now a home. Grid had obtained all these things from Satisfy. Satisfy wasn’t just a game, but a world that was as precious as reality. Irene’s small

hand grabbed Grid's big and rough hands. She felt a desire that she expressed.

"I want our child to be a boy with nice hands like yours. Do you want that as well?"

The Eternal Kingdom's treatment of women wasn't as bad as the south. Compared with other kingdoms, the social status of women was very high. But it was an undeniable reality that most nobles wanted a male heir.

For Irene, she was Marquis Steim's only daughter, so she was well aware of this. Marquis Steim had actually wanted a son. Irene wanted to have a son, but she couldn't help feeling a little bitter from her position as a woman.

Grid's high insight read her mind and he answered quickly. "I'd like a daughter."

"Isn't a daughter lacking in many ways to be the heir?"

"No, such things don't matter. I just want a daughter who is as beautiful and kind as you."

Love wasn't a skill. Grid were merely telling the truth. Irene was thrilled by his unexpected answer. Her eyes filled with tears and she blushed.

"Dear husband is so good."

“ ... ”

The moist eyes and flushed cheeks were adorable. This stimulus caused Grid to gulp. Irene could see what he wanted.

“I love you. It is hard with the child in my belly but...”

“Eh... H-Huh?”

Irene was still a girl. She had a purity that made it seem like she hadn't known a man yet. Therefore, Grid was embarrassed by the meaningful remark she made that didn't match her appearance.

“Now, let's go.”

“W-Wait a minute.”

“There is no need for time.”

Irene led Grid to her bedroom. After that. The two people shared their love in a different way due to Irene's pregnancy, and the result was good.

[The child in the belly has felt the couple's true love.]

[All stats of the child in the belly will permanently increase by

one.]

\*\*\*

A whisper came from Lauel.

After 10 days, he intended to hold a merger ceremony with the Silver Knights Guild.

“I guess I have to leave.”

Grid had spent three happy days with Irene. He wanted to stay near Irene, but he couldn't enjoy it forever. He knew the responsibility as the Overgeared master had to be fulfilled.

‘If I have my kingdom, I won't see anyone else and will place you as my queen.’

This was one more reason to become king. Phoenix approached Grid as he prepared to leave. “Duke Grid, can't you take Lady Irene with you?”

“Take Irene to Reidan?”

“Yes, My Lord. That is Marquis Steim's wish.”

She would give birth in 4 months. Marquis Steim didn't want her

to be lonely in the meantime. It was the same with Grid, but wasn't Irene ruler of Winston?

“Can she leave this place?”

“Marquis Steim has sent a substitute.”

“That is good.”

Grid smiled widely. Phoenix was in tears as he saw Grid's delight.

‘My Lady, you are truly loved.’

“Hold on tightly to me.”

Grid hugged Irene and flew with Braham's Boots. The sight of the two people in the clouds was reminiscent of a scene in a romantic movie.

“It is too mysterious and exciting. It's like a fairy tale world.”

“I think every moment with you is a fairy tale.”

“Dear husband...”

[The child in the belly has felt the couple's true love.]



[All stats of the child in the belly will permanently increase by one.]

[The child in the belly has witnessed the marvels of nature.]

[The child in the belly is curious.]

[The intelligence of child in the belly will permanently increase by two.]

“My mana is low. Let’s walk for a while.”

“Huhut, I remember walking through the forest with you on the day we met.”

In the past, Grid had rescued Irene from Malacus and they headed through the forest. He recalled that time. Grid wrapped an arm around Irene’s slender shoulders.

“Danger won’t come to you again. I will protect you.”

“Dear husband...”

[The child in the belly has felt the couple’s true love.]

[All stats of the child in the belly will permanently increase by

one.]

The couple's liking grew exponentially during the journey to Reidan and had a good effect on the child. Monsters and thieves appeared occasionally to threaten the couple, but they were just experience to Grid.

[The child in the belly has witnessed his father's sword dance and admires it.]

[The child in the belly is interested in swordsmanship.]

[The strength of child in the belly will permanently increase by one.]

[The child in the belly has witnessed his father's weapon repairing and admires it.]

[The child in the belly is interested in blacksmithing.]

[The dexterity of child in the belly will permanently increase by one.]

Every so often, these notification windows would pop up in front of Grid.

‘This is like a joke.’

Level 1 characters had a total of 22 stat points.. On the other hand, it seemed like the baby would have at least 50 stat points from the moment they were born.

‘Well, the important thing is the maximum limit of the stats.’

Grid didn’t expect much from the stats of his child. It was because NPCs had a limit on their stats, except for named NPCs. He just hoped for a nice and pretty child who resembled Irene. That’s right. He was forgetting. It was the fact that his child was a special person who inherited the blood of the legendary Grid and Marquis Steim of the Eternal Kingdom.

\*\*\*

Guild Name: Overgeared

Level: 10 (MAX)

Master: Grid

Capacity: 28/250

Affiliation: The Eternal Kingdom

Alliances: Marquis Steim

Hostile Relationships: There are no forces that can be called clear enemies, but there are many who are on guard.

Inclination: An unconditionally favorable relationship with Marquis Steim.

Territory: Reidan.

Originally, raising the level of a guild was very tough. It took the top guilds at least a year to reach level 10. But Overgeared was a special case. Due to the huge rewards from the golem invasion, they were able to achieve level 10 in just 7 months. But Grid wasn't satisfied.

“Why is there only 250 guild members? This guild system is completely bad.”

The Silver Knights Guild had a total of exactly 225 members. The conditions of the merger included all of them, so Grid was puzzled.

Lauel explained. “You can make another guild.”

“One person can make multiple guilds?”

“No. Someone in Overgeared should create a new guild and assign that guild to Overgeared. In other words, it is a second guild.”

“Ah, this is how the guilds with more than 250 members operate?”

“Yes...”

Lauel’s eyes became weary. Grid didn’t even know this basic system.

“Yes, well. Create a new guild.”

“I’m still lacking.” Lauel pointed to Jishuka. “Jishuka was the master of the Tzedakah Guild, which is like the mother of Overgeared. She can lead a second guild well.”

“Yes, yes.”

Grid had absolute trust in Lauel. He believed he would succeed if he followed Lauel’s advice. However, Jishuka refused to become the master of the second guild. She already had enough responsibility as ruler of Bairan.

Lauel reassured her. “Over the past six months, the Overgeared members have been learning how to manage a territory. There are many people who can handle Bairan on your behalf, so don’t worry.”

“Then it’s okay.”

The Overgeared members gathered together and Jishuka formed a new guild.

“What will the guild name be?”

It was up to the guild master to pick a name. Jishuka and the Overgeared members focused on Grid. Grid thought about it.

“Overgeared Two.”

“Ah, really!”

Lauel cried out angrily, but the Overgeared members didn’t show any signs of rejection. They had already adapted to Grid’s naming sense. On the other hand, Lauel was desperate.

“The second and third guilds are usually named according to their role! The second guild will be filled with secondary classes, so you should name it according to its characteristics!”

“Workforce?”

“Sigh.”

In the end, it was determined that the second guild would be called Overgeared Two.

\*\*\*

The day of the guild merger.

The 225 members of the Silver Knights Guild, including Peak Sword, arrived in Reidan. Thanks to the power of the 15th ranked Peak Sword, the monsters in the desert couldn't stop them.

“Amazing.”

The Silver Knights Guild were overwhelmed by Reidan. Reidan's development was increasing by leaps and bounds. It was a big city with all types of buildings, and the soldiers were well armed. In particular, the alchemy facilities and agricultural fields couldn't be compared to other cities.

This was the power of the 20 million gold that Grid invested.

“Welcome to Reidan.”

A black haired man appeared among the soldiers. It was Grid. There were almost 30 members of Overgeared following him, all of whom were rankers or famous. Peak Sword and the Silver Knights Guild trembled at the thought that they would soon be one group.

“Master, I look forward to working with you.”

Peak Sword knew how to distinguish between public and private.

He might be older than Grid in reality, but he knew his status was far below Grid's in Satisfy. This attitude would help establish the discipline in the newly expanded Overgeared Guild.

“I am as well.”

It was the moment when the man who was ignored by the neighborhood children was reborn as the leader of a huge guild. If a documentary was made of Grid, this would be a featured scene.

Was this the life that Grid would walk from now on? No, it still wasn't smooth. Right now, the minerals detector Minor was hurriedly heading towards him.



# Chapter 286

---

The announcement of the merger between the Silver Knights Guild and Overgeared was an issue that would cover a whole page of newspapers in various countries. But the merger ceremony was small. Not one reporter was invited. There was no reason to help other forces by publicizing the growth of Overgeared.

It wasn't yet time.

“Puhahahat!”

“Kukuku!”

A banquet was held after the merger. It was intended to promote unity with the existing members of Overgeared and the new members from the Silver Knights Guild. The atmosphere was good.

“Vantner! It's an honor to be your colleague! I have admired you for a long time! You are the reason why I became a strength type guardian knight!”

“Oh, you're completely ruined. You're still level 180, so I recommend you delete your character and raise a new one. Or else you will have to live with this bad build for the rest of your life.”

“ ... ”

“Faker, I heard about how you smashed one of the seven guilds, the Ice Flower Guild, alone, and I trembled. How should I develop my stats and skills to be a great assassin like you?”

“ ... ”

“Mister? Mister Faker? Why aren't you saying anything? Mister?”

“ ... ”

“Regas! I heard that you really like Taekwondo and South Korea? The South Koreans thank you! Then have you tried kimchi? Huh? Do you know kimchi?”

“ ... ”

Both guilds were a bit unconventional. It seemed like more time was needed to become closer. Grid was busy observing the faces of the guild members.

‘Do you know kimchi...? That person is similar to Peak Sword. The Korean Patriotic Association? Huh, that person looks fairly young, but he's quite reticent? I should watch closely because I'm a blacksmith.’

The 225 new colleagues were future friends and family members. Grid made an effort to remember their IDs, faces and features. Of course, it wasn't that easy. How easy was it to remember 225

names and faces?

‘Ouch, my head hurts.’

In the end, Grid’s brain was overloaded less than an hour later. In the past, his brain would’ve been paralyzed in five minutes, so this was a great improvement. Jishuka, Lael and Peak Sword were engaged in a conversation next to Grid.

“The average level of the Silver Knights Guild is 220? At this level, they can’t exert any strength against the desert monsters, so it is urgent to raise their level. Let’s have the Overgeared members take turns to help them.”

“No. Improving the working environment of the yellow mithril mine is the top priority. The low level members should be sent to Cork Island and Bairan to make them grow, while the higher levelled guild members should devote their efforts to fighting monsters near the mine.”

“Then wouldn’t the low level guild members fall too far behind?”

“No. For the lower levels, the environment of Bairan and Cork Island is much better than Reidan for hunting. In the first place, I have negative feelings towards power levelling. What will happen when they borrow the power of others to level up? It’s obvious that they will be unable to exert the appropriate skills for their level.”

“That’s right. I was too short-sighted.”

“The key is who we should appoint to Bairan and Cork Island? A good lord will develop both the territory and the low level guild members well. It might be better for Peak Sword to be kept as the lord of Cork Island. How about it? Peak Sword.”

“That isn’t possible. Grid told me to go and mine.”

“Yes?”

Peak Sword was a swordsman. He was ranked 15th on the unified rankings, and it was evaluated that he should be on the same level as Pon and Regas. He was someone who could compete with the top rankers. That type of person was being used as a miner?

‘What is Grid thinking? Is there a story I don’t know?’

As Lauel was feeling confused, a boy rushed into the banquet hall. It was the minerals detector, Minor. The boy ran over to where Grid was sitting.

“Pant pant... Hey, Duke. Shouldn’t you move quickly to obtain the pavranium?”

“Why are you in such a hurry? Did something happen?”

“The pavranium sealed in the vampire cities are beginning to be

eroded by a strange energy.”

Minor was arrogant and had no loyalty to Grid. But he was surprisingly faithful to his duties. Today he had gone to look at the state of the pavranium.

“Strange energy?”

What was he talking about? A quest window appeared in front of the frowning Grid.

[A new quest has been created!]

[Vampire City!]

Difficulty: ?

An incident has happened in the vampire cities that is the center of chaos.

The enormous power has spread its presence throughout the 15 vampire cities, blessing the vampires while harming the pavranium.

If you can't secure the pavranium quickly, this presence will erode and alter the pavranium, making it lose its extraordinary function and turning it into an ordinary mineral.

Head to the vampire cities right now to secure the pavranium.

- \* Every vampire city has one piece of pavranium sealed inside it.

- \* Obtain as much pavranium as possible within 90 days.

- \* The pavranium that can't be secured within 90 days will be permanently destroyed.

- \* It is highly likely for there to be hidden quests linked along the way.

‘The degree of difficulty is a question mark ‘?’’ A question mark! In Satisfy, this often referred to matters that were ‘impossible to measure.’ This meant that the difficulty of this quest was likely to be the highest difficulty that exceeded the SS-grade.

‘This is bad.’

A chill went down Grid's spine. He knew about the vampire cities thanks to Lael. In order to clear one city, wasn't at least 10 third advancement classes required?

‘The estimated time to clear one city is 10 days.’

It was huge enough that it couldn't be compared with normal dungeons, and the level of the monsters was also high. In any case, this was the conclusion.

‘Isn’t this a quest that is impossible to clear by myself?’

No, what was this dirty thing! Pavranium could be considered the inherent weapon of Pagma’s Descendant and was limited to exactly 28 pieces. He couldn’t help cursing at the possibility of losing 15 of them.

“Ahh... Dammit, really. Things were going too well.”

He once again realized there was nothing free in this world. Jishuka and Lael became worried after seeing hearing sigh.

“What is it Grid? What type of quest did you get?”

“Can you share the quest?”

After a moment. Jishuka and Lael frowned after confirming the contents of the quest.

“Isn’t this a quest that can’t be cleared?”

Pon and Regas had failed to clear even one vampire city. This was despite the fact that they invested one whole month. Grid had to clear 15 cities in 90 days alone? It was impossible.

“But it’s a quest that must be cleared. Losing the pavranium is like weakening Grid. It can’t happen.”

“How about the guild members help you out?”

“That would be good. However, our guild now has to manage three territories. The number of people who can support Grid is around 10.”

Euphemina wasn't at the merger ceremony because she was on a separate mission. Ruby and Sexy Schoolgirl weren't even level 120 yet, so they were out of the question.

“10 of them... Even if it isn't 15, we can at least obtain 9 pieces of pavranium.”

“Yes, it is possible.”

Grid's face wasn't good as he looked at the two people discussing the matter.

“Stop it. I don't want to bother the guild members because of my personal quest.”

It was the right mindset. A guild master using members for individual quests was harmful behavior that should be avoided. Lauel smiled at him and explained, “A lot of experience can be gained from the vampire cities, as well as a low probability of obtaining elixirs. The guild members can develop by helping you with your quest.”



“But...”

Suddenly, a group of Overgeared members gathered near the hesitant Grid.

“I haven’t been hunting in a long time.”

“Let’s gain some levels.”

The Overgeared members were hoping to become the strongest rankers. They didn’t want to miss an opportunity to raise their level at the best hunting grounds. In particular, Vantner was extremely active.

“I need some stamina elixirs. Please take me with you.”

“...”

Whatever their reasons, they were still trying to help him. It was different compared to the days when Grid couldn’t depend on anyone, so he couldn’t help forming some happy tears. A wide smile spread on Grid’s face.

“Thank you. The next time you come to Korea, I will buy you kanjajang.”

The golem invasion of Reinhardt. Grid had rejected going to the king’s banquet because he wanted to eat kanjajang. Through this

remark, he convinced the Overgeared members.

‘Kanjajang... It must be an incredibly precious food.’

‘Is it the food for the Korean royalty?’

How expensive was it? As the Overgeared members were engrossed in this vain delusion, Peak Sword watched quietly and mourned.

“I like jjampong.” (Jjampong=like a spicy seafood noodle soup. It is common in Korea to ask if you like jajangmyeon or jjampong more)

Now that they were colleagues, Peak Sword was thinking about helping Grid.

\*\*\*

The expedition was organized.

Grid, Jishuka, Pon, Regas, Peak Sword and Faker were the damage dealers, while Vantner was the tanker. Huroi came to buff while Zednos was the support in the rear. They had 90 days to clear 15 dungeons, so the combination was important.

It was a combination aimed at quickly reaching the boss by piercing through the mobs. Lael couldn’t leave as temporary lord,

so he wasn't part of this expedition. Before the expedition departed, Lael warned them again.

“As you all know, the balance of the cooperation is important. There is a probability of surprise attacks, so always keep an eye on your surroundings.

“I understand, I understand. Are you our mother? How many times do you have to repeat the same thing?”

Vantner whined, but Lael continued speaking without paying attention to him.

“Considering that the entrance is blocked and communication cut off once you enter the city, there is a 99% chance that summoning your knights won't work. Please don't face a desperate situation.”

He wouldn't be so uneasy if Piaro and Asmophel were included in this expedition. But unlike users, NPCs had only one life. They couldn't be risked. Grid laughed at the worried Lael.

“I'm going.”

Grid pledged to complete Lifael's Spear through this expedition.

‘If I can reclaim all 15 pieces of pavranium, I can make a Lifael's Spear that is purely composed of pavranium.’

It was a weapon that could easily overcome Failure. His heart was already thumping as he imagined the weapon flying around alone and helping him out.

“Let’s depart.”

The strongest party in Satisfy’s history, led by Grid, embarked on their journey. There was a person following them.

# Chapter 287

---

There was a mysterious person following Grid's party. He had long arms, thick lips, and impressive skin that was as black as charcoal. His name was Kasim. The last descendant of the Nero people destroyed by the Saharan Empire, and the ultimate assassin with the title of 'King of Shadows.'

"Hrmm."

Kasim had observed Grid from before he became a duke. He always maintained a distance of 5m from Grid. Recently, he had to increase the distance to 7m thanks to the skills of the young assassin called Faker, but it wasn't a huge hindrance. There was still a large difference between Kasim and Faker's skills.

"Vampire city..."

Kasim found out the destination of Grid's party.

Vampires. A branch of the demonkin, they lived in the human world rather than in hell. Their strength was overwhelming. It was natural since they were designed to hunt humans. Entering their lair was an act of suicide.

'In particular, the problem is the True Blood clan. Duke Grid can deal with a viscount but...'

He wasn't a match for earls yet. Kasim was sure of this because

he had a firm grasp of Grid and the Overgeared members' power.

‘If they meet an earl, they will all be wiped out.’

Should he stop it? No, that wasn't necessary. Based on Kasim's observations, Grid and his companions were all immortal cursed existences(users). The cost of death for them wasn't big.

‘Sometimes defeat is a good medicine.’

Wasn't that right? Doran. They had fought thousands of times and a defeat in one spar didn't always mean victory in the next.

“...I miss you.”

Doran. A friend who grew up together under the same mentor. Why did Grid have the ring Doran inherited from their mentor? Kasim questioned. He was following Grid to figure out why. It didn't take long to figure out why. All his questions were answered after finding out that Grid was Irene's husband.

Nevertheless, the reason he stayed with Grid was because he saw the possibility of Grid growing to rival the Saharan Empire. The Saharan Empire! They persecuted the innocent minorities and wiped them out if they refused to submit.

Kasim had a huge grudge against the empire. He wanted to watch Grid one day destroy the empire.

Suruk.

Kasim disappeared. He would stay by Irene's side until Grid came back. Nothing should grab Grid's ankle while he was growing. Kasim planned to thoroughly protect Irene, who Grid loved.

Piaro was working in the fields, Asmophel training soldiers, and Kasim was hiding in the city. Now Reidan was much safer than when Kraugel had been here. It was an impregnable fortress unless a dragon or great demon attacked.

Administrator Rabbit could develop the city with confidence.

‘In a few months, we can finally escape from a the deficit. I have to slowly raise the labor costs to increase the efficiency of the workers. Is it enough if I raise it by 0.1%?’

Grid was unaware of this, but there were many positive people around him. All of this was created by Grid's changes and growth, so he should be proud.

\*\*\*

[The giant worm has been destroyed.]

[2,330,900 experience has been acquired.]

[The desert toad has been destroyed.]

[2,607,400 experience has been acquired.]

‘It is great.’

They headed to the vampire cities. Grid’s group slayed desert creatures as they moved forward. Peak Sword marvelled from among them.

‘These monsters give too much experience. I can’t adapt.’

The desert monsters gave at least 20% more experience than the monsters on the top floor of Cork Dungeon. However, it didn’t take long to hunt them. This was absurd. It was the reason why the Overgeared members monopolized the top rankings after Grid was appointed as lord of Reidan.

‘The vampires will give a lot more experience than the desert monsters. Maybe I might achieve level 307 in this expedition.’

Peak Sword didn’t think that entering the top 10 was a dream. On the other hand, Grid was full of complaints.

‘The experience is too low.’

Most users raised their levels by hunting or quests, but Grid was a special case who raised it through raids. So it was natural for him



to complain.

Considering that the knights and elders of the Rebecca Church gave tens of millions of experience, and Pascal gave 700 million experience, the two million of the desert monsters was terrible.

‘When can I reach level 300?’

Pagma’s Descendant didn’t have the concept of second or third class advancements. But at level 300, his stats went through the third awakening like any other user. Since Grid had unusually high stats, he would be dramatically strengthened the moment he reached level 300.

He dreamed of that day, but Grid was currently only level 296. His experience gauge wasn’t even half full yet. He was sighing when he suddenly recalled the Reputation Store. He broke through 30,000 reputation after obtaining the ‘Sealed Ability’ hidden piece and was able to use the Reputation Store.

He had looked at it the other day.

‘There is a potion that gives an experience buff.’ What if he took that potion after entering a vampire city? ‘I can level up!’

Grid opened the Reputation Store.

“Reputation Store!”

Ttiring~

[This is a special service for the best in Satisfy!]

Immediately after this phrase, a golden carriage only visible to Grids eyes fell from the sky. It was very similar to the golden carriage that occasionally came to front line troops that had no PX (Post exchange).

Grid was convinced that the inventor of this system was someone who served in the military.

[Introducing the luxurious goods to our guest!]

[Sweet Candy]

A little candy bar!

A candy with natural sweetness is the best!

There are no chemicals added!

Effects: When the sweet candy is in your mouth, all stats will rise by 30% for 5 minutes.

\* This item can only be purchased five times per account.

Price: 20,000 reputation.

It started with the limited-edition products that offered the best performance to...

[Good-looking Sunglasses]

The large frame is the highlight of the square sunglasses!

It is big enough to cover half the face, so it will help someone ugly look handsome!

Effect: Look handsome.

\* The charm stat isn't created or increased. It is a simple accessory with no special function other than a visual effect.

Price: 5,000 reputation.

...Items that had no practical use.

The golden carriage. No, the Reputation Store had around 30 products displayed. There were event-limited products that were occasionally released. In any case, Grid only needed one item right now.

‘Where is the experience potion? Ah, found it!’

Grid’s gaze fixed on a specific produce.

[Draw! Draw! Draw everything!]

A random drawing machine.

At the price of 999 reputation, you can get a variety of items randomly.

\* Limited edition items aren’t included.

\* There is a certain chance of gaining an experience buff potion.

Price: 999 reputation.

‘This is great!’

Satisfy didn’t have a maximum level, so experience buffs could exponentially increase the gap between users. The experience buff potions common in ordinary games couldn’t be found in Satisfy.

But the Reputation Store was a special place. Only a few users could gather such great achievements, so it needed to be attractive to them. That attraction was the experience buff potion.

Grid went over there in a flash.

‘The cost is cheap. Why is it 999 reputation instead of 1,000?’

There were many 20,000 products in the world valued at 29,990 won. This was a marketing technique to deceive people.

‘It is an opportunity to get a buff potion for a low price!’

999 reputation. Considering that he got 150 reputation when making a unique item and 500 reputation from a legendary item, it wasn’t a cheap price. However, Grid judged that it was worthwhile to try and used 999 reputation on the drawing machine.

[Draw! Draw! You have drawn a product.]

Chwaruruk!

The goods in the machine started spinning. Then after a while.

Rattle!

An item popped out.

[Congratulations! Pretty Hairpin has been acquired!]

[Pretty Hairpin]

A colourful and pretty hairpin.

If you gift it to a woman, she will be delighted.

Weight: 0.1

“...?”

It was the result of losing his mind at the thought of a experience buff potion. Grid temporarily forgot about the odds of a game like this.

“Dammit!”

The blue hairpin was really pretty. It would surely have a great effect with Irene’s silver hair. However, it wasn’t worth wasting 999 reputation on. Grid cursed and tried to throw the hairpin away, but eventually put it in his inventory. It would be a gift for Irene.

He pictured Irene and his anger calmed.

“Yes, it is hard for things to happen the first time.”

The second time. He would try a second draw. Grid bought another spin.

[Congratulations! You have acquired the world's most delicious skewer.]

[World's Most Delicious Skewer]

It is a skewer of a hell dog's hind legs aged for 100 days, then roasted with a secret sauce.

It is the supreme taste that gourmet raiders enjoy.

"It's just dog meat!"

[This! You have failed! Unfortunately, please look for the next opportunity.]

"There is even a failure?"

Prior to the release of virtual reality games. Grid hadn't experienced the mobile games that most people in the world played. He only played MMORPGs that he could enjoy on his PC. He didn't know the fear of drawing games, and was confused.

"Dammit! Bullshit!"

Grid's anger aimed at innocent creatures. On the way to the vampire city, Grid killed more monsters than anyone else. Even Pon and Regas were surprised at his speedy hunting.

“Grid is really motivated.”

“He is in a high position, so he feels a strong sense of responsibility.”

“Grid has matured even more after the guild merger. Truly wonderful.”

Bias was scary. Filled with misunderstandings, Grid’s party finally arrived at a vampire city.



# Chapter 288

---

The 13th vampire city.

Pon and Regas had already explored this place, so they opened their mouths prior to entering.

“Once we enter here, we have to go down a 12m high cliff. There is no danger when climbing down the cliff, but there is a risk of falling down because it’s dark and steep. The people with less than 400 agility should move carefully.”

“There aren’t any lights and it is dark, so you won’t be able to see anything for around two minutes. Your vision won’t be perfect after two minutes pass. The darkness places a limit on our mobility, so it will be difficult for us to exert 100% of our power. Ah, Jishuka and Faker have their passive skills Hawk Eyes and Assassin’s Eyes.”

Vantner expressed his doubts.

“Why can’t we light torches if it is dark? Why are we trying to stay in the dark? Are we cavemen?”

“The vampires pay attention to fire. You will be isolated as soon as you turn on the torch.”

“Ah, that’s right. I heard that before.”

“Stupid.”

Pon continued the explanation.

“There is a city half the size of Bairan below the cliff. The average level of the vampire familiars wandering the streets are well below the giant worms. However, combat capabilities depend on the existence, so be vigilant.”

“Familiar? Where are the vampires?”

“The vampires are asleep in buildings scattered throughout the city. Once we enter a building, they will wake up. But there are rare cases of some of them ambushing us.”

“Hrmm... The boss must be sleeping in one of the buildings.”

“It’s a reasonable guess. We can only go through the buildings in order to find the boss.”

“In the process, you should be careful of the True Blood vampires. Sometimes they pop up and they are much stronger than ordinary vampires.”

“How so?”

“It was hard to kill them even if Regas and I joined forces.”

“A field boss?”

“No, not that strong. If we don’t have divine power, we can’t do much damage. However, if all of us join forces, we should be able to easily defeat them.”

Jishuka, Grid, Pon, Regas, Faker and Peak Sword, the most powerful damage dealers were gathered together. It was Pon’s judgment that they could exert attack power that could easily take care of the True Blood vampires.

“Okay. Immediately after entry, please pay attention to the darkness and cliff, and refrain from manifesting as much light as possible. The True Blood vampires... Quickly handle them. This should be enough?”

“Yes.”

Grid did a final check on the status of the party.

Party Name: Pavranium Expedition

Party Leader: Grid (Pagma’s Descendant. Level 296)

Party Members List:

Pon (Spear Knight. Level 307)

Regas (Asura. Level 307)

Peak Sword (Hidden Sword) Level 306)

Faker (Master of Swiftess. Level 305)

Jishuka (Red Flame Archer) Level 305)

Vantner (Impregnable Fortress. Level 302)

Zednos (Storm Magician. Level 301)

Huroi (Orator. Level 292)

Item Distribution Method: Party Leader Acquisition

Thanks to enough rest, everyone's health, mana, and stamina were full. The item distribution method was also correct.

“Let's go.”

Grid didn't delay any longer. He entered the ant hell.

[You have entered the Vampire's Underground City (13).]

[The entrance of the dungeon is blocked. Contact with the

outside world will be blocked.]

[You can't escape the dungeon until you have died or kill the dungeon boss.]

‘It is dark.’

It was his first feeling after entering. There was a deep darkness that dominated the whole area. He would be confused if he didn't listen to Pon and Regas beforehand. It was as the party was trying to adapt to the darkness.

Puduk. Kwaduduk.

“What...?”

They heard the sound of wings flapping, then hundreds of small red lights appeared in the darkness. It was countless bats flocking.

“Crazy! What is this? I didn't think there would be an attack until we went down the cliff!”

The wrong information could be a big threat on the battlefield. Everyone could understand why Vantner cursed as he quickly set up his shield.

Teteng! Teteteteng!

## [Grid's Shield: Prototype A]

It was a shield based on the Divine Shield, and combined high defense and magical resistance.

He used black iron, which was relatively easy to obtain among the higher ranked minerals. The disadvantage was that it was heavy, but that wasn't difficult for Vantner, who had abnormally high strength.

The hundreds of bats rammed into the giant black shield and scattered blood.

Kwajik!

There was a creepy sound as small skulls were crushed successively.

“Ugh!”

A groan emerged from Vantner's mouth. He could block the bats flying in front, but he was bitten by the bats that fled to the left and right.

“Damn! Forcing me to use a skill so early! Guard of Steel!”

[For three minutes, physical defense will increase by 30% and there will be a 50% increase in resistance to stabbing and cutting.]

Tatak! Tak!

Vantner's defense became firmer. The small but sharp teeth of the bats no longer reached Vantner's flesh. Jishuka and Faker were the first ones in the party to adapt to the darkness and they started supporting Vantner.

“Dancing Arrows.”

Papat! Pa pa pa pat!

It was a skill associated with Multi-shot. Dozens of arrows were fired at the same time and rotated as they pierced the bats, changing their orbit. The bats were hit by the arrows flying in all directions and fell down the cliff.

Faker's actions were also great. He threw 20 daggers equipped with an 'Explosion Rune,' turning the bats to ashes. By the time the rest of the party adapted to the darkness, most of the bats were already destroyed. Vantner sat down and gasped for breath.

“Pant... Pant, dammit. I almost died as soon as I came in.”

“I'm sorry. I didn't think the pattern would've changed.”

The monsters in most dungeons had a constant position and behavior pattern. They thought it would be the same here.

Vantner could no longer grumble after seeing Pon's sincere apology. Afterwards, Grid's group waited until Vantner had recovered his health. Vantner was the party's only tanker, so his status was important.

“Easy, easy.”

“Yes.”

Once Vantner recovered, the group started descending the cliff. While everyone was struggling, Grid and Zednos could relax. They were able to use Fly magic. The two people were able to descend comfortably.

Taack!

The two people landed first below the cliff and looked around. It was to prepare for any enemies while the group was descending the cliff. Not surprisingly, there were five large wolves rushing in the distance.

“They are scarily large.”

Their size was much larger than common wolves. It was at the level of a bear. But Grid and Zednos didn't feel any fear.

[The +9 Failure has been equipped.]



[The attack power of the +9 Failure will increase by 20% in dark places.]

[The +8 Grid's Boots has been equipped.]

[The defense of the +8 Grid's Boots will increase by 20% in dark places.]

Grid believed in his items.

‘Grid is with me!’

Zednos believed in Grid. The wolves, who wanted to prey on the two people, quickly realized their folly.

Yip! Yelp!

[You have defeated a vampire wolf.]

[490,800 experience has been distributed.]

[You have defeated a vampire wolf.]

[487,210 experience has been distributed.]

[Vampire wolf leather has been acquired.]

## [Vampire Wolf Leather]

Very sturdy leather. If it can be tanned well, it will be a suitable material for making armor.

Weight: 15

The experience was quite good considering it was being shared by nine people. Indeed, the vampire cities were good places to level up.

‘There are three tailors in the Silver Knights Guild right?’

Grid could also make leather armor. But several experiments showed that the performance was considerably worse than when he used minerals. From Grid’s perspective, it was more profitable to make things other than leather armor.

“Why don’t we distribute the various materials among the guild members and give them requests? We will sell the items made from these materials and raise the guild’s profits. There will be a separate reward for the makers.”

Grid gave his opinion to the people who descended the cliff. It was rare for Grid to have such a plan. No, it was the first time, so his impressed companions nodded their heads. Pon and Regas were silent for a moment at the sight of Grid’s further growth, but then they expressed their concerns.

“It’s strange. The atmosphere is different from when we came here before.”

“The bats and vampire wolves weren’t here before. The environmental radius of the familiars is much wider than before. The experience given has also increased by 10%.”

Regas was talking when Pon suddenly asked Grid about his quest contents.

“You said that strange energy is coming from the vampire cities?”

“Yes.”

“This is the problem. The strange energy seems to have increased the difficulty of the vampire cities.”

Gulp!

Peak Sword was nervous. He worried about this expedition failing. However, the other Overgeared members were grateful. If the difficulty had gone up...

“There is a higher probability of huge benefits!”

“That’s right! Level up speed will be fast!”

“ ... ”

It was difficult for the tense Peak Sword to understand the mindset of the Overgeared members. He was stunned and swept away in their flow. They called the familiars roaming the streets, accumulating experience and items. Then they were soon standing in front of an old-fashioned gothic high-rise building.

“There are around 10 of these buildings?”

They had to search the buildings quickly and thoroughly in order to kill the boss and secure the pavranium. The moment Grid tried to open the huge door of the building.

[The master of the 13th city, Vampire Earl Elfin Stone has appeared.]

[A strong evil influence is making your magic power turbid. All types of spells and skills aren't available.]

[A vampire's gaze will subdue lower species. Your body is subjected to a strong oppression.]

The notification windows simultaneously appeared in front of Grid's party.

Sururuk.

Black smoke appeared over Grid's head. The blond handsome man who emerged from the smoke was more beautiful than jewelry.

“Humans dare enter my city! Polluting the air!”

Elfin Stone had a story. It was around a month ago. He woke up after a few months of sleeping, only to find his city a wreck. He heard from his subordinates that it was due to two crazy humans. Humans dared invade a vampire's city with just two of them?

It was ridiculous and reprehensible. The incensed Elfin Stone couldn't sleep properly for the past two months. He was so angry that he couldn't sleep well. Today, he got only 18 hours of sleep and went out for a stroll. However, he discovered some humans. It was a great opportunity to get rid of his anger.

“Die so that I can sleep!”

Elfin Stone aimed his strongest skill at the man who seemed to be the strongest among the humans.

[Extreme Blood Transfusion]

It was a terrifying attack and recovery skill that restored his health by taking away large quantities of the target's health. The disadvantage was that he could only use it once a day, but it was suitable for scaring these trivial beings.

Puhahahak!

The human male was covered by a curtain of blood. He would certainly die! Elfin Stone was certain of it.

“Kukukuk, I will come back in awhile. I will kill another person, and then another one the time after that! This will be repeated again and again. I will show you the extreme taste of fear!”

Suruk!

Elfin Stone turned into smoke and disappeared. At the same time, the blood curtain was lifted. Grid emerged alive from it.

“What the hell is this?”

The mighty passive with a 24 hour cooldown time had been lost. But he lived.

Grid and Elfin Stone, both of them were floored.

# Chapter 289

---

“Humans dare enter my city! Polluting the air!”

The Overgeared members were appalled the moment the blond man appeared. Ominous notification windows consecutively appeared in front of them.

[For the next five minutes, you can't use 'Wind Curtain,' 'Black Mace,' and 'Storm of Eternity.']

[For the next five minutes, you can't use 'Shield Throw,' 'Damage Break,' and 'Guardian's Power.']

[For the next five minutes, you can't use 'Multi-shot,' and 'Red Flame Arrows.']

...

...

...

With the exception of Grid, all of them had at least two or three skills sealed off. Those who unfortunately had their main skills sealed were particularly disappointed. But that wasn't the end.

[All speed will decrease by 30% for the next five minutes.]

It was a very strong oppression. If just attack speed or movement speed was reduced, the user wouldn't be able to exercise their true ability. This level of oppression was tremendous.

“Grid! Avoid it!”

Faker hurriedly exclaimed. But it was too late. The vampire earl, Elfin Stone. The furious master of the city was already attacking Grid.

Puhahahak!

A bloody curtain swallowed up Grid. Elfin Stone was convinced that Grid had died.

“Kukukuk, I will come back in awhile. I will kill another person, and then another one the time after that! This will be repeated again and again. I will show you the extreme taste of fear!”

Suruk!

Elfin Stone assimilated with darkness and disappeared like a mirage. The Overgeared members didn't even think about chasing him. They were grateful that he left. Elfin Stone's presence was that overwhelming.

“ ... ”



After a few moments of silence. The curtain of blood lifted and Grid frowned.

“What the hell is this?”

Grid only had one point of health left. This wasn't the end. His whole body was bloody and most of his defense equipment, excluding the Holy Light Armor, was in rags.

“Grid! Are you okay?”

The members came running. Anxiety was on their faces. In particular, Jishuka was deathly pale. This was a reminder that her heart was thinking of Grid.

“As you can see, I'm not okay.”

Gulp gulp.

‘Shit.’

Tears formed as the potion poured down his throat. Super Health Recovery Potion. It was a potion made by the alchemists of Reidan. The price of this top grade potion which restored 15,000 health was worth 10 gold. If he drank three bottles of this, he could buy two chickens in reality.

Peak Sword sighed with relief. “Phew, it’s fortunate. Surviving with only one point of health left, isn’t this a complete miracle? It is unbelievable despite seeing it with my own eyes. It’s surprising.”

Peak Sword didn’t know about Grid’s invincible passive. Grid explained to him. He thought Peak Sword needed to know if they were to be trusted colleagues.

“I have an invincible passive. If I die, my health will be fixed at one point and I will be immune to all damage for five seconds. The cooldown time is 24 hours.”

“Wow...”

Despite the long cooldown, it prevented Grid from dying? It was like having two lives! A complete scam. A legendary class was truly different.

Grid laughed at the envious Peak Sword.

“So always keep this in mind. In the worst situation, I will stand in front.”

Grid emphasized this. If a stranger heard this, they would think he purposely had Elfin Stone aim at him.

“Hey Regas. Elfin Stone never appeared earlier when you were explaining?”

“Yes, this is the first time I’ve seen him.”

“That’s right. We explored for a month and never encountered him.”

“Then you were lucky.”

“...”

The mood became serious. This was because the strength of the city’s boss transcended the scope of the Overgeared members.

“Grid is the one with the highest health, but even his invincible passive was invoked. This means that we shouldn’t give him a chance to use the skill. However, the casting time is short and it’s difficult to prepare since we can’t detect when he will appear.”

“This means we will die one by one whenever he appears.”

“Should we do a full-scale attack rather than being wiped out one by one?”

“The result is that we will likely be wiped out. We can’t rule out the possibility that our main skills will be sealed.”

Five minutes was a long time in a struggle with a strong enemy. Having their skills sealed for five minutes was huge and beyond

imagination.

“What should we...?”

“There is no answer.”

It was a completely depressed mood. Grid heard this and quietly muttered, “It wouldn’t be so desperate if I had more time.”

Yes, time to raise his level.

‘If I reach level 300...’

Elfin Stone was obviously strong. It was around the same as Hell Gao when he had all his fire stones. In particular, the ability to erase skills was the best. Grid’s insight showed him the worst situation. But what if he achieved level 300 and his stats were awakened to the third level?

‘It will be possible to read when he appears and counterattack.’

If he could fight back with Pagma’s Swordsmanship, Revolve, he could cause fatal damage to him. He would be able to hold on for five minutes while his colleagues’ combat power was reduced.

‘Then the chances of this raid succeeding will dramatically increase.’

But Grid was only level 296. Since entering here, he had gained a lot of experience and could reach level 297. However, reaching level 300 wasn't possible in a day or two. It was only possible if he drank an experience potion and swept away all the vampires in the city.

“Dammit.”

Elfin Stone said he would come back later. It might be in five minutes, or maybe ten minutes. Grid had no time. The conclusion.

‘This expedition will fail.’

Grid's expression darkened. There were 15 vampire cities to clear, but he was already stuck at the first one. It was frustrating.

“Dammit! The quest difficulty is too high!”

Grid was furious at the thought of losing 15 pavranium. The Overgeared members also looked desperate. They all realized that the expedition was likely to fail, so they couldn't comfort Grid. But Jishuka was different.

Prior to Satisfy opening, she was one of the best players in the MMORPG ‘L.T.S.’ so she came up with an analysis that gave hope to Grid.

“The time it takes for Elfin Stone to reappear might be longer than we think. I don't think the cooldown will be short when

looking at the power of this skill.”

The monster’s rhythm usually followed the skill reuse time. Just like the Fusers of Skeleton Island. They appeared after exactly seven minutes, spat acid and ran away.

“If the period before he returns is long, there’s hope for us. Let’s raise Grid to level 300.”

“How?”

“Run away and give the experience to Grid. Given the amount of experience these monsters give, Grid can achieve level 300 in at least a week.”

“Once Grid reaches level 300, there is a higher chance to defeat Elfin Stone. But how should we deal with Elfin Stone who keeps appearing?”

“We can only hold out against his skill as long as possible. The first few times won’t be possible, so we will have to sacrifice ourselves. We might find a way to handle it eventually.”

There was no method other than the one Jishuka proposed. All the members agreed to the Grid-building project. Grid felt ashamed.

“I’m sorry for putting you at risk due to my personal quest.”

“If you are sorry, work hard. Please try and reach level 300.”

He would surely do so. Grid nodded and opened the Reputation Store.

‘I need to save even one of these people.’

He needed to reach level 300 as soon as possible. Thus, he needed the experience potion.

‘This time I will draw it!’

Grid stood in front of the ‘Draw! Draw! Draw Everything!’ machine. He had 28,013 reputation. One try consumed 999 reputation, so he had a total of 28 attempts.

‘I should at least get one out of 28 attempts. I will certainly do it. It is strange if I don’t get one.’

Rattle.

Grid pulled the machine. The result...

[This! You have failed! Unfortunately, please look for the next opportunity.]

[This! You have failed! Unfortunately, please look for the next opportunity.]

“Crazy!”

Two successive failures! Grid’s heart sank. If possible, he wanted to return to the time before he started drawing items. His reputation vanished for nothing. However, reality was cold and temptation was terrible. He couldn’t turn back time or stop the drawing.

Draw! In the past, it was the worst gambling system that plagued many gamers’ wallets and bloated the game producers. Now it was causing great pain to Grid.

“Shit! Yes! Let’s try it!”

In the end, Grid cursed and started the machine again.

[Congratulations! The best chocolate has been acquired.]

[This! You have failed! Unfortunately, please look for the next opportunity.]

[Congratulations! Block Toys to Help a Child’s Development has been acquired.]

[This! You have failed! Unfortunately, please look for the next



opportunity.]

[This! You have failed! Unfortunately, please look for the next opportunity.]

Ah! Why were the odds so low the more he drew? Grid's nervousness reached its peak as his reputation dropped below 10,000.

‘Putting aside the experience potion, why isn’t anything useful coming out?’

His head hurt and he was dizzy. He wanted to stop now, but his hand was turning the machine continuously. He wanted to get his money’s worth somehow. His remaining reputation dropped to 6,000.

[Congratulations! An Experience Increase Potion has been acquired.]

[Experience Increase Potion]

Increases experience gained by 20% for the next three days.

Weight: 0.1

“F-finally...!”

He was happy. He was happy, so why was his chest so sore? He felt like a loser because most of the reputation he earned over the past year was gone.

“Sigh... At least it appeared.”

Grid disciplined his mind and pulled Malacus' Cloak out of the inventory. It was the moment when the cloak, which easily attracted monsters because of the bloody smell, was revealed after a long time. Grid passed it to Vantner.

“Put it on.”

“Uh...”

What could be done to speed up Grid's experience gain? Vantner's vision darkened as he was discussing it with the group.

# Chapter 290

---

“M-Malacus’s Cloak.”

This was a little too much. Weren’t vampires sensitive to the smell of blood? The vampires would come flocking like dogs if Malacus’ Cloak was used. It was like digging his grave.

‘I have to wear this?’

Vantner hesitated. On the other hand, Grid and his colleagues showed a firm determination.

“Vantner, there is no time to spare.”

“Speed is important. We have to make them keep coming.”

“We will help you, so don’t worry and put on the cloak.”

“...Okay, I understand.”

Every member of Overgeared was prepared to die. Vantner was no different. He prepared his mind and took the lead after wearing Malacus’ Cloak.

“Let’s go.”

Grid didn't delay. He entered the large building in front of him.

\*\*\*

“It is really wide. It is bigger than it seems from the outside.”

“This is bad. It is better to fight a lot of enemies in a narrow space.”

“Yes. This place is completely open without any cover.”

The voices of the party members echoed in every corner. The first floor of the building was a huge hall. It could accommodate at least 2,000 people. The ceiling reached to the 7th floor and there were two staircases leading upstairs.

“I think it's better to get in a formation on the stairs, as it'll be easier for us to be surrounded by the enemies on the upper levels than to be surrounded on all sides.”

This was Jishuka's opinion. The other members agreed and quickly moved.

“It is dreary.”

“It is like a cemetery.”

In the center of the dark hallway, hundreds of coffins were randomly arranged. It was a creepy sight.

Kung! Kung kung!

It happened when Grid's party reached the stairs. The silent building suddenly became noisy. It was because the hundreds of coffins started shaking in unison. The vampires sleeping in the coffins were reacting to the bloody smell of Malacus' Cloak.

"They're coming!"

"Be prepared."

Grid's group quickly got into formation and pulled out their weapons.

There was a dark red greatbow that resembled a roaring dragon, a blue spear with a great appearance, gauntlets that seemed like they could easily crush the enemy, dazzling silver daggers and so on.

They were all Grid's works. The existence of Grid for the Overgeared members was incredibly large.

Kung! Kung!

Kwajak!

The coffins opened and the vampires appeared. They had pale skin, long fangs, and red eyes. Their red eyes turned towards Grid's group. To be precise, it was towards Vantner.

“This fragrance is good.”

“As soon as I open my eyes, I can celebrate with human blood.”

The vampires were the top predators. They didn't feel any nervousness about the people who invaded their territory. Rather, they laughed like they were happy.

‘Fast!’

The vampires living in the underground cities were different from those who popped up all over the continent. Their combat power was between level 280~350.

“Give me blood! I shall enjoy it!”

“Ohuhut, shall we aim for that man's clean neck?”

The 200 vampires quickly narrowed the distance to Grid's group. It was a tremendous speed. They aimed for Vantner who monopolized their aggro.

“I don't think I can hold out for long! Guard of Steel! Guardian of

Wisdom! Giant's Blessing!"

[For three minutes, physical defense will increase by 30% and there will be a 50% increase in resistance to stabbing and cutting.]

[For three minutes, magic resistance will increase by 30% and attributes resistance will increase by 50%.]

[A shield that will absorb 20,000 damage has been created.]

Vantner had invested all his stat points into strength until level 200. Nonetheless, he was able to play his role as ranker thanks to the excellent defense skills of a guardian knight.

"Sun Guard!"

Flash!

A bright light shone on the bald Vantner. It was the reflection of the light emitted from his shield.

"Ugh!"

The sudden emergence of light caused the vampires to lose momentum. Most of them lost their eyesight and stopped in place for a moment. But the 50 vampires in the rear were relatively fine. They hit Vantner first.

Jjejeong! Jjejejeok!

Kukwakwang!

[You have suffered 5,600 damage.]

[You have suffered 5,980 damage.]

[You have suffered 7,110 damage.]

“Ack! It hurts! Hurts!”

Vampires had excellent physical abilities, magic power, and intelligence. They used magic to provoke Vantner’s magic resistance skills, then linked physical attacks. In some cases, it was the opposite. Vantner was unable to demonstrate a complete defense and was quickly wounded.

The Overgeared members weren’t watching quietly. Zednos started first. As Vantner pulled the aggro at the bottom of the stairs, he completed the long chant for the Storm of Eternity.

Kwaang!

The storm rapidly rotated around a previously determined point, trapping the 50 vampires within and making unable to do anything. It was the ultimate storm from the Storm Magician Zednos that could confine many enemies for a minimum of 30



seconds to a maximum of 5 minutes. The disadvantage was that no attacks from outside could occur, but it was a strategically useful magic.

“Well done!”

Thanks to Zednos, Vantner could now breathe. He took a potion, while the remaining 150 vampires restored their eyesight and rushed over. Vantner’s suffering began from now.

“S-Save me! Aaack~!”

Papat! Papapat!

The vampires were skilled in hand to hand combat or swordsmanship, depending on their strength and agility. They aimed magic towards Vantner who was struggling to block the attacks with his shield.

“Cripple!”

“Dark Binding!”

“Neder’s Grab!”

Various curse magic lowered Vantner’s magic resistance and his body was restrained.

“This!”

His limbs were caught by hands of darkness. The vampires’ swords aimed at his weak points. One greedy vampire even used his fangs.

Puok!

“Kuaaaaak!”

Vantner screamed as his neck was bitten and he was stabbed through the armor. Vantner felt a sense of hopelessness. If his health fell to the bottom when there was no healer, it was likely he would have to use his one-time invincible skill, ‘Guardian’s Power.’ However, he needed to save this for Elfin Stone’s reappearance.

“Shit! Do something!”

Vantner shouted as vampires constantly approached him. His colleagues responded.

“You are doing well!”

“It will be over soon!”

Pon, Regas, Faker, and Peak Sword. Once all of the vampires were focused on Vantner, the four of them succeeded in efficiently

killing. The vampires were taken by surprise and received fatal damage.

“Kuhak!”

“You dare! These humans!”

The wounded vampires then shifted their gaze to the four people and said,

“The main character is here. Ah, should I say heroine?”

Unlike the lower part of the stairway that was like hell, the upper part was tranquil. Jishuka unabashedly exposed her sensual body and pulled her bowstring.

Pepepepeong!

Dozens of arrows soared into the air like missiles. It was once again a perfect surprise attack on the vampires defending against the onslaught of the four people.

“Kuaaaak!”

There was a flood of fire and blood. The silent and dark interior of the building quickly heated up. The vampires struggling in the sea of fire now had 60% health left. Finally, it was the turn of the protagonist.

“My Lord! Now!”

[Your morale has increased.]

[Your attack power and magic attack power will significantly rise for the next attack.]

[The next attack will be a critical hit!]

Huroi used the strongest buff on Grid. Grid withdrew from the party in order to monopolize the experience, took the experience buff potion and put on the Slaughterer's Eye Patch. He used Blacksmith's Rage and started his sword dance.

“Pagma's Swordsmanship.”

Who said that dark spaces limited abilities? No, it was quite the opposite.

Kuoooooh!

In the darkness, the blue Failure showed its true value. A powerful aura surrounded it and seeped into the area. This was the precursor to the strongest wide area skill.

“Transcended Link.”

It had risen one level after the Pascal raid, so the power of Transcended Link was incredible. Not only had the number of strikes and the damage increase, it also had a penetration effect.

Kwa kwang! Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

The blue-black energy blades swallowed everything in its path and attacked the vampires confronting the Overgeared members. Then it passed through the vampires that had just escaped from Zednos' storm.

[Critical!]

[The Holy Light Gloves's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[You have dealt 5,490,500 damage to the target.]

[You have dealt 5,670,000 damage to the target.]

[You have dealt...]

...

..

[This is a phenomenal record!]

[You have dealt over 100 million total damage in 5 seconds!]

[Reputation throughout the continent will rise by +5,000.]

He had to make 10 legendary items to get this much reputation!

‘I have recovered five draws of the machine!’

It was an unexpected massive revenue.

“Kiyaaaaack!”

“Keooooook!”

The building echoed with screams. Most of the 200 vampires were seriously injured and trembled. The important thing was to increase his experience! Grid jumped from the stairs into the center of the vampires and used Wave.

Kurururung!

The waves of energy stretched over all the vampires, dealing a huge blow and slowing them down.

“You!”

“I will take your blood!”

The vampires were provoked and only focused on Grid. At first glance, it seemed dangerous. But the Overgeared members couldn't help Grid. There was a concern that they would be judged to deal more damage, greatly reducing the amount of experience gained by Grid.

[Your attack has missed.]

“What?”

Grid showed a puzzled reaction. The vampires changed their bodies to black smoke, so all his skills and attacks missed. The momentum of the vampires rose.

“Kuhahahaha! I'm not someone who can be killed by a human!”

“Your attacks can no longer harm us!”

Shaaaah!

The black smoke moved like a hurricane around Grid. Once Grid was confused, they planned to use the blood transfusion skill. But it was impossible for their plan to be realized.

“Go around once.”

Grid issued a command to someone.

Noe? Randy? No. Grid had no intention of sharing his experience with the children. Grid issued the command to Lifael's Spear.

“Heok!”

The Rebecca artifact that was the antithesis of all beings with dark power! The power of the reproduction was weaker than the original, but it was enough to turn the vampires back to their bodies.

“U-Unbelievable!”

The vampires weren't able to move properly. They were in a severely wounded state and influence by the divine power. Grid looked at their forms that had lost their arrogance, as they crawled on the floor and tried to escape.

“Kuhahahahat! These lovely guys!”

The strongest boss, Elfin Stone. Grid was so happy about the experience in front of him that he forgot about Elfin Stone's existence.

Seokeok!



Puok!

The blue greatsword killed a vampire every time it moved. Of course, the vampires didn't stay still. They tried to attack. But Jishuka and Zednos interrupted using arrows and magic. Pon, Regas, Faker and Peak Sword blocked any methods of retreat.

The current Grid was on a bus from a huge conglomerate. No, he was on a comfortable plane. The destination was level 300.

# Chapter 291

---

[A junior vampire was vanquished.]

[4,901,000 experience has been acquired.]

[4,855,000 experience has been acquired.]

[An intermediate vampire was destroyed.]

[6,954,300 experience has been acquired.]

[6,899,000 experience has been acquired.]

The amount of experience from the vampires was more than expected. It was nearly three times as much as the desert monsters. This was a considerable number considering that the Overgeared members also got some experience for reducing the vampire's health.

This was also due of the experience buff potion.

‘Reputation is worthwhile!’

It was the moment when wasting 25,000 paid off. However, he had no intention of challenging it again.

‘I might draw a red pepper again.’

Grid vowed again. The battle wasn’t very good. It was due to the resistance of the surviving vampires.

“Blood Transfusion!”

“Dark Missile!”

The vampires determined they couldn’t beat Grid in a melee, so they opened the distance and used magic. Due to that, Grid’s body became injured. There was a chance to completely resist black magic with the Holy Light Armor or counter the vampires’ evasion with Lifael’s Creation.

If it hadn’t been for these two things, Grid might’ve become a cold carcass by now. The vampires were strong. It varied from individual to individual, but they were several times stronger than the Black Knights. In particular, the vampire’s bloodsucking skill. They kept recovering their health. The answer was to smash them in one blow.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship, Link!”

For fusion skills like Linked Kill and Transcended Link, the higher the level, the greater the features. For example, Transcended Link received a penetration effect when it reached level 3. On the other hand, basic skills like Kill, Link, and Wave only increased the damage whenever their skill levels went up.

For example, while Link had a skill level of 5, it was weak in comparison to the power of the fusion skills. If the vampires were in a perfect state, they would've survived Link; however, they were now severely injured and were thus swiftly torn apart by Grid's sword.

Flash!

Once 50 out of 200 vampires had died, a pillar of light fell onto Grid's body.

[Your level has risen.]

[10 stat points have been acquired.]

Grid had already been on the verge of leveling up when he entered the building, and now he reached level 297. There were only three levels remaining before he reached level 300.

"Distribute my stat points."

Grid distributed the 10 points he gained into agility as usual. His stats distribution method was based on the great swordsman Piaro.

Strength 1: Agility 1: Stamina 0.7.

Piario was aiming to be a sword saint, so there was no way his

stats would be a mess. Grid speculated that Piaro's stats ratio was likely to be the perfect golden ratio. And his guess was right. As Grid's agility neared his strength, the power of his swordsmanship gradually increased.

Seokeok! Puk!

“Kuaack!”

His attacks became faster and more powerful than before, as he stabbed and slashed at the vampires. The vampires were dying at a faster speed.

[The Finest Tailcoat have been acquired.]

[Junior Vampire's Ring has been acquired.]

[Finest Tailcoat]

Rating: Epic

Durability: 120/120 Defense: 301

Charm +50

An essential item for stylish vampires.

This tailcoat is wonderful enough to capture everyone's attention. It also has excellent defense and can be used for protection.

User Restriction: Level 300 or higher. A man.

Weight: 120

[Junior Vampire's Ring]

Rating: Epic

\* During normal attacks, 5% of the damage done to the target will be restored to you as health.

\* This effect is only invoked once every 15 seconds.

A unique magic power dwells in the vampire's ring.

It is a ring used by junior vampires so the rating is low, but it is very helpful for the wearer's survival.

User Restriction: Level 280 or higher.

Weight: 1

The item drop rate of vampires was very low. If he killed 30~40

vampires, only one of them would drop an item, so it was the worst drop rate. However, the value of the items dropped was very good.

‘Vampire accessories!’

Vampire items dramatically increased combat endurance and survival. They were very rare, meaning this was the first time Grid saw one since the launch of Satisfy.

‘Let’s try out the effect.’

[The Junior Vampire’s Ring has been worn.]

Puk! Puk puk!

“Kuaack!”

“I...! To a human...!”

After being pierced by Lifael’s Spear, the vampires were hit by Failure and the Doppelganger’s Greatsword. The wounds Grid received from them slowly recovered. This was the greatness of the Holy Light Armour combined with the vampire’s ring.

[Critical!]

[You have dealt 9,300 damage to the target.]

[5% of the damage has been absorbed due to the option effect of the Junior Vampire's

[The option effect of the Holy Light Armor has increased the power of recovery magic by 300%.]

[1,350 health has been restored.]

The effect was only triggered once every 15 seconds, but this was enough for Grid. Sometimes, the 5 Joint Attacks skill of the Holy Light Gloves was triggered, causing his health gauge to climb noticeably. Thanks to his items and skills, Grid's base damage was uniquely high.

“Kukukuk! Kuhahahahat!”

“Hiik!”

“V-Vampire slaughterer!”

Grid burst out laughing while wearing the Slaughterer's eye patch and mask, filling the vampires with terror. The situation had completely changed. The vampires on the first-floor were all killed by Grid, giving him experience and new items.

Before he knew it, Grid's experience gauge exceeded 20%. But he



couldn't be pleased. He was worried about Elfin Stone appearing, and the vampires on the upper levels also started to gather. The upper floor vampires had a much higher level than the first-floor vampires.

“Stop!”

The Overgeared members stood on the stairs and intercepted the vampires' path. Rather than acting straight away, they made a defensive formation. It was to give Grid time to recover his health, mana, and stamina. Grid felt thankful and rested straight away.

Meanwhile, Vantner once again tasted hell.

“Ugh! I need to endure this again!”

Peok! Peok peok!

Kwajak!

Vantner cursed Malacus' Cloak. No, he lamented that he chose a tanker. It didn't fit his aptitude. He mistakenly raised this character, but he wanted to delete it and make a new character. As he was complaining, the Overgeared members lowered the vampires' health. Then Grid finished them off at the proper timing.

It took half a day to finish attacking one whole building, and Grid's experience gauge was up to 60%. This was a ridiculous

growth rate considering it took the Overgeared members an average of two weeks to go from 297 to 298.

“Wow, it is faster than expected.”

“It is natural. There are seven users in the top 20, as well as Huroi.”

“That’s true. Anyway, if we clear four more buildings in the future, you will reach level 299.”

“The problem begins at level 299. The amount of experience needed to level up is four times as much as level 298.”

“Considering it takes half a day to clear one building... You can achieve level 300 in five days?”

“Assuming that Elfin Stone doesn’t appear.”

“...”

The key was who Elfin Stone would use his skill on after reappearing. Vantner and Huroi had a one-time invincible skill that could invalidate damage, but the others were different.

“If one person dies, the balance of the party is disrupted, drastically slowing down the speed of the hunt.”

“Well... It depends on luck. But why hasn’t he appeared yet?”

It has been half a day since Elfin Stone first emerged. It was a long time considering he said he would be back.

“Well, it is good if he is late.”

The Overgeared members moved to the next building. In this building, a few True Blood vampires emerged.

[True Blood Vampire: Boras]

[True Blood Vampire: Rujul]

As named monsters, they were very strong. They were far superior to the 19th Knight, Fulito, and also had dozens of subordinates. Vantner felt a crisis. He inevitably had to use his invincible skill, Guardian’s Power. It had a cooldown time of 48 hours, so one of the precautionary measures against Elfin Stone fell.

The party’s morale fell. Huroi tried to encourage them.

“Don’t worry. The next time Elfin Stone appears, I’ll try to provoke him.”

It was impossible. Elfin Stone appeared and used the skill instantly. It wasn’t a skill that someone could deliberately draw

towards them. But Huroi believed in his speaking ability.

“Words are faster than action. I will try to attract his aggro before he uses the skill.”

“ ... ”

Sooner or later, Elfin Stone’s parents would be mentioned. The Overgeared members were now familiar with Huroi. They were grateful that Huroi wasn’t their enemy. They shook just imagining what he would say.

[The True Blood vampire, Boras has been destroyed.]

[44,690,500 experience has been acquired.]

[A complete ruby has been acquired.]

[The True Blood vampire, Rujul has been destroyed.]

[45,900,000 experience has been acquired.]

[The Third Piece of ??? has been acquired.]

[Complete Ruby]

A gem that can be used as a material for top-rated accessories.

Weight: 2

[Third Piece of ???]

It can't be determined what this is a piece of yet.

A minimum of three pieces must be collected before it can be determined.

Weight: 15

The second building was completed. With the help of his colleagues, Grid was about to kill 150 vampires and two True Blood vampires to reach level 298. However, there was a feeling of disappointment.

‘True Blood vampires have a chance of dropping elixirs.’

Drinking an elixir could permanently increase stats! If not, how good would it be if an intermediate or advanced vampire accessory dropped? It was clear that the Bloodsucking Third Piece of ??? was a unique item, but he didn't know if it was more or less valuable than elixirs and vampire accessories.

Then a notification window flashed in front of Grid.

[The cooldown time of the title skill ‘One who Became a Legend is

over.]

His invincible passive skill was restored.

‘Now I can fight with more ease.’

He felt anxious when he didn’t have this immortality. Just as Grid was sighing with relief...

“Didn’t I say I would come back?”

An eerie voice was heard from above Grid’s head.

[The master of the 13th city, Vampire Earl Elfin Stone has appeared.]

[A strong evil influence is making your magic power turbid. All types of spells and skills aren’t available.]

[A vampire’s gaze will subdue lower species. Your body is subjected to a strong oppression.]

“Elfin Stone!”

He was finally here. Huroi hurriedly opened his mouth.

“You...”

However, this time actions were faster than words. Huroi only managed to speak one word before Grid was swallowed up by a curtain of blood. Elfin Stone smiled coldly.

“I will come back soon. I will kill another person, and then another one the time after that! This will be repeated again and again. I will show you the extreme taste of fear!”

Suruk!

All traces of Elfin Stone disappeared. Grid trembled once he got out of the curtain.

“That crazy bastard!”

Why did he keep attacking Grid? Grid was grateful, but he felt very dirty.

# Chapter 292

---

[You have been hit by a deadly blow!]

[You have suffered 68,300 damage.]

[A legend doesn't die easily. You can resist all attacks for 5 seconds with a minimum of health.]

At level 200, one strength stat increased health by five, while one stamina stat increased health by twenty. If he added the 6,000 health from the Holy Light set, and the 3,000 health from the Man who has Touched Hell title, Grid had more than 55,000 health in total.

That was 6,000 points higher than Vantner, who already had a high amount of health due to his class characteristics. Therefore, Grid could be called the user with the highest health among the two billion users.

Despite this fact, however, Elfin Ston's attack contained an enormous power that wiped out all of Grid's health in one blow. The Holy Light Armor reduced 50% of magic damage, so this skill could truly be called a blow of death.

“Kuaaaak! That crazy bastard!”

Grid died again as soon as the cooldown time of his invincible passive ended, so he couldn't help being furious. He pulled his hair



and stomped his feet. On the other hand, the faces of the Overgeared members were rosy. It was thanks to the positive hint they received.

“Elfin Stone’s re-emergence cycle is 24 hours.”

“Elfin Stone attacks the person with the highest number of stats.”

“Elfin Stone is arrogant. He doesn’t have any doubts about Grid being alive.”

In other words.

“He will continue to attack Grid whenever he appears.”

“This is ideal. If this continues, all of us will be able to live until Grid reaches level 300.”

“We can prepare perfectly for the fight against Elfin Stone.”

“...”

The biggest advantage of a virtual reality was the perfect implementation of the five senses. But this was a great disadvantage in battle. It hurt if the enemy struck you. It wasn’t just their imagination, they really felt pain.

Suffering a large amount of damage at once was like being hit by a person's fist. Did he have to suffer from this terrible pain for the next five days until he reached level 300?

Grid was sad. He looked at his happy and laughing colleagues. He couldn't deny that this was a good thing. Grid calmed his mind and urged the members.

“Let's move on to the next building.”

He was eager to reach level 300 quickly so he wouldn't be hit by that skill so much. Grid rushed ahead. The party members followed him to the third building. They had already cleared two buildings, so the cooperative play of Grid's group had developed. It was easier to kill the vampires.

Grid's experience gauge continued rising at a fast speed.

\*\*\*

“I can sleep today.”

He would return to strike terrible fear into the humans who dared invade his city. As soon as he arrived at his mansion, Elfin Stone changed into pajamas and put on a sleeping hat before laying down in a white coffin. He was happy imagining the humans who would be shivering with fear right now.

‘Kukuk, they must want to die soon. But I have no intention of

killing you all at once. Slowly... Hrmm.”

He was sleepy. Vampires were powerful existences but they were victims of the ‘Curse of Idleness.’ An average vampire slept for 20 hours and the stronger vampires slept for even longer. Elfin Stone was an earl, so he had to sleep for at least 23 hours a day and could sleep for a year straight.

“Hah.”

Elfin Stone fell asleep.

\*\*\*

Satisfy’s 8th Development Team Leader, Ashley Tosun. He was one of the 33 scientists who built the virtual reality system with Lim Cheolho. In the company, he was known as the father of vampires. He was the one who made the vampires in Satisfy.

Of course, he also designed Elfin Stone. If enemies threatened the city, Elfin Stone would repeat the act of murdering the ‘strongest being’ every 24 hours for seven days. After losing seven of their strongest consecutively, the invading party would panic, lost strength and be destroyed.

However...

“This is crazy.”

The 13th city had one of the highest difficulties among the 15 vampire cities. Ashley monitored the entry of Grid's party and was convinced that their expedition would fail. However, now he felt some doubts.

It was because Grid's immortal passive neutralized the characteristics of Elfin Stone. Elfin Stone wasn't able to distinguish the power of Grid's group, despite appearing there for the second time.

"This is really..."

The problem was that Grid's attack power, defense, and magic power were the highest among the party members. Originally, Pagma's Descendant wasn't a class that could be strengthened to such a degree.

The moment five legendary items were made, their stats growth would gradually fall and their combat power gradually weakened, making them more suitable as a production class. Grid was unlucky so it took a long time to produce five legendary items.

This was a factor that wasn't expected and as a result, Grid's stats were abnormally increased. Thanks to that, Grid succeeded in various raids and continued to grow stronger. The process was tough, but it was a good outcome for Grid.

"Maybe this... He might collect all the pieces?"

Team Leader Ashley had an expression of interest on his face. Following Lim Cheolho and Yoon Sangmin, another fan of Grid's appeared in the S.A. Group.

\*\*\*

“Good!”

Grid's party cleared the third building. The profits from this building were tremendous. No elixirs or spellbooks were obtained, but one vampire's ring was acquired. It was regretful that it was just from a junior vampire, but it was millions of times better than nothing.

After a short discussing, the party chose Peak Sword as the owner of the ring. His offensive power as a swordsman was the best among the group, so he could maximize the effectiveness of the ring.

“I have a vampire accessory...”

Peak Sword was full of strong motivation as they challenged the hunting grounds. It was really good that he merged with Overgeared. Peak Sword's endurance in battle dramatically increased.

Hidden Sword. It was a class with a fatal disadvantage in that both general attacks and skills must go through the process of the

sword being drawn, so the attack time was too long. However, the attack power and attack speed were both at the top.

The moment the sword hidden in the sheath was revealed, the target was already wounded. Now the vampires suffered from it.

“Kuak!”

“T-These humans...!”

The fourth building had a structure similar to a cathedral. There were coffins jammed together between long benches. It seemed to be a meeting place for vampires.

Taack!

The moment Peak Sword leaped over the benches and pulled his sword from his sheath.

Seokeok!

There was a flash of light and blood burst from a vampire's chest. It was very difficult to fight against this invisible and fast attack.

Jjejeong! Jjang!

Peak Sword didn't even allow a counterattack. He always held his

sheath in his hand and used it as a protective shield. His health was maintained thanks to the vampire ring as he blocked the vampires' attacks and unsheathed his sword again.

Due to Peak Sword's actions, the fourth building was cleared faster than the third. Now Grid was level 299. It was estimated that his experience gauge would reach 20% after the next building.

‘Okay, not long now.’

If his stats went through the third awakening, he would be able to beat Elfin Stone, who already attacked him twice. The moment Grid was imagining this, a notification window appeared in front of him.

[The cooldown time of the title skill ‘One who Became a Legend is over.]

Originally this would be good news, but now it was a different matter.

“Damn.”

Grid braced himself for the pain that was about to come. A blond man appeared above his head. It was Elfin Stone.

“Didn’t I say I would come back?”

Puhahahak!

A red light swallowed up Grid. Elfin Stone was convinced that Grid had died and shouted.

“I will come back soon. I will kill another person, and then another one the time after that! This will be repeated again and again. I will show you the extreme taste of fear... Huh?”

The excited Elfin Stone shook his head. The number of humans.

‘It is the same as yesterday?’

There were nine people yesterday and he killed one, so there should be eight people left? Thinking back, he felt like the number of humans on the first day was nine...

‘I am mistaken.’

Elfin Stone smiled. There were no humans who could survive Extreme Blood Transfusion. The humans originally had 11 people. Elfin Stone believed in his skills rather than his memory.

“Now then. I will see you again soon.”

“ ... ”



Grid wanted to correct it to tomorrow, rather than soon. The party was convinced that Elfin Stone was very dumb after he disappeared. But in fact, Elfin Stone's intelligence wasn't low. Elfin Stone slept for 23 hours a day and was barely awake the rest of the time.

It was reasonable that he couldn't remember the exact number of Grid's party. Why would he need to remember how much prey there was? He didn't care about the numbers of Grid's group.

“Damn bastard...”

Grid cursed as the curtain lifted. His items' durability was already at its limit, and repairs were needed.

Ttang! Ttang!

The legendary blacksmith took out his hammer and repaired his equipment. The party members were envious of him.

If one's equipment was damaged during a hunt, then ordinary users would have to repair their equipment using the expensive Repair Tool Set. However, Grid could freely repair his items and even accumulate skill proficiency while doing so.

Grid promised again,

‘Elfin Stone...! I will repay this disgrace and inflict double the suffering on you!’

\*\*\*

[The duration of the Experience Increase Potion is over.]

“Ah, damn.”

It happened after clearing the seventh building. His experience gauge hadn't reached 50% yet, but he heard the worst news.

‘It seems like I have to attack three more buildings before I can level up.’

From level 299, the amount of experience required to level up increased by four times. He needed to kill the vampires without any rest. Elfin Stone appeared again when Grid was fretting. This was the fourth appearance. However, this time he was a little strange. He looked at Grid without attacking immediately.

‘Why?’

Elfin Stone asked the nervous Grid.

“You, why are you still alive?”

“...!”

Grid's party were thunderstruck at the unexpected response. Maybe Elfin Stone would change his behavior pattern and kill them all. In other words, it was the worst situation.

‘I’m not level 300 yet...!’

Unfortunately, it couldn't be helped.

‘There is no way other than to fight.’

The moment Grid was about to summon Noe and Randy.

“Your parents must’ve had a hard time after giving birth to you!”

“W-What...?”

Huroi revealed his personality. Elfin Stone received a big shock and his handsome face distorted.

# Chapter 293

---

Earl Elfin Stone woke up!

Then he found Grid's party today. He had killed one human every day for the past three days. However, it was strange.

‘Isn't there the same number as yesterday?’

This time he wasn't mistaken. He counted yesterday, so he knew the exact number. The number of humans hadn't decreased.

‘What is this?’

Elfin Stone questioned as he looked at Grid's group. It was to find out if the person he thought he killed yesterday was alive or not. But just as humans had difficulty distinguishing between beasts, vampires had difficulty distinguishing between humans.

Sniff sniff.

Sniff sniff!

Elfin Stone was unable to find Grid with his eyes, so he sniffed like a dog. He was looking for the smell of blood.

‘This guy!’

Elfin Stone's gaze fixed on Grid. His air was rough, but he was a strong-looking fellow. In other words, he was definitely the one who Elfin Stone attacked yesterday. No, it wasn't just yesterday, but the first and second day as well.

Elfin Stone's eyes sank coldly.

“You, why are you still alive?”

How did he survive Extreme Blood Transfusion for three days in a row? He certainly wasn't an ordinary guy. This was a good guy.

‘It was a close call.’

He almost missed a delicacy. It wasn't easy for him to realize that he almost destroyed good human blood. He was thankful for the human's survival!

‘Should I try it once?’

Step, step.

Elfin Stone felt a strong appeal from Grid and moved slowly. Grid shook nervously as Elfin Stone approached.

“Your parents must've had a hard time after giving birth to you!”

“...!”

Even the lowest of humans thought about their parents. Then what about the vampires who recognized themselves as superior to humans? In particular, the True Blood considered their parent as a god.

Shizo Beriache. She was the one who gave them eternal life! She wasn't an existence that a mere human could disparage.

“This is the second time I have become so angry over the past 300 years!”

The blood rose to Elfin Stone's head. His face distorted in a terrible manner and he shouted.

“I will feed on all of you today!”

Kuwoooooh!

Elfin Stone released his overwhelming magic power. It hadn't reached the level of a great demon, but it was several times stronger than the best rated demonkin. It was slightly above Hell Gao after his flesh was destroyed by Muller.

Grid and Peak Sword speculated from among the astonished party members. They had fought with Hell Gao, so they could

more accurately assess Elfin Stone's strength.

‘This is bad!’

Hell Gao had the fire stones weakness, but Elfin Stone was different. Grid observed him with the Slaughterer's Eye Patch, but he couldn't grasp any weak points. In other words, he was one of the high ranking bosses.

‘Shit!’

Huroi's aggro was too much. He stimulated Elfin Stone more than necessary. He knew he would be severely beaten up one day because he mentioned the parents, but...

‘Why is it today?’

Grid lamented, while Jishuka tried to encourage the party members.

“This is fine! There's a chance to win!”

The first reason they were afraid of Elfin Stone was his attack the moment he appeared. It was a level of surprise they couldn't cope with, and they had to assume that one person would die. But now the situation had changed. Elfin Stone was in front of them, so there was no need to fear a surprise attack. If they built a good formation, there was a chance...

“...Not.”

The group had to shake their heads when Elfin Stone showed a formidable appearance.

“Blood Field!”

Puhahahak!

Magic power stretched out around Elfin Stone and dominated the land in a 30m radius. Grid’s party was within it. To be precise, the party was adversely affected except for Grid.

[Your blood is influenced by Blood Field.]

[153 health will be transferred to Earl Elfin Stone per second.]

[All healing effects will be reduced by 80%.]

The people with the lowest health in the party were Jishuka, Zednos and Faker. Archers, magicians and assassins all had around 20,000~30,000 health. Losing 153 health per second was a huge pressure on them. They would lost two-thirds of their life in just two minutes.

Furthermore, this health would also restore Elfin Stone? It meant that Elfin Stone recovered 1,400 health per second.



“Such a scam.”

“Fighting here means defeat.”

The party tried to escape from the area of Blood Field. But Elfin Stone wasn't standing still.

“Blood Requiem.”

Elfin Stone swung both arms. It was reminiscent of the elegant actions of a conductor. Then pillars of blood fell over the party members' heads.

Pepeng! Pepepepeng!

Blood Requiem! It didn't matter how many people were in the group. It was Elfin Stone's unique skill that attacked all enemies inside the Blood Field. The damage was at least 10,000! The wide area skill had incredible power.

“Kuack, how do we defeat that?”

“I'm going crazy.”

The Overgeared members coughed up blood and took potions to restore their health. However, the 80% reduction in healing effects meant the potions weren't effective. Grid urgently summoned Noe

and Randy.

He planned to have Noe eat Elfin Stone's stats and have Randy copy some of Elfin Stone's skills to increase the odds. But Noe and Randy couldn't play a role.

"I can't swallow the souls of noble True Blood vampires... I tried to swallow, but the curse of blood turned on me, nyang..."

Noe's short legs twisted and he flopped down. He was depressed that he couldn't help Grid. Randy also an apologetic expression on his face.

"I can't copy that target."

"Didn't you copy Pagma? Is Elfin Stone stronger than Pagma?"

That wasn't the case. There was the racial limitation and physiology that couldn't be overcome. The True Blood vampires were a superior species to doppelgangers, so it was impossible to copy them.

'Dammit.'

The trump cards he believed in had disappeared. It was a desperate situation. Elfin Stone summoned something while Grid was feeling frustrated.

“Iyarugt.”

‘Yakult?’

The pronunciation was similar to the 200 won drink that Grid enjoyed. But it wasn’t a weapon that could be made fun of. From the handle to the blade, it was a smooth strip of red. Elfin Stone’s slightly curved sword was made of blood stone and was so sharp it could cut anything.

Blood stone! If adamantium represented the world of the gods, blood stone was a mineral that represented hell. Adamantium occasionally appeared in the human world because the gods loved humanity, but blood stones were different. There had been little present throughout the history of the human world, so it was an unfamiliar mineral to Grid.

‘This...!’

It felt a lot different from Pagma’s words. If it wasn’t Pagma, what blacksmith could make this type of sword? Grid was fascinated by the beautiful appearance and rational structure of Iyarugt, when he suddenly recalled the ‘Third Piece of ???’.

It was because the color of the unidentified fragment was similar to the color of Iyarugt. Elfin Stone’s white robes flapped amidst the bloody magic power as he declared.

“There has only been one being who survived Iyarugt. And there

will be no one else in the future.”

Chaaeng!

Elfin Stone’s first target was Huroi. Peak Sword defended against the blood red sword. It was possible to predict the behavior.

“...!”

Elfin Stone’s eyes curved up slightly. He was somewhat surprised that a human managed to defend against his sword. But that was it. Peak Sword recovered the sword that confronted Iyarugt, exposing a one second gap when it was put back in the sheath.

Seokeok!

“Ku...heok!”

The red sword moved through this gap and struck Peak Sword’s shoulder.

‘This is like Iyarugt is...!’

It was obvious that it was an ego sword. The ego sword showed its owner the best route. Peak Sword was able to tell. Elfin Stone’s movements weren’t optimized for swordsmanship, making it difficult to predict the sword.

Peeng!

Elfin Stone was wielding the sword at Peak Sword again when a spear aimed at his side. It was Pon's Mach Spear. But even that wasn't a big threat to Elfin Stone. Ordinary vampires could only turn all of their body into smoke, but Elfin Stone could change certain parts of his body. His waist turned into black smoke and Pon's spear missed, then he swung his arm to counter.

“How the hell do we kill him?”

Pon grabbed his wounded chest and exclaimed. In the meantime, the other party members started the offensive. Flaming arrows, unpredictable kicks, swift daggers and powerful storms. Everything covered Elfin Stone.

Not even Elfin Stone could neutralize all these attacks. The Overgeared members standards were too high. However, there was no fatal damage.

‘We will be wiped out if this continues.’

At a time when everyone was certain, Grid thought of a way to break from this situation. It was only possible because it was Grid.

# Chapter 294

---

“What method...? How can we escape from the immediate crisis?”

Grid had numerous experiences with raids. He had raised his level through raids rather than hunting. Therefore, it was safe to say that he was crazy in an emergency. Furthermore, the bosses of Grid's raids weren't monsters that appeared with a “Kuwooooh!”

Satisfy had named bosses that exerted a big and small influence on the worldview of the game, and they overflowed with individuality. Perhaps that was why?

Grid had a very unique perspective about bosses. He didn't just concentrate on the combat patterns of the bosses like everyone else, he also considered their personality and background. The more he identified the boss' tendencies, the easier the raid was...

At the time of the Pascal raid, Grid hadn't haphazardly used his strength. The situation was designed to work in his favor. He was a professional. He would be the first job called ‘raid expert,’ who gave raid advice to various guilds and users. But it was a shame that Grid had no brains to turn this talent into money.

‘Elfin Stone is the key to this situation.’

Grid thought about it. Elfin Stone was able to destroy their party at any time. But in the past four days, he only attempted to kill one of them. Why? It was surprisingly simple when looking at his

nature.

‘It was for fun.’

Elfin Stone repeated the same thing every time he appeared. He would let them experience extreme fear by killing one person a day.

‘His aim is to see us scared and shivering.’

What if he focused on killing all of them at once?

‘It would be futile.’

He would lose his toys and Elfin Stone didn’t want that.

‘I have to use this point.’

Grid’s face darkened.

“Rapid Pressure.”

Peeeeeeong!

As Grid was thinking, the Overgeared members were struggling. Elfin Stone’s aggro was thoroughly taken by Huroi, so the party members left Huroi’s protection to Vantner and focused on

attacking.

The Overgeared members had different characteristics and could create a 120% synergy by connecting their skills. They were indeed users in the top 20 rankings, and were models for everyone.

In particular, Faker's performance was dazzling. It was difficult for even Elfin Stone to respond to his swiftness. The dagger caused blood to shed before he could turn his body into smoke.

However, Blood Field was the problem. Elfin Stone recovered over 1,000 health per second from the Overgeared members! His recovery power was phenomenal. It was estimated that his total health was 8 million. It was impossible to knock him down with the attack power of a few people.

“Lightning Kill!”

Kwajijijik!

Regas' fist pierced Elfin Stone's chest. However, Elfin Stone didn't suffer any damage. He turned into smoke at the point of attack.

“This is the real thing!”

Regas rotated his body without recalling his fist. He aimed his heel towards Elfin Stone's head. It was an irregular and exciting attack.



“Kkuk...!”

Regas' strength was his unpredictable attack patterns. Elfin Stone didn't expect this type of behavior and groaned. On the other hand, Pon was rushing forward.

“Rain Spear!”

Pepeng! Pepepeng!

Pon leapt and repeated stabbed his spear. The spear poured down like rain. It was an unavoidable attack, as long as the whole body wasn't turned into smoke. But if the whole body was turned into smoke, there was a large delay and counter attacking was impossible. It was an act that Elfin Stone had to avoid.

“Blood Shield!”

Jjejeong! Jjeejeeong!

Elfin Stone consumed some of his health to release blood, creating dozens of red shields. The spears and shields collided in the air.

Puk! Puk puk!

Faker approached in secret and repeatedly stabbed Elfin Stone in

the neck. The higher the number of hits, the more damage that would be accumulated. Elfin Stone shouted.

“I’ll have to deal with you first!”

“...!”

Faker was nervous. It was because Elfin Stone’s gaze was no longer focused on Huroi.

Peeng!

Iyarugt glowed red, causing his ears to burst.

Chiing!

The Overgeared members instantly felt their ears ringing. This was the ‘Blood Cry’ skill attached to Iyarugt. The Overgeared members lost their balance and Elfin Stone used a skill.

“Blood Thorns!”

Puuok! Puuok!

Dozens of thorns emerged from Blood Field and stabbed Faker’s thigh. Blood Thorn! The attack power wasn’t strong, but it was the worst magic that polluted the blood stream of the target.

Movement speed was drastically reduced, so Faker's swiftness was blocked.

Elfin Stone smiled and wielded Iyarugt. He wanted to cut Faker's head off. Just in time, flaming arrows came flying and stopped the action. It was Jishuka's cover.

"You are pretty good humans."

Elfin Stone was stimulated by the Overgeared members. Elfin Stone was in a better position the longer this went on.

Kwajak!

Elfin Stone lightly snapped an arrow. His current health was still at 8/10ths. On the other hand, the Overgeared members had their health reduced by at least one-third to a half. It was the power of Blood Field.

"If this continues, we'll be wiped out in two minutes."

Zednos restored Faker's movement speed with Blessing of the Wind, and spoke with a desperate expression. Vantner shrugged.

"I agree."

Elfin Stone's strengths weren't his attack power, magic power, defense, or speed. These were low compared to bosses of the same

level. However, the reason he felt so strong was his unrivaled utility.

Wide area status damage, wide area defense and attack skills, wide area vampire skills, single target defense skills and so on. It seemed impossible unless all the Overgeared members were summoned.

Could they win even if Grid reached level 300? It happened when the party members were feeling doubts.

{Sacrifice Huroi. The reason why Elfin Stone is on a rampage is Huroi, so he will stop after Huroi dies.}

What nonsense was Grid speaking?

“...?”

Everyone except for Huroi frowned and doubted their ears. Regas evaded Iyarugt’s fierce attack and questioned Grid.

{Selling out our companion? Did I hear it wrong?}

Grid shook his head.

{No, you heard it properly.}

Pon shouted angrily.

{Don't make us disappointed!}

Jishuka was the same.

{Grid, a man who sells out his companions doesn't deserve to stand at the top.}

Peak Sword, Zednos and Faker didn't give opinions, but they couldn't hide their uncomfortable feelings. It was a natural criticism. But Grid wasn't ashamed. He looked at all the members with dignified eyes.

“This is to protect more companions.”

That's right. Grid wasn't going to sacrifice Huroi for nothing.

‘Eight people will be saved by one sacrifice.’

Ordinary people couldn't easily make the choice to sacrifice someone for the greater good. Especially if the person was someone precious. However, Grid was more pragmatic. Making decisions out of affection? Grid wasn't the type.

“Cough!”

Faker was hit by an attack. Grid ran towards him and pulled out Failure.

Chaaeng!

The blue Failure collided with the red Iyarugt.

[The durability of the +9 Failure has decreased by 5.]

The strength of the blood stone was far superior to that of the blue orichalcum. Looking at just strength, it seemed to be above adamantium.

‘The creator of Iyarugt is better than my current self.’

Grid clicked his tongue and sent a whisper to Huroi.

–Do you understand what I mean? You have to sacrifice yourself for everyone.

Huroi didn’t hesitate at all...

–I understand, My Lord.

The reaction was as expected. This made Grid’s heart ache even more. Grid smiled bitterly.

–Why don't you ever say it if you don't like something? I'm even more sorry if you are too good.

–I only follow My Lord's commands. If it's a reasonable order like right now, I am even more willing!

The loss of experience, item durability loss or item drop penalties after death were fatal to anyone. In particular, Huroi's combat power was low so his level up speed was slow. Thus, it was more critical. Nevertheless, Huroi was always willing to follow Grid's orders.

–I will surely get revenge on Elfin Stone. And I will make sure that you are compensated enough to make up for today's sacrifice.

–There is no need for compensation. It is my mission to sacrifice myself for My Lord and your precious people. I desire nothing in return. In addition, this situation is all my fault...

–I don't need you to take responsibility. And don't forget that you are also a precious person to me.

–...

Grid prepared his heart. He proposed to Elfin Stone, who was gazing at him coldly over the sword.

“I will hand over my companion who dared to mention your parents. Kill him to release your anger.”

Elfin Stone couldn't believe his ears.

“Selling out your companion to save your life? Humans are truly dirty and ugly.”

“So, you don't want to?”

A smile appeared on Elfin Stone's face.

“I want.”

‘Indeed.’

It was as Grid expected. Elfin Stone wanted to enjoy the game of hunting humans for a long time.

“Go and die.”

Grid commanded as he treated from Elfin Stone, and Huroi took immediate action. He ran over to Elfin Stone. The people who saw him cried out.

“No!”

“What are you doing, you crazy guy!?”



The words were useless. Grid had already made up his mind, and Huroi followed Grid.

“I will kill you cruelly.”

Puok!

Huroi didn't resist as Elfin Stone played with him like a toy. Blood Thorns pierced his ankles to restrict movement, while Iyarugt cut at his wrists so he couldn't hold a sword. Then the body was sliced up like steak, until he eventually hacked into the head.

“...”

The physical pain was nothing compared to the mental impact, but Huroi didn't even groan. His mind had been disciplined by spending hundreds of hours trapped in a dark dungeon.

“I can't look anymore!”

The Overgeared members were filled with righteous indignation. Grid warned those who were about to save Huroi.

“Don't be ridiculous and get out of here quickly. If you violate this command, I will expel you from the guild.”

“...”

Grid lacked charisma. What did it matter how high his dignity stat was? He seemed frivolous because he only cared about money and glamor. But at this moment, he was different. He felt guilt and sorrow at forcing someone to die.

Grid tried to keep the emotions from his eyes as he made a strong expression. The qualities of a leader were slowly blooming. The Overgeared members calmed down and retreated.

On this day, Huroi died.

# Chapter 295

---

“ ... ”

As soon as they ran away from the area of Blood Field, a notification window popped up.

[Your party member Huroi has died.]

The atmosphere was heavy.

“Shit... There is a day when I have to sacrifice my companion to live...”

“This is the result of our lack of power. Let’s take this opportunity to work harder.”

The party members no longer blamed Grid. They knew Grid hadn’t chosen to abandon Huroi because he wanted to. When they looked at it calmly, Grid’s decision was right. No, maybe it was better. Thanks to Grid’s decision, the rest of the party were able to escape the crisis.

He took the nature of the boss into consideration and created such a situation? It was the day they noticed that Grid wasn’t evolving in just personality and abilities, but in intelligence as well. The present situation wasn’t bad when they thought about it positively.

But Regas was still shivering.

“It would’ve been better for all of us to die, rather than sacrificing someone.”

Originally, Regas was a sympathetic person who valued righteousness above all else. When Grid was still immature. Regas was the only one who respected and trusted Grid, who was ignored by everyone else. Thus, Grid could understand Regas’ anger. But understanding didn’t mean he could accept it.

“If you have time to grumble, kill more monsters. We now have to clear four buildings in 23 hours.”

“...!”

Grid’s group took an average of 10 hours to clear a building. This was a lot. The first two days, it took them at least 12 hours to finish a building.

There were many strong vampires in each building. In particular, those with more than two True Blood vampires were particularly dangerous. There were times when Vantner needed to use his invincible skill.

Now Grid declared that the strategy was to spend six hours per building. In particular, the number of people had decreased by one. In a way, it proved that Grid was the most enraged person about Huroi’s sacrifice.

“Look. We’ll be wiped out if we hurry. It will be unlucky if we encounter a party with more than three True Blood vampires, and if there is no rest...”

“Vantner is correct. We should maintain our previous pace. Don’t you know that we can get more hurt if we’re too hasty? Grid, I understand your feelings, but don’t be too irritated.”

Pon persuaded. However, Jishuka and Peak Sword’s thoughts were different.

“No, we have to do as Grid says. Elfin Stone will come to us again tomorrow.”

“If Grid doesn’t reach level 300 by then, this situation will happen again.”

The goal was set.

“More haste and more speed. We have to hurry.”

Grid entered the new building and immediately aimed Transcend at the ceiling.

Kurururung!

There was a loud sound as the ceiling collapsed and dust covered

the place.

Bump!

Kung! Kung!

There were piles of stones.

Kwaang!

Kwang! Kwang!

The coffins in the part of the hall with the collapsed ceiling opened simultaneously. Hundreds of vampires escaped and gazed around angrily.

“Who dares to awaken us from our sleep!?”

“These human scum want to die!”

“No, I want to kill you.”

Grid held Failure and the Doppelganger's Greatsword with a cold expression.

‘I am angry.’

His party members were here to help him with his quest. He was shaken by his helplessness.

“I...!”

Grid led the way. There was no stopping. The red light of the Slaughterer's Eye Patch shone in the darkness.

“I! I'm going to become stronger!”

Yes, he would become strong enough not to experience this dirty feeling twice. The best! Grid finally had a goal to play this game. What was the one thing he needed? Numerous combat experience, level and senses. As well as the power of items.

“Ohhhhhh!”

Grid entered the middle of hundreds of vampires! In the darkness, Failure and Grid's Boots became more powerful. Now he was able to fight better than before he arrived in the vampire city.

He had struggled with a large number of enemies all day long and grew more proficient. But he should remain calm at all times.

“Kek! Ugh! H-Hik! Save me!”

“ ... ”

Grid moved like a madman among the vampires and quickly became ragged. The party members had to struggle to clean up his mess.

\*\*\*

Reidan Castle's resurrection point.

Pahat!

Huroi appeared with a burst of light. He looked fine considering that his body had been torn apart by Elfin Stone a while ago.

“Pant... Pant...”

Huroi's breathing was rough. His body was trembling like crazy. He had a strong mentality, but he hadn't experienced his body being hacked apart before. He breathed out as he shook off the shock and opened the status window. He checked his experience gauge.

‘10%....’

The drop in experience was a huge 29.3%. From level 200 onwards, the loss of experience after death was in proportion to the level.



‘Fortunately, no items dropped.’

It wasn’t comforting. The durability of all of his items had dropped by at least 100 points. If Huroi was an ordinary user without Grid, he would’ve had to spend a lot of money on repairs.

“Huroi?”

Lauel ran over to Huroi. He was the busiest person in the guild. Lauel was tired.

“What happened?”

He knew of only two ways to escape from a vampire city. It was to kill the boss or die. There was only one reason for one member of the party to return.

“...You, did you die?”

Huroi nodded at Lauel’s question.

“The boss is too strong.”

“Please tell me the story.”

There was no reason to hide it. Huroi told Lauel all the details of what happened in the vampire city. Lauel’s reaction to the story

was surprisingly bright.

“Grid used such a method? Haha! Incredible! Grid’s brain wasn’t just a decoration!”

“ ... ”

Lauel was truly jubilant about Grid’s growth. But this choice of words was inappropriate, so Huroi couldn’t help glaring.

\*\*\*

“Grid’s expedition of the 13th expedition will end in failure. Maybe this time tomorrow, Grid’s party will appear at the resurrection point.”

The meeting room in Reidan Castle.

Lauel convened the former members of the Tzedakah Guild and delivered the news of Grid’s party to them. The Overgeared members murmured at the desperate story.

Toban gritted his teeth, “I should’ve gone.”

Toban was a paladin with divine power. He was the antithesis of vampires. But he didn’t take part in the expedition because he was in charge of the yellow mithril mine. There were few people in Overgeared who could manage the workers, so Toban was an

invaluable presence.

Lauel waited until the atmosphere calmed and opened his mouth again.

“As you know, pavranium is indispensable for Grid. The more pavranium that Grid obtains, the stronger he will become. So I will send an additional two people to support Grid’s party.”

Reidan, Bairan, Cork Island. These three territories must be managed so more support was impossible. Just sending two people as support was hard for Lauel. If only two people were missing, Lauel would have to reduce his sleeping time and managing the territory would become more difficult.

Toban declared, “I am going to join.”

“Nope. Not you.”

“Ik...! Think about it! I will be the biggest help to Grid’s party right now!”

“I’m aware of that. But now that the number of miners is over 100 people, you can’t leave.”

“Then what about me?”

It was the human beast, Toon. Lauel shook his head again.

“Not you either. If you leave the guild while the main force is absent, the guild’s attack power will drop to a dangerous level.”

“Then who are you going to send?”

“Hrmm.”

Lauel examined the Overgeared members. Including Huroi, there were a total of three people. Who could be a big help to Grid without taking away too much from the territory management?

Lauel struggled before pointing out one person.

“Ibellin.”

“Yes!”

The flamberge master, Ibellin! He was delighted at being called. For the past few days, he had just been hunting the monsters near the mine.

“The second one... Hah.” Lauel sighed at the thought. “No matter how I look, there isn’t another useless person like Ibellin.”

“You bastard!”

Lauel and Ibellin were still rivals from their days in the Ten Rookies. As the two people were fighting, somebody knocked on the door of the meeting room.

“Come in.”

Lauel called out and a soldier opened the door.

“A guest has come.”

“Guest?”

What guest would come to the guild?

“Heok.”

“T-This is ridiculous...”

The Overgeared members were surprised. It was because they confirmed the identity of the guest.

“Nice to meet you.”

Even the voice was beautiful. White skin and black hair. A slender figure and neat impression that radiated charm. It was her, Yura.

Lauel smiled widely.

\*\*\*

“Pant pant... Shit, I’m going to die now.”

The bloodstained Vantner cursed and screamed. The situation was desperate. There were over 100 vampires surrounding Grid’s current party, and there were also three True Blood vampires.

On the other hand, the eight people of Grid’s group were now ragged. Their health and mana was at the bottom and even their stamina was low, so it was difficult to raise a finger. It was the aftermath of hunting without any rest.

“It’s too much.”

“I wanted to slam my fist into that bastard Elfin Stone’s face. It’s too bad I’ll die before that.”

The party assumed the worst. Even Jishuka, who always encouraged the group, was silent. Grid stared at her chest that moved with every hard breath she took and tightened his grip on Failure.

Kwajak!

He squeezed out all his strength and aimed at the skull of a

vampire. The vampires' aggro fell on him and they simultaneously stared at Grid.

“Crazy!”

“Hey! How can the leader die first? We should be the first ones to die!”

The terrified party members moved towards Grid.

“Pant... Pant...”

Grid didn't say anything. He kept panting as he wielded his sword towards the vampires. The only good thing was that Lifael's Spear wasn't affected by his tiredness and hovered beside him. Grid would've died sooner if it wasn't for Lifael's Spear.

“Sigh, one last rampage.”

Vantner was stimulated by Grid and grabbed his shield. He had already consumed his invincible skill and couldn't even use basic defense skills. Potion? He took them every time the cooldown ended. The other members were the same.

“Die!”

The vampires unleashed an onslaught. The three True Blood vampires were at the center. Vantner wanted to block their attacks

with his shield, but he was forced down. The other party members also killed two or three vampires before reaching their limits. They allowed attacks and their health quickly sank to the bottom.

“Jishuka!”

The enemies penetrated through the collapsed front line and aimed at Jishuka. Zednos squeezed out the last of his mana, but the wind failed to be of any help to Jishuka. This was the end.

“Hah... Hah...”

The party members could only await death. Just as the vampires were about to take away the last of their health.

Chaaeng!

There was a splendid pillar of light. It was the signal that someone had levelled up. That someone was naturally...

“You’ve been waiting.”

It was Grid.

[Congratulations!]

[You have reached level 300 and achieved the third stats



awakening!]

[For every point of stamina, health will increase by 25 and defense will increase by 0.9.]

[For every point of strength, health will increase by 7 and attack will increase by 0.6.]

[For every point of intelligence...]

...

...

[One of Pagma's Descendant's hidden pieces 'Sealed Ability' has been acquired.]

[The skill 'Item Combination' has been acquired.]

# Chapter 296

---

[All resources will be restored to the maximum in commemoration of reaching level 300.]

It happened at level 100 and level 200. Health, mana and even stamina were completely restored, encouraging the party's morale.

“Very good.”

Grid stretched and stood upright. As his wounds were restored by the level up, he declared to the vampires.

“You’ve been waiting.”

The aftermath of the various stats awakening was abnormally high. It was beyond imagination. Even Grid was surprised.

Jjejeong! Jjejejeok!

“...!”

The vampires were shocked. The person who was dying just a moment ago now swiftly attacked, showing ridiculous attack power.

“What is this...? Kyaack!”

The 20 vampires surrounding Grid immediately collapsed. The blue and jade lights flashed all over the place, while blood and flesh scattered. Death with one blow! Reign supreme! The words that could represent the present Grid were exaggerated. He was truly overwhelming!

“Oh my, look at this.”

A mere mortal couldn't grasp who they were going against, it was unpleasant. A True Blood vampire about to bite Vantner stood up. Her name was Lexi. She had exceptional magic power and skill in blood magic.

“Give me a handful of blood. Blood Chain.”

Puhahahak!

The blood emitted by Lexi split into dozens of stems and surrounded Grid. It was a wide area magic that bound and attacked the target, and was difficult to avoid. However, it wasn't a threat to the current Grid.

His enhanced agility and insight allowed Grid to use more sophisticated movements. He avoided the first two blood flows and used Revolve. The blood streams that should've wrapped around Grid reversed directions and covered Lexi.

“Kyaaak!”

Who would've thought that she would be hit by her own attack? Lexi became an unexpected victim and screamed in pain. Grid neared where she was trapped and swung Failure towards her chest. There was no such thing as mercy to women.

Seokeok!

“...!”

Lexi's eyes widened with surprise. This human could damage the body of a True Blood vampire that was harder than steel? She looked at the huge wound on her chest and used a spell.

“Blood Shield!”

Using the blood spurting from her chest, Lexi unfolded multiple shields in the air and tried to open the distance. But it was useless.

Jjeejeeong!

The red shields were smashed by the jade greatsword. Pagma's Swordsmanship, Kill, aimed at Lexi.

“What is this...?”

Lexi tried to prevent it. She turned to smoke to prevent the dreadful greatsword precisely aiming at her pretty face. But...

Puok!

Lifael's Spear flew around Grid, defending against the vampire's attacks before aiming at Lexi's chest. The smoke was lost and Lexi's body was clearly revealed again.

“Eek!”

Lexi raised her arms and covered her face. Her appearance was pitiful, but her arms could exert a defense superior to steel shields. However, it was mere paper in front of the damage of Kill that came from the Doppelganger's Greatsword.

Peeok!

There was a sound like a watermelon cracking.

Crash!

A True Blood vampire might have eternal life, but even they were bound to die if they lost their heads. Lexi collapsed like a broken doll and turned into a grey light.

[The True Blood vampire, Lexi has been destroyed.]

[56,901,500 experience has been acquired.]

[The Sixth Piece of ??? has been acquired.]

[An Intermediate Vampire's Ring has been acquired.]

He didn't know exactly what the '??? Piece' was yet. He could only infer that it was a fragment of something made by the same mineral as Iyarugt. He wasn't sure if it was a jackpot, but the Intermediate Vampire's Ring was different.

[Intermediate Vampire's Ring]

Rating: Unique

\* During normal attacks, 10% of the damage done to the target will be restored to you as health.

\* This effect is only invoked once every 12 seconds.

A unique magic power dwells in the vampire's ring.

It greatly elevates the wearer's survival skills.

User Restriction: Level 320 or higher.

Weight: 1

It was able to absorb 5% more health than the Junior Vampire's Ring, and the cooldown time was three seconds shorter. Grid wore the ring without any hesitation. Unfortunately, its function didn't overlap with the Junior Vampire's Ring.

"I'm grateful for this."

Vampire items were very rare, so the Intermediate Vampire's Ring would be worth hundreds of gold.

Step, step.

Grid ran through the remnants of vampires and stood in front of the party members, as if protecting them.

"Everyone has suffered. Now you can rest."

"..."

The Overgeared members looked shocked. Grid's strength was more than they imagined, so they were speechless. He became so much stronger just from reaching level 300? It was difficult to tell how high Grid's total stats were.

"This guyyyyy!"

The aggro of the vampires instantly focused on Grid after Lexi died. The two True Blood vampires were also mixed in. The

Overgeared members were worried, but Grid was pleased. He was grateful that the prey came to him. Just as Elfin Stone saw hunting humans as entertainment, Grid had reached a point where hunting vampires could be viewed as entertainment.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship, Wave.”

Kurururung!

The waves of energy! The vampires were swept away by a terrible pain and realized something. Humans weren’t a subspecies. Their potential was even greater than the vampires. They weren’t a species to be ignored and treated like cattle.

\*\*\*

A black magician was more difficult to solo than attack classes because they specialized in debuff magic. Black magicians hunting alone was considered a penance. Most black magicians focused on party-oriented play.

But with the exception of special circumstances, more parties preferred buffers over debuffers. Black magicians couldn’t easily find parties, making it difficult to find them in the rankings.

Except of course for Yura. She was a mythical figure who maintained her fifth spot in the unified rankings despite being a black magician. She was special. A genius among genii. She was evaluated like this, and many users yearned for her.



This precious talent suddenly visited Reidan. Lael and the Overgeared members couldn't help being excited.

“What brings a person like you to this humble city?” Lael asked her.

Lael also admired Yura. What guy wouldn't have a crush on a world-class beauty who was good at games? Yura smiled brightly at Lael and the Overgeared members, whose eyes were shining like lanterns.

Ahh, so beautiful and brilliant. They were convinced that her presence contributed to world peace.

“I want to join Overgeared. Youngwoo-ssi... No, Grid has already agreed, so please check with him.”

“...!”

Yura's smile captivated Lael and the Overgeared members. They let out surprised yelps. One of the solo rankers, apart from Kraugel and Agnibus, was asking to join Overgeared! It was shocking but joyful.

“Welcome!” Lael shouted.

Yura thought that his words and phrases resembled Grid. Lael

would probably be shocked if she knew what she was thinking. But it was the truth. The longer he spent with Grid, the more Lael resembled Grid.

Lael liked Grid from the bottom of his heart. But he didn't want to be similar to Grid.

\*\*\*

The epic battle ended.

“Brilliant.”

“Grid, you were cool.”

“Kyah! Truly God Grid! Do you know God Grid?”

“Are those the only English words you know...?”

The Overgeared members were able to escape from the crisis and praised Grid. But the good atmosphere didn't last long. It was true that Grid was stronger than expected, but could he take down Elfin Stone?

Grid spoke to the worried party.

“Don't waste time on worrying. There is one hour left until Elfin

Stone appears. In order to increase the odds, we need to recover as much stamina as possible.”

Grid’s state was the worst. The Overgeared members constantly supported him, but he fought against almost 100 vampires alone. His whole body was wounded and his items durability was low.

He wondered if he could fully recover his stamina before Elfin Stone appeared. However, Grid had a trump card.

### [Item Combination]

Two items with a 100% understanding can be combined to enhance the performance.

The performance of the combined items will depend on the compatibility between the items.

\* The combination retention time is limited to two minutes. Once this time limit is over, the items will return to their original appearance. At this time, the durability of the items will decrease by 50. This is consumed on a fixed basis.

\* The time it takes for the combination to occur will depend on the structure of the item.

Skill Mana Cost: 1,000

Skill Cooldown Time: 6 hours.

What if he combined Failure and Lifael's Spear?

‘It will be a great weapon if the advantages are maximized.’

Grid believed that he could create the strongest weapon that would defeat Elfin Stone. But he kept in mind that the combination time was only two minutes. In addition, he was anxious since the time it took to combine items wasn't precisely specified.

‘I wish I could experiment with it.’

Newly acquired skills always made people excited. Grid shared the sentiment and wanted to try out Item Combination. But there was the cooldown time. He needed it when dealing with Elfin Stone, so he had to restrain himself.

‘Well, it will be okay. I have a strong style.’

Grid evaluated himself and relaxed. Then he started repairing his items. There wasn't much time left before Elfin Stone's emergence.

# Chapter 287

---

“What will happen?”

Three men were sitting side by side in a spacious living room that was like a playground. What was the identity of those enjoying the cool soju and spicy chicken feet while wearing 3D glasses?

They were Chairman Lim Cheolho, Director Yoon Sangmin, and Team Leader Ashley Tosun. They were major figures in the company. The reason why these busy people gathered in Lim Cheolho’s mansion wasn’t for a simple drinking party.

On the big screen, Grid’s party would soon encounter Elfin Stone. Could they really succeed in the Elfin Stone raid? The three people wanted to check it out. There was a debate.

“In order to raid Elfin Stone, at least three third advancement healers are needed in the party.”

The top priority was to neutralize Elfin Stone’s Blood Field. But Elfin Stone took only 1.8 seconds to deploy Blood Field. It was difficult to block it from being activated, so it needed to be offset with continuous healing. A eight person party with no healers wouldn’t be able to raid Elfin Stone.

The father of vampires, Team Leader Ashley, was confident.

“I don’t know what would’ve happened if Huroi was alive, but

the possibility of Grid's current party successfully raiding Elfin Stone is zero."

Huroi was able to maximize the attack power of the party members while maintaining aggro. Ashley thought that Grid was stupid for sacrificing someone so important to the party. But Lim Cheolho gave a different opinion. In the first place, Grid's party would've been wiped out if they hadn't sacrificed Huroi.

"In addition, the strength of Pagma's Descendant is far above what was originally planned. One of the five people who can cause miracles in Satisfy is Grid."

Grid wasn't the only special one in the party. Jishuka, Peak Sword, Pon, Regas, Faker, Vantner and Zednos. They had excellent control and senses, demonstrating a strength that was beyond the concept of levels and classes.

"Wouldn't they have the power to beat Elfin Stone?"

Yoon Sangmin ate a chicken feet and speculated carefully.

"I agree with both of you. But to be honest, I don't think Grid's party can succeed in this raid. The influence of Blood Field is too strong."

In the past, Yoon Sangmin cursed Grid for being stupid and frustrating. He was resentful that someone so stupid took one of the nine legendary classes. But now he was different. He watched

the changes and growth of Grid that took place over a year, and now supported Grid. His wife didn't know it, but he was a great member of Grid's fan club. However, even Yoon Sangmin was skeptical about this raid.

Lim Cheolho's lips, which were swollen due to eating spicy chicken feet, curved in a smile.

“Then my odds will rise.”

That's right. The leaders of the world's largest corporation gathered to bet on Grid. They seemed to have a lot of free time, but this wasn't the case. They weren't wasting time watching Grid. Grid was a special existence. They didn't want to miss the biography of a person who grew up through Satisfy.

\*\*\*

The former 5th ranked Yura. She was the world's best female ranker who suddenly lost her ranking four months ago. What was the reason? This was still a big issue and caused curiosity among countless people.

Lauel and the Overgeared members were exposed to the truth.

“Demon Slayer...!”

Yura joined Overgeared with the authority of the lord's agent, Lauel. The guild members weren't familiar with her class. As many

people guessed, she obtained a hidden class. It was also a legendary hidden class!

Lauel and the Overgeared members were thrilled. The Demon Slayer class was written in gold, just like Pagma's Descendant. But there was something odd.

‘According to Grid, legendary classes get their level reset to level 1?’

On the other hand, Yura was currently level 203. It meant she went from level 1 to level 203 in just four months. A typical user. No, it was three times faster than the growth rate of the strongest rankers.

‘It's amazing.’

She was someone who maintained the 5th ranking as a black magician that was hard to raise. Acquiring a legendary class was like growing wings on her back. She used her innate talents, effort and the know-how she accumulated as the 5th ranked user to raise her level at a speed that exceeded common sense.

Lauel and the Overgeared members were amazed, while Yura watched Reidan Castle's resurrection point.

‘I was told Youngwoo-ssi would appear soon.’

She heard about what happened. The group of eight encountered



a boss that was impossible to raid and would be wiped out.

‘I don’t think so.’

Yura was always watching Grid. She looked at all the stories related to him. Taking into account Grid’s growth and the features of a legendary class...

‘Youngwoo-ssi can produce results that others can’t imagine.’

Yura knew about Grid’s past. He had gone through all types of hardships due to a lack of natural talents and bad fortune. He had lived an unhappy life for 26 out of his 27 years and suffered countless wounds. Yura wanted him to no longer feel despair. She simply wanted him to be happy.

‘I will share my good luck. So please come back safely with a bright expression.’

Yura’s true heart was shown when Grid was in trouble.

\*\*\*

Elfin Stone slept for 23 hours and his condition was the best. The day before, he tortured the human who dared insult Shizo Beriache and was able to get a good rest.

“Today I should work harder than usual.”

There were thousands of familiars who roamed the underground city that was Elfin Stone's home. They became Elfin Stone's eyes and ears when he was awake. Elfin Stone knew that Grid's group had slaughtered the vampires in the city.

"The city will be completely destroyed in the near future if this is left alone."

Elfin Stone didn't care about the deaths of the ordinary vampires. He could always raise more. However, the True Blood vampires were different. Only Shizo Beriache and her immediate family could create them. They were precious resources. It was troublesome to lose them.

'I have to eat two people from today onwards.'

He would keep the black haired man alive until the end. He would leave the most delicious food to last.

'He sold out his companion, but in the moment when he accepts death, will he feel despair?'

It was fun to imagine the people crying. Earl Elfin Stone maximized his outward appearance by changing into a white tailcoat. He strolled out of his mansion. His destination was the location of Grid's party.

‘Which one should I eat?’

In the thick darkness. Elfin Stone’s red eyes burned as he sniffed. It was to distinguish between the members of Grid’s party. He would hunt Pon and Regas today.

‘It is better to get rid of those two first.’

In fact, the assassin called Faker was the most annoying. However, Regas and Pon were a little bit stronger than Faker. Their physical strength was good, so it would be annoying if they were left alive for a long time.

If he took care of them first, he could enjoy the slow hunt.

‘Then I am going.’

Sururuk.

Elfin Stone turned into black smoke and completely assimilated with the darkness. He approached Grid like lightning, at a speed that far exceeded Faker’s.

‘Now! Give me your fresh blood!’

Humans were truly inferior. No one noticed that he was approaching above their heads. This stupidity was funny. Earl

Elfin Stone ridiculed them and used Extreme Blood Transfusion. His target was Pon.

Puhahahak!

A blood curtain stretched out towards Pon. Now Pon would be destroyed and his health would become Elfin Stone's food. This was normal. However.

“I've been waiting.”

“What...?”

Elfin Stone's eyes widened. The black haired man called Grid! The man behind Pon was staring at him?

‘A human noticed my approach? This has never happened before.’

He didn't know what was happening. But it was too late. Extreme Blood Transfusion was already used and Pon would soon die. This was Elfin Stone's unshakable faith. But Grid broke that faith. Just like the other bosses that Grid hunted, Elfin Stone was forced to feel confusion.

“Revolve.”

“...!”

It was an unbelievable sight. The Extreme Blood Transfusion heading towards Pon was caught by Grid's greatsword and turned back towards Elfin Stone?

“Heok!”

Extreme Blood Transfusion was the strongest magic. He couldn't avoid being wounded. Elfin Stone turned pale and hurriedly tried to turn to smoke. It was neutralized by the golden spear that stabbed his side.

“What is this...?”

Puhahahak!

The blood curtain swallowed up Elfin Stone. This process happened in a short amount of time. All the Overgeared members nervously waiting for Elfin Stone to appear were surprised. Grid suddenly moved and Elfin Stone fell wounded from the sky.

“Cough! Cough!”

Elfin Stone vomited blood on the ground. The face beautiful enough to captivate a man was distorted.

“You!”

The angry and confused Elfin Stone immediately got up. The terrible notification windows popped up in front of the Overgeared members.

[The master of the 13th city, Vampire Earl Elfin Stone has appeared.]

[A strong evil influence is making your magic power turbid. All types of spells and skills aren't available.]

[A vampire's gaze will subdue lower species. Your body is subjected to a strong oppression.]

The Overgeared members were helpless. At least two to three skills were sealed and all speeds reduced, so their minds and bodies felt very heavy. But Grid was fine.

[You have resisted.]

It was a resistance only given to legendary classes. Grid was able to exert his strength.

“Blood Field!”

Elfin Stone sealed some of the powers of the humans with his evil influence, and he didn't miss this gap to use a skill. No, he attempted to use it.

Puok!

“...!”

It was before Blood Field was completed. Grid rushed at a speed comparable to the assassin called Faker and stabbed his blue greatsword at Elfin Stone's heart. His magic power flowed backwards and Blood Field was stopped.

‘What?’

This guy, he wasn't affected by the evil influence? Grid gazed calmly at the disbelieving Elfin Stone. It was a cold look.

“My share ends here. After this, it's Huroi's share.”

In the past, Grid found it difficult to control his emotions. His personality was immature and he lacked social skills, often making him go on a rampage when he was angry, sad or happy. But now it was different.

The experience of sacrificing his close friend made Grid fully aware of what it meant to be 'on top.' Now he was able to stay calm, despite being filled with anger and a desire for vengeance.

Pit!

Pipipipit!

Pagma's Swordsmanship, Link.

The sword was wielded dozens of times without a time difference in an unshaken and sophisticated manner.

“Kuaaaaak!”

On this day, Elfin Stone screamed for the second time since he had been born.



# Chapter 298

---

‘This is the ability of a human?’

Elfin Stone had existed for over 350 years. Over the years, he’d met countless humans. Among them were genii as well as those called warriors. But in the end, they were inferior. For Elfin Stone, humans were just prey to be hunted and eaten.

But his perception changed at this moment. Extreme Blood Transfusion, that couldn’t be seen with the naked eye, was blocked by a sword? It was outstanding. This person wasn’t inferior.

Elfin Stone’s face twisted.

‘It is like Braham said.’

Braham, the first one to give him anger and pain. Braham did all types of bad things and was eventually banished.

[Do you fail to understand my inquiring mind even until the end? Brethren, you are worse than humans. The humans you regard as livestock aren’t lazy. They are different from us, they are always working and developing. One day a transcendent entity will emerge that will threaten us, and it will be a human.]

‘That damn bastard...!’

Braham Eshwald, who studied human magic and vampire magic, sacrificing countless vampires in the process. Some of Elfin Stone's blood relatives were the lab rats, including his lover, Leah.

“Kuk... Kukuk...”

How hard had he worked over the past hundreds of years? In order to forget the terrible memories, Elfin Stone slept more and hunted to clear the wounds in his heart. Meeting these humans stirred up his memories again.

‘It makes me think of Braham's disgusting face.’

He couldn't forgive Braham. Elfin Stone's eyes were full of hate as he glared at Grid.

“Your skills are decent, but in the end, you're just a human! You are my prey!”

Puhahahak!

Elfin Stone's blood gathered into a sphere. It shot towards Grid and caused a powerful explosion. It was the manifestation then explosion of blood. Its power was far above those of the continent's 10 great magicians.

‘I can't avoid it.’

The blast range was too big. He had no choice but to defend. However, he wondered if he could completely absorb the damage with the Divine Shield. The moment Grid was about to take out the Divine Shield.

“I will protect the leader!”

Vantner embraced Grid and used ‘Thousand Shields,’ a skill that greatly reduced the power of magic, thereby reducing the power of Blood Explosion.

Peeeeeeong!

“Kuak! I’m dead!”

Even Thousand Shields couldn’t completely suppress the force of Blood Explosion. Thousand Shields was destroyed by the explosion and Vantner suffered severe injuries from the contaminated blood scattered by the explosion. Grid raised his thumb from within Vantner’s arms.

“Thank you. Although it isn’t a great feeling to be in a man’s arms.”

“Kukuk! I’m not doing this because I like it! Now go!”

Vantner shouted with a laugh. The new version of Grid had already shot forward.

“You!”

Elfin Stone saw that Grid was fine and furiously fired Blood Missiles. The blood-guided missiles chased Grid and tried to block his approach.

‘It’s hard to shake off.’

The missiles were fast and relentless. Avoidance and interception was impossible. He couldn’t protect his body with just Lifael’s Spear.

‘It can’t be helped.’

Grid started his footwork. He planned to use Pagma’s Swordsmanship, Wave, to shoot down the missiles. But at the moment, dozens of flaming arrows appeared from the rear.

Pepeng! Pepepepeng!

It was amazing. They shot down all the missiles aiming at Grid. There was only one person in Satisfy with such bow skills. Expert archer Jishuka.

“Leave the cover to me.”

Jishuka winked with a bright appearance. Grid’s heart thumped

as he kept moving forward. He narrowed the distance to Elfin Stone and declared.

“Kill!”

Kuwooooh!

‘Isn’t this crazy?’

The two greatswords that came flying at Elfin Stone! The dimension of the swordsmanship was different than before. Elfin Stone used Fly and tried to avoid it in the air. However, he couldn’t fly because a strong wind pressure pushed down on his shoulders.

It was the influence of Zednos’ Storm of Eternity. The original Storm of Eternity was a magic that completely restrained the target. However, Elfin Stone’s magic resistance was so high that only some of his movements could be limited.

Of course, that alone was a great help to Grid. Grid realized. Yes, now he wasn’t alone. He could count on the people with him.

‘Now I...!’

He was stronger than ever!

Puook!

“Kuk...! Kuaaaaak!”

The two greatswords penetrated Elfin Stone’s chest. It was enough to drive him crazy. Grid alone was enough to make Elfin Stone feel alert, but the humans supporting Grid meant the battle was developing in an unexpected way.

It would’ve been different if Blood Field was deployed, but there was still 3 minutes left of the cooldown time. It was the worst situation caused by his failure to use the skill before.

“I will kill all of you in this place!”

Today would be different from yesterday. There were no negotiations. Using the blood from his chest as a medium, he blew Grid away with an explosion and called out.

“Iyarugt!”

Kiiing-

It was the advent of the red longsword. The moment that ‘Blood Cry’ cause the Overgeared members to lose their sense of balance...

‘Now!’

Grid would also be affected by Blood Cry! Elfin Stone smiled and wielded Iyarugt. The red line crossed Grid’s stumbling body...

“What?”

Elfin Stone was confused. Grid defended against his sword?

“Who the hell are you?”

Grid wasn't affected by his evil influence and he wasn't disturbed by Iyarugt's Blood Cry? Was this really a human? Grid confirmed Elfin Stone's shaken eyes and replied.

“Who will kill who?”

Grid scoffed. His gaze was focused behind Elfin Stone.

‘Ah!’

Elfin Stone hurriedly moved his sword. But it was too late.

“The Price of Living.”

Puk! Puk puk puk!

Faker's silver dagger pierced Elfin Stone's neck again and again. The Price of Living. It was a skill that did more damage according to the number of strikes. Yesterday, Elfin Stone had only allowed three strikes, but today was the worst. He actually allowed seven

hits. This was due to Grid perfectly catching the aggro.

“Kuock... You rat bastards!”

Elfin Stone’s health gauge naturally decreased as Iyarugt aimed at Faker. The aggro was changed to him due to the Price of Living. In a normal raid, drawing aggro could endanger the part. But this situation was different. It was because Grid originally had more utility as a damage dealer than as a tanker.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship, Pinnacle!”

Seokeok!

Pinnacle was used. Elfin Stone paid a heavy price for looking away from Grid.

[You have dealt 210,900 damage to the target.]

‘Not enough.’

Grid’s expression became dark. This was because 5 Joint Attacks wasn’t activated. Elfin Stone’s current health was at 80%. This was the result of being hit by Extreme Blood Transfusion, Kill, Price of Living and Pinnacle.

Elfin Stone’s health and defense was outstanding as a named boss.



‘I was unlucky!’

If 5 Joint Attacks was activated with Kill, it would’ve been a fatal wound. However, he had the worst luck and 5 Joint Attacks wasn’t activated at all.

‘No, there is no need to worry.’

A smile appeared on Grid’s face. He was reminded that he had companions to cover for his lacking luck.

“Sura Descends!”

Regas approached Elfin Stone’s side and started his lightning assault. His destructive power at this moment was enough to make even Grid speechless.

Pepeok! Pepepepeok!

The shining punches and kicks that left an afterglow! Once Regas became an Asura, the true power of Grid’s Lightning Duke’s Knuckles started to explode.

[The 6th combo has been achieved!]

[The unique effect of the Asura class is activated, dealing 5,000 fixed damage to the target.]

[The effect of the ‘Lightning Duke’s Knuckles’ has been activated, causing additional physical damage to the target.]

Peeng!

[The 7th combo has been achieved!]

[The unique effect of the Asura class is activated, dealing 8,000 fixed damage to the target.]

[The effect of the ‘Lightning Duke’s Knuckles’ has been activated, causing additional lightning damage to the target.]

Kwa kwang!

[The 8th combo has been achieved!]

[The unique effect of the Asura class is activated, dealing 12,000 fixed damage to the target.]

[The effect of the ‘Lightning Duke’s Knuckles’ has been activated, causing additional physical and lightning damage to the target.]

Jjejejeok!

[The 10th combo has been achieved!]

[The unique effect of the Asura class is activated, dealing 20,000 fixed damage to the target.]

[The option effect of the Lightning Duke's Knuckles is activated, deploying Lightning Beam three times.

Chaaeng!

[The 12th combo has been achieved!]

[The unique effect of the Asura class is activated, dealing 30,000 fixed damage to the target.]

[The effect of the 'Lightning Duke's Knuckles' has been activated, causing additional physical damage proportional to the target's maximum health.]

“Kuheok! Ugh! Kuak!”

Elfin Stone groaned. Regas opened up the power of an Asura and demonstrated a speed and power that couldn't be endured by even Elfin Stone. However, the disadvantages were that the duration was short and the after effect was large.

Regas's combo reached its peak.

“This is the last one!”

Kwajak! Kwajajak!

[The 15th combo has been achieved!]

[The unique effect of the Asura class is activated, dealing 100,000 fixed damage to the target and reducing defense and recovery by 50% for 5 minutes. In addition, Lightning Spear is used.]

Puook!

“Kuaaaaak!”

90% of Elfin Stone’s total screams occurred today. He was pierced by the lightning spear that fell from the sky and finally sat down. Lightning Spear. It was the Asura’s ultimate move that disabled the target for 1.5 seconds.

“Heok... P-Please...”

Flop!

The drained Regas collapsed. He consumed a large amount of stamina at once, so he wouldn’t be able to move for three seconds. It was up to his companions to fill this gap.

“Mach Spear!”

“Draw Sword, Blow.”

“Phoenix Arrow!”

“Black Winds!”

The party members’ ultimate moves poured out. Elfin Stone tried to turn to smoke, but Lifael’s Spear was the problem. He was forced to allow the attacks.

“Good!”

Grid smiled with satisfaction and started his sword dance. Thanks to the party members, Elfin Stone’s health had fallen to 45%, so Grid would use Linked Kill to ensure their victory. However, something unexpected happened.

“You dare...! You dare!!!”

Certain bosses became stronger once health fell to a certain level, and Elfin Stone was one of them.

Puhahahak!

Magic power stretched out around Elfin Stone and dominated the land. Blood Field, which Grid had previously blocked, was instantly used.

[Vampire Earl, Elfin Stone has opened up his real power. All of Elfin Stone's stats will rise and his recovery ability will increase by 300%.]

[Your blood is influenced by Blood Field.]

[153 health will be transferred to Earl Elfin Stone per second.]

[All healing effects will be reduced by 80%.]

The Overgeared members felt desperate as the notification window appeared before them.

“I will eat all of you.”

Elfin Stone got up and declared. His red eyes were tinged with black. The feeling of intimidation was incomparable.

“...Now how should we defeat him?”

The Overgeared members were lost. They weren't sure how to deal with Elfin Stone, who had all his stats increased by Blood Field. As everyone was feeling desperate...

“Don't you know that I have a hidden power as well?”

Grid spoke meaningful words. Elfin Stone and the Overgeared members focused on him.

‘A hidden power?’

Elfin Stone was nervous.

‘Truly God Grid!’

‘He had a trump card!’

The Overgeared members were delighted. As everyone’s attention was fixed on him, Grid shouted.

“Item! Combi!! Nation!!!”

“...?”

Was it a cool animation like the transformation robots that were popular in his grandfather’s generation. No, it was...

Ttang! Ttang!

Grid took out a hammer and anvil, before squatting down and starting to hammer. Honestly, it was ludicrous behavior.

“This person has become crazy from fear.”

The previously tense Elfin Stone ridiculed Grid. The Overgeared members felt embarrassed.



# Chapter 299

---

The premise of this raid's success was the obstruction of Blood Field. But in the end, that failed. Elfin Stone opened his real power and succeeded in using Blood Field. The chances of this raid succeeding declined exponentially. If Elfin Stone couldn't be defeated in the next three minutes, Grid's party wouldn't be able to avoid annihilation.

‘I need more power.’

There was no room to be leisurely. Grid pulled out two accessories from his inventory.

[Dark Bus' Ring]

Rating: Unique

Durability: 15/15

A ring worn by the 7th Yatan Servant, Dark Bus.

The wearer's mana is constantly consumed, and the dispel function will depend on this.

\* 50 mana per second will be consumed by the ring. If the consumed mana reaches 5,000 then you can use Skill Deletion twice in 10 minutes.

\* If you lose more than 5,000 mana and Skill Deletion isn't used twice within 10 minutes, the ring will overload and explode. At this time, the wearer will suffer a deadly wound and the ring is permanently destroyed.

\* Within 3 minutes of wearing the ring, the ring will disappear if you don't lose more than 5,000 mana.

\* Skill Deletion is only used when the hand wearing the ring touches the desired skill.

\* Skill Deletion doesn't apply to skills with a continuous effect.

User Restriction: Level 300 or higher.

Weight: 0.1

A thin black ring. There were severe restrictions on the use and the conditions were tricky. In particular, Grid's total mana was only slightly above 4,000. In order to properly use Dark Bus' Ring, he needed to take mana potions and use skills systematically. It definitely hurt in many ways, but...

‘The performance is excellent.’

He had mastered the use during the process of beating Kamiyan. Grid wore the ring then pulled out small black earrings.

## [Dark Bus' Earrings]

Rating: Legendary

Durability: 55/55

Earrings worn by the 7th Yatan Servant, Dark Bus.

A vehicle to summon a great demon, it has powerful black magic.

There is enough magic power to control the body and mind of the wearer.

- \* The skill 'Blackening' can be used every 12 hours.

- \* The maximum duration of Blackening is 5 minutes.

\*The frequent use of Blackening has the potential to awaken you as a non-human being.

User Restriction: Level 300 or higher. Has a reserve of black magic power.

Weight: 0.1

The conditions of user were simple compared to the ring, but it was dangerous.

‘I don’t mind.’

If he didn’t use it now, when would he use it? There was no point saving it. Grid wore the earrings without hesitation. Then he used the new skill he acquired after reaching level 300.

“Item! Combi!! Nation!!!”

Grid was expecting a cool scene from a movie.

Bam bam bam~ baaaam~

He expected a magnificent background music while the two items fused together nicely. But reality was a gutter.

[Take out your hammer and anvil.]

After the notification window emerged, his body moved and pulled out a hammer and anvil. Then...

[Put the two items to be combined on top of the anvil.]

“...?”

It was a completely unexpected coercion. Grid was baffled. However, he couldn't afford to waste time. He hurriedly did as the system directed. He placed Lifael's Spear and Failure on top of the anvil.

At that moment.

[Try to combine Lifael's Spear and Failure.]

Ttang! Ttang!

His body moved on its own again. Regardless of his will, Grid started hammering the items. Item Combination was a skill where forced motion was applied.

'I look stupid.'

Squatting and hammering during a battle? What type of skill was this? Grid inwardly cursed.

"This person has become crazy from fear."

"..."

Elfin Stone treated him as a madman. Even the party members had shame in their gazes. Grid felt embarrassed and like it was unfair. A notification window appeared in front of him.

[Analyzing the time required to combine the items. Please wait for a moment.]

[...3]

[...2]

[...1]

Ttiring~

[The analysis has succeeded! It will take 43 seconds to combine Lifael's Spear and Failure.]

[Keep hammering for 43 seconds.]

‘This is crazy!’

A chill went down Grid's spine. He had to hammer for 43 seconds during a battle? Wasn't it asking the enemy to eat him? Furthermore, the opponent was the strongest boss.

‘This is bad.’

The party members asked the pale Grid.

{What are you doing? Why are you hammering? Did you eat

something bad?}

{Grid, no matter how desperate the situation, calm down and act wisely.}

He was treated as a completely crazy person. Grid explained the situation.

{These are the motions of a newly acquired skill. I need you to buy me 40 seconds.}

{...}

The party members frowned. A skill that had forced motions during a battle. It was also 40 seconds? It just sounded like nonsense. However, there was no reason for Grid to be joking. The party members checked on Elfin Stone.

Elfin Stone kept an eye on Grid.

“It’s suspicious.”

The blue greatsword and golden spear emitted a strong aura every time Grid hammered. Elfin Stone was nervous.

“I don’t know what you’re doing, but I won’t let you.”

Kurururung.

Powerful magic started to concentrate on the blood-drenched ground. It was the forerunner of Blood Wave, a magic linked with Blood Field.

“Protect Grid!”

On this cracking ground, the wave of magic power aimed at Grid. Zednos detected this and acted to protect Grid.

“Do you think you can stop me?”

Elfin Stone was overflowing with confidence. He had absolutely faith in himself now that Blood Field was deployed. And the reason for his faith was shown as the magic was deployed.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

Waves of red magic sprang from the ground and flooded towards the Overgeared members. Vantner used Thousand Shields and Zednos triggered Wind Curtain. The two skills boasted excellent magic resistance, but it wasn't enough to handle Blood Wave.

Pepeng!

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!



“Aack!”

“Ah! I will die!”

Thousand Shields shattered while Wind Curtain was scattered like an illusion. Vantner and Zednos were hit by Blood Wave and fell down. Blood Wave continued despite the actions of the two men.

The goal was Grid. Peak Sword interrupted.

“Draw Sword, Annihilate.”

Seokeok!

The moment Peak Sword drew his sword, light gleamed and crossed Blood Wave. It was possible because Blood Wave’s power was weakened by Vantner and Zednos’ sacrifice.

“Okay! Eek?”

He protected God Grid! Peak Sword’s excited face suddenly distorted with pain. It was because his thighs were pierced by red thorns that emerged at his feet.

“Shit!”

Peak Sword's movement speed significantly reduced. Elfin Stone moved past him.

“You...!”

Peak Sword couldn't let him pass and put a hand on his sheath again.

[You have suffered 9,980 damage.]

“Kuaaaaak!”

The notification window was accompanied by intense pain. He wasn't able to recognize it, but he was hit by Iyarugt.

“It's natural to kneel before me.”

Elfin Stone checked that Peak Sword was down and got closer to Grid. Grid saw it and checked the remaining time.

[27 seconds until the items are combined.]

‘Should I cancel the skill?’

No, he couldn't do that now. He would believe in his companions and wait.

“Don’t go.”

In response to Grid’s belief, the duo of Pon and Regas blocked Elfin Stone’s path.

Pepeng!

Pepepepeok!

The spear and unpredictable attacks aimed at Elfin Stone. But Elfin Stone was freed from Lifael’s Spear, so he could avoid their attacks by turning into smoke.

“Shouldn’t you understand the subject?”

Sususuk.

Elfin Stone’s body scattered as smoke before returning to its original form. The location was behind Pon and Regas.

“Ghost!”

The scared Pon and Regas aimed their spears and fists behind them. However, Iyarugt was faster.

Seokeok!

“Keook!”

“Kkuk...!”

The red sword slashed at Pon and Regas’ chest. The two people suffered huge damage and had to take a health potion. However, only 20% of the potion’s effect was applied thanks to the influence of Blood Field.

Pahat!

Faker appeared behind Elfin Stone, who was trying to deal the finishing blow to the duo. Elfin Stone was always hit by Faker’s surprise attack, but now he was different. Faker’s swiftness and stealth were useless in front of the fully powered Elfin Stone.

“Blood Tornado.”

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

Blood winds stirred around Elfin Stone’s body. Faker wasn’t able to attack Elfin Stone and was blown away.

“Too strong.”

Jishuka bit her lip as she fired arrows to cover her companions. Elfin Stone was too strong. She didn’t know how to deal with him.

“Kuhahahaha!”

Elfin Stone ran wild like a fish that met water and finally burst out laughing. He felt great pleasure in knocking down the humans who dared threaten him.

“Now! Only the two of you are left!”

Grid was still hammering and Jishuka was protecting him. Elfin Stone’s gaze was fixed on both of them. Around him were the collapsed Overgeared members. Blood Field was constantly taking their health and they would die within a minute.

“I will eat until I’m satisfied!”

Teong!

Elfin Stone leapt energetically and narrowed the distant to Grid and Jishuka instantly. Jishuka used Multi-shot and Dancing Arrows to try and slow Elfin Stone’s momentum, but it was wishful thinking.

Seokeok!

Blood rose from Jishuka’s smooth shoulders and Elfin Stone finally reached Grid.

“Iyarugt!”

Kiing!

The red Iyarugt responded to Elfin Stone's call and aimed for Grid. At the same time, the sword emanated an abnormal sharpness that seemed like it would stab right through Grid's armor.

“This is the end!”

Ttang! Ttang!

Grid was still hammering. Iyarugt was bound to be stabbed into his neck. The Overgeared members closed their eyes.

‘This is the end.’

They didn't know what the newly acquired skill was, but it wouldn't work since it took too long to activate. It was over. The Overgeared members were desperate while Elfin Stone was delighted.

[The items have successfully combined!]

The notification window he had been waiting for finally appeared. A smile appeared on Grid's face.

“Blackening.”

Kuwaaaang!

Black magic exploded.

‘This power...!’

Amazement appeared on Elfin Stone’s face.

Peeeeeeong!

The gold-blue greatsword collided with Iyarugt and the earth shook. The ensuing blood that scattered came from Elfin Stone.

# Chapter 300

---

[The items have successfully combined!]

[(Combination) Failure + Lifael's Spear]

Rating: Legendary (Transcendent)

Durability: Infinite

Attack Power: 1,100~2,390 Defense: 100

\* Agility +100

\* Divine Power +400

\* Fixed damage of +2,200 on each attack.

\* There is a certain probability of activating the 'Light Wheel' skill.

\* Attack power +30% against those with black magic power.

\* There is a certain probability of blocking the enemy's attacks.

\* There is a high probability of activating the '5 Joint Attacks'



skill.

- \* The skill 'Bisect' will be generated.

- \* There will be a fear effect if the enemy is more than 15 levels lower than the user.

- \* Attack power +30% in dark places.

A weapon that maximizes the merits of the legendary rated 'Failure' and 'Lifael's Spear (Reproduction)' after being combined by the legendary blacksmith G.

Conditions of Use: Pagma's Descendant

- \* The combination time is 2 minutes.

- \* This item can't be traded.

'Transcendent legendary...!'

The result was more than expected. The performance of Failure + Lifael's Spear was close to a mythical weapon. It was safe to say that Item Combination was one of Pagma's Descendant's ultimate techniques.

'It is a pity that the combination time is only 2 minutes.'

Anyway, this battle would be decided within a short amount of time. Elfin Stone would either be killed in two minutes, or Grid's party would be wiped out. This was the only outcome now that Blood Field was deployed.

Grid held the golden Failure. He revealed his power.

“Blackening.”

Kuwaaaang!

Black magic stirred as Grid's skin became pale and the whites of his eyes turned black.

[Your black magic power has increased.]

[You don't have any black magic power. It will be replaced with demonic power.]

[While Blackening is activated, your species will change to half-demon.]

[As a half demon, your maximum health is reduced by 50%. Your attack power, magic power and agility will increased by 20% each.]

[All attacks will be converted to the black magic attribute.]

Blackening was a skill that greatly increased his combat related stats in return for half of his maximum health. Grid felt strength boiling inside him. However, his status was a little strange. His heart rate elevated and he had an excruciating headache. it was hard to breathe through the pain in his head.

‘Why?’

A notification window popped up the moment Grid felt doubts.

[Your demonic force and divine power of the weapon opposes each other.]

[The divine power of (Combination) Failure + Lifael’s Spear has doubled the strength of the demonic power.]

[All your attacks will have both demonic and divine power at the same time.]

[Whenever you hit a target with an attack, there is a clash between the demonic power and divine power, causing an explosion.]

[The demonic power will increase the power of Blackening by devouring the divine power.]

[Maximum health will drop by 50%. Your attack power, magic

power and agility will increased by 10% each.]

It was an obvious mistake. He was so focused on gaining power to overcome the crisis that he didn't consider the compatibility of Lifael's Spear and Blackening.

“Ack...!”

The headache was getting worse. Iyarugt came running at his neck.

Chaaeng!

Failure's blade had a small blade reminiscent of a shark's fin attached to it. It blocked Iyarugt's sword. Grid didn't intentionally use his swordsmanship, relying on the power of the items.

[The option effect of (Combination) Failure + Lifael's Spear has been activated in order to block the enemy's attack.]

Kwaang!

A dark explosion occurred at the point where the two swords hit each other. Both Grid and Elfin Stone suffered damage.

[You have suffered 5,300 damage.]

[You have dealt 15,900 damage to the target.]

It was an explosion that contained demonic and divine power. Unlike Grid who had a certain resistance to both attributes and the Holy Light Armor which reduced magic damage, Elfin Stone was vulnerable to divine power and suffered greatly.

But the result wasn't good for Grid either. Grid's maximum health had fallen to 16,000 points, so 5,300 damage was fatal to him. Meanwhile, Elfin Stone's current health was 4 million. From his standpoint, the damage from the explosion wasn't that threatening.

However, Elfin Stone didn't know this about Grid. He thought Grid intentionally caused the explosion and felt a chill.

‘Is this really a human?’

A human manifested demonic power and divine power while exerting a physical ability that was comparable to a True Blood earl. It was both transcendent and strange.

“What the hell is your identity?”

“...”

Grid didn't say anything. To be precise, he had no room to speak. He was barely maintaining his reason with this severe headache.

“Kuaaaaah!”

It was like the roar of a beast. Grid approached Elfin Stone and used Kill. The speed and damage wasn't comparable to the past. It was a tremendous level. It was a fearful attack. Elfin Stone moved with all his might and succeeded in evading Kill.

‘Dammit!’

Elfin Stone sweated as he barely avoided the attack.

‘I felt fear!’

He was a direct descendant of Shizo Beriache. Yet he was scared of this unknown human?

‘I can't tolerate it.’

Embarrassment boiled inside him.

Kwaduduk!

Elfin Stone widened the distance with Grid. If the two swords collided with each other, there would be an explosion. So he tried to use magic so that he wouldn't be damaged.

This was a big mistake. Grid had Pagma's Swordsmanship, Transcend. He was able to switch to ranged attacks and thus was safe from the explosion that occurred every time the attack hit the distant target.

Pepepepeok!

Explosions kept occurring around Elfin Stone as he was hit by a bombardment of energy blades.

[You have dealt 15,760 damage to the target.]

[You have dealt 16,400 damage to the target.]

[Lifael's Spear's option effect is activated, causing the skill 'Light Wheel' to be generated.]

[You have dealt 82,900 damage to the target.]

[The option effect of (Combination) Failure + Lifael's Spear is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[You have dealt 60,040 damage to the target.]

“Kuaaaack!”

Elfin Stone let out a horrible shriek. The heavy onslaught and

explosion of black light contained a destructive power that even a vampire earl couldn't ignore.

“Wow...”

“Really strong.”

“...It's terrifying.”

The Overgeared members were stunned. They might be in the top 20 rankings, the attack power shown by Grid was different.

‘Maybe. Maybe this...’

At this moment, wasn't Grid comparable to Kraugel? Pon had encountered Kraugel in the past and knew his strength. Just as he was thinking that.

“Shit! Shitt!”

Elfin Stone started cursing. It wasn't possible to turn to smoke due to the divine power in Grid's attacks, while Blood Shield couldn't completely protect his body from the damage of the explosions.

‘In the first place, it was wrong for me to move back!’



Elfin Stone belatedly realized and changed his posture. Anyway, it was meaningless to defend so he planned to confront Grid with force. It was both his pride and a wise judgment.

Kuwooooh!

Elfin Stone's scattered blood gathered in one place. Then the blood turned into a spear and shot towards Grid.

“Heart Seeker!”

Peeeeeeong!

Heart Seeker was a targeted skill that unconditionally hit the target. It was a definite death sentence. The strength surpassed Extreme Blood Transfusion, but Elfin Stone was reluctant to use it because it consumed his health. The fact that Elfin Stone used Heart Seeker meant he recognized that Grid was strong.

Kiiiing.

It was an absolute majesty. The bloody spear penetrated straight through Grid's bombardment of Transcend and Blacksmith's Rage. Then...

Puooook!

“Grid!”

The Overgeared members paled from fear. Grid failed to respond to the spear and it pierced his heart.

“Cough!”

Red blood poured from Grid’s nose and mouth. Elfin Stone wasn’t careless.

‘He survived the Extreme Blood Transfusion’

Confirmation was necessary. Elfin Stone once again used another spell despite already consuming a large amount of health and magic power.

“Blood Wave!”

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

Blood Wave shot towards Grid. A smile appeared on Elfin Stone’s mouth as he confirmed that Grid was about to be hit by it.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship...”

“...!”

Grid used the Skill Deletion of Dark Bus’ Ring and penetrated

through Blood Wave to reach Elfin Stone. Elfin Stone tried to hinder Grid by hurriedly deploying Blood Thorn. However, Grid used the left and right movements of Link to avoid most of the thorns coming from the ground.

“Damn bastard!”

Elfin Stone shot out Blood Laser. It was blood magic that penetrated through a narrow range. But Grid waved his hand and destroyed it. He actively utilized Dark Bus’ Ring.

“This is nonsense!”

Elfin Stone was alarmed by the sight! In the end, Grid narrowed down the distance, avoiding Iyarugt with the footwork of Kill. Then he used his best skill.

“Linked Kill.”

Kuwoooooh!

Both black and gold light shot out like fireworks.

Chaaeng!

Elfin Stone used Iyarugt to resist the first strike of Linked Kill. But the explosion that occurred afterwards was the problem.

“Kuk!”

Elfin Stone shook. It was the same with Grid. Elfin Stone was the one who fixed his posture first. It was close, but this difference could be huge in battle. Iyarugt aimed for Grid’s heart. Grid’s immortal passive was activated after Heart Seeker, so this was a tremendous crisis from Grid’s standpoint.

‘I can’t lose after coming this far.’

Grid didn’t give up. He might die but he continued to use Linked Kill. And he received a reward for this.

[The option effect of (Combination) Failure + Lifael’s Spear is activated, causing the skill ‘Light Wheel’ to be generated.]

It was a skill that unfolded at an exquisite moment. Thanks to that, Linked Kill’s thrust quickly changed. Elfin Stone exposed a gap after aiming Iyarugt at Grid, and was wounded instead.

[Critical!]

[You have dealt 304,600 damage to the target.]

‘Unbelievable!’

The magic sword Iyarugt made the wearer into a master of swordsmanship. But what was this sword technique? Elfin Stone

staggered from the shock and was struck by the third consecutive Linked Kill.

Puok!

[You have dealt 119,400 damage to the target.]

Next was the fourth blow.

[You have dealt 122,000 damage to the target.]

Then the fifth.

[The Holy Light Gloves's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[You have dealt 608,500 damage to the target.]

The sixth blow.

[Critical!]

[The Holy Light Gloves's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated.]

[Lifael's Spear's option effect is activated, causing the skill 'Light Wheel' to be generated.]

[You have dealt 3,054,900 damage to the target.]

Grid's sword kept striking at Elfin Stone. The explosion that occurred every time also landed on Grid. Grid wore Doran's Ring and took a supreme health potion, but the amount of recovery couldn't keep up with the damage. In the end.

“Kuk...! Kuock!”

His love, Leah. Elfin Stone recalled the last time he saw her smiling face and scattered into black smoke.

[You have died.]

Grid also turned into a grey light.

[Vampire Earl Elfin Stone is forced to sleep after exhausting all his powers.]

[Your party leader Grid has died.]

[The Pavranium Expedition has acquired Elfin Stone's Ring.]

[The Pavranium Expedition has acquired Iyarugt.]

[The Pavranium Expedition has acquired the 4th Piece of ???.]

[The Pavranium Expedition has become the first party to capture a vampire city!]

[The Pavranium Expedition party members will receive bonus experience points and increased item acquisition rate in all vampire cities for the next month.]

Many notification windows popped up. However, Grid's vision was turning black so he had no way to verify it.

# Table of Contents

[Overgeared](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 201](#)

[Chapter 202](#)

[Chapter 203](#)

[Chapter 204](#)

[Chapter 205](#)

[Chapter 206](#)

[Chapter 207](#)

[Chapter 208](#)

[Chapter 209](#)

[Chapter 210](#)

[Chapter 211](#)

[Chapter 212](#)

[Chapter 213](#)

[Chapter 214](#)

[Chapter 215](#)

[Chapter 216](#)

[Chapter 217](#)

[Chapter 218](#)

[Chapter 219](#)

[Chapter 220](#)

[Chapter 221](#)

[Chapter 222](#)

[Chapter 223](#)

[Chapter 224](#)

[Chapter 225](#)

[Chapter 226](#)

[Chapter 227](#)

[Chapter 228](#)

[Chapter 229](#)

[Chapter 230](#)

[Chapter 231](#)

[Chapter 232](#)

[Chapter 233](#)



[Chapter 234](#)

[Chapter 235](#)

[Chapter 236](#)

[Chapter 237](#)

[Chapter 238](#)

[Chapter 239](#)

[Chapter 240](#)

[Chapter 241](#)

[Chapter 242](#)

[Chapter 243](#)

[Chapter 244](#)

[Chapter 245](#)

[Chapter 246](#)

[Chapter 247](#)

[Chapter 248](#)

[Chapter 249](#)

[Chapter 250](#)

[Chapter 251](#)

[Chapter 252](#)

[Chapter 253](#)

[Chapter 254](#)

[Chapter 255](#)

[Chapter 256](#)

[Chapter 257](#)

[Chapter 258](#)

[Chapter 259](#)

[Chapter 260](#)

[Chapter 261](#)

[Chapter 262](#)

[Chapter 263](#)

[Chapter 264](#)

[Chapter 265](#)

[Chapter 266](#)

[Chapter 267](#)

[Chapter 268](#)

[Chapter 269](#)

[Chapter 270](#)

[Chapter 271](#)

[Chapter 272](#)

[Chapter 273](#)

[Chapter 274](#)

[Chapter 275](#)

[Chapter 276](#)

[Chapter 277](#)

[Chapter 278](#)

[Chapter 279](#)

[Chapter 280](#)

[Chapter 281](#)

[Chapter 282](#)

[Chapter 283](#)

[Chapter 284](#)

[Chapter 285](#)

[Chapter 286](#)

[Chapter 287](#)

[Chapter 288](#)

[Chapter 289](#)

[Chapter 290](#)

[Chapter 291](#)

[Chapter 292](#)

[Chapter 293](#)

[Chapter 294](#)

[Chapter 295](#)

[Chapter 296](#)

[Chapter 287](#)

[Chapter 298](#)

[Chapter 299](#)

[Chapter 300](#)